

**LIBRARY OF CONGRESS**



00011507505



















BY REV. JOHN A. BROADUS, D.D., LL.D.

**ON THE PREPARATION AND DELIVERY OF  
SERMONS.** New (28th) edition. Revised from the  
author's own notes. Crown 8vo, cloth. \$1.75.

**A HARMONY OF THE GOSPELS IN THE REVISED  
VERSION.** New 7th edition. Sq. 8vo, cloth. \$1.50.

**LECTURES ON THE HISTORY OF PREACHING.**  
12mo, cloth. \$1.50.

**JESUS OF NAZARETH: HIS PERSONAL CHARACTER;  
HIS ETHICAL TEACHINGS; HIS SUPERNATURAL  
WORKS.** Fourth edition. 12mo, cloth. 75 cents.

**SERMONS AND ADDRESSES.** With Portrait of the  
Author. Crown 8vo, cloth. \$1.50.

**COMMENTARY ON MATTHEW.** Crown 8vo, cloth.  
\$2.25.

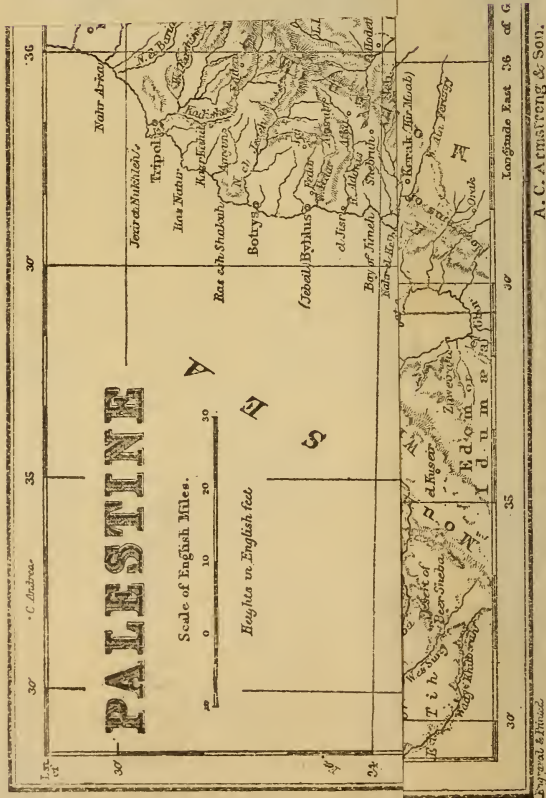
**MEMOIR OF JAMES F. BOYCE, D.D., LL.D.** Crown  
8vo, cloth. \$1.75.

*For sale by all Booksellers, or sent by mail, postpaid, on  
receipt of price, by*

**A. C. ARMSTRONG AND SON,**

3 & 5 WEST 18th STREET (NEAR 5th AVENUE), NEW YORK.







Revised.

# HARMONY OF THE GOSPELS

### IN THE REVISED VERSION

WITH NEW HELPS FOR HISTORICAL STUDY

By JOHN A. BROADUS, D.D., LL.D.

**Author of** *The Preparation and Delivery of Sermons, Commentary on Matthew, History of Preaching, Jesus of Nazareth, etc.*

REVISÉD BY

ARCHIBALD THOMAS ROBERTSON

Professor of Interpretation of the New Testament, Southern Baptist  
Theological Seminary, Louisville, Ky.

New Seventh Edition, Revised and Enlarged

NEW YORK

A. C. ARMSTRONG AND SON

3 and 5 West 18th Street, near 5th Avenue

1903

# PALESTINE

Scale of English Miles.



Heights in English feet

MEDITERRANEAN SEA



## MODERN JERUSALEM









A

# HARMONY OF THE GOSPELS

IN THE REVISED VERSION

WITH NEW HELPS FOR HISTORICAL STUDY

---

By JOHN A. BROADUS, D.D., LL.D.

Author of *The Preparation and Delivery of Sermons*, *Commentary on Matthew*,  
*History of Preaching*, *Jesus of Nazareth*, etc.

REVISED BY

ARCHIBALD THOMAS ROBERTSON

Professor of Interpretation of the New Testament, Southern Baptist  
Theological Seminary, Louisville, Ky.

---

New Seventh Edition, Revised and Enlarged

NEW YORK

A. C. ARMSTRONG AND SON

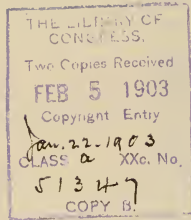
3 and 5 West 18th Street, near 5th Avenue

1903

BS2560  
.B7

1903

LC# 03-3228



COPYRIGHT BY JOHN A. BROADUS,  
1893.

COPYRIGHT 1903 BY  
CHARLOTTE E. BROADUS.

YHARLL BHT  
2230800 70



## PREFACE.

---

This work is the fruit of more than thirty years spent in teaching the English New Testament. I first used as a text-book the Harmony of Dr. Ed. Robinson, and for some twenty years past that of Dr. G. W. Clark. Both are valuable works, deserving their wide reputation. But I have become more and more convinced that most harmonists seriously err in laying stress on the division of our Lord's ministry into Passover years. It is quite impossible to determine with any great confidence whether the feast of John 5:1 was a passover, and the two known passovers of John 2:13 and 6:4 have really no important relation to the development of our Lord's ministry. Besides, the length of his ministry, and the dates of his birth and death, cannot be precisely fixed. But cease to labor for an exact chronology, quit regarding the feasts (except the last Passover) as important epochs in his work, and you presently perceive that his ministry divides itself easily into well-defined periods, in each of which you can trace a gradual progress, (a) in our Lord's self-manifestation, (b) in the hostility of his enemies, and (c) in his training of the Twelve Apostles. Thus we become able to follow the *inner movements* of the history, towards that long-delayed, but foreseen and inevitable collision, in which, beyond all other instances, the wrath of man was made to praise God.

The chief marks of this historical progress in the Life of our Lord I have tried to indicate by brief foot-notes, and other notes in italic letters placed here and there between the sections. Many of these brief notes also touch various points of harmonizing, of chronology, and other matters, so that the reader may quickly get the most important necessary information or help, and move forward. Questions requiring more elaborate discussion have been treated by my colleague, Dr. A. T. Robertson, in longer notes placed at the end of the volume, which in my judgment are remarkably complete and discriminating, and will greatly aid the careful student.

It has seemed best to print the Harmony in the Revised Version, commonly known as the Canterbury, or Anglo-American Revision, which is nowadays given in many lesson helps and commentaries along with the Common or King James translation. In printing this revised text some use has been made of Waddy's Harmony.

Probably most persons look upon a Harmony of the Gospels as useful only to Bible class work or other regular forms of study. But I invite any one who takes pleasure in reading his Bible to try the experiment of reading this Harmony as a connected and complete Life of Christ, moving steadily on through the successive periods, and striving to come ever nearer to him as our Teacher, Exemplar, Redeemer, Lord. It is hoped also that Y. M. C. A. classes, in Colleges and elsewhere, may in many cases like to take up a series of lessons in that great Life, which is the focus of human history, and the centre of Scripture. When Sunday School lessons are taken from any one of the Gospels, it is an important advantage for all teachers, and the more intelligent pupils, to compare every such lesson with the other Gospels as presented in a Harmony; while for regular lessons on the Life of Christ a Harmony is indispensable to thorough treatment. In Theological Seminaries, not merely students who use only the English Bible, but those who study the Gospels in Greek, would be much profited by first making a survey of the Harmony in English. And no minister can afford to prepare a sermon on any text from a Gospel without looking up the parallel passages from other Gospels, and also considering where his text stands in the gradual unfolding of the Saviour's teaching and work.

J. A. B.

*Southern Bapt. Theol. Seminary,  
Louisville, Ky., June 15, 1893.*

## REVISER'S PREFACE.

---

It has been ten years since Dr. Broadus issued his Harmony, which has already gone through six editions. This has seemed a fitting time to give the book a close revision. Some important changes have been made in the notes at the end of the book. Dr. Broadus' Harmony was the first one to depart from the traditional division of the ministry of Christ by the Passovers rather than by the natural unfolding of the ministry itself. He also introduced an Analytical Outline into the body of the Harmony in italics, made cross references to similar incidents or sayings, had helpful summaries at the beginning of each of the General Divisions (Parts), preserved the marginal notes of the Revised Version, which is the text used, and added at suitable points very valuable foot-notes that helped the student to seize the movement of the history. The plan of his Harmony is to give the best helps for historical study. The Gospel material is arranged in the order accepted by the best New Testament scholars, but difficulties at various points are freely recognized and indicated. The student at least has a working basis to start with.

In accordance with this conception of the Harmony some further helps are added in this Revised Edition. An excellent map of Palestine is furnished, the Analytical Outline is put by itself in front as well as preserved in the body of the text, the cross references to similar incidents and sayings are added in a separate appendix, besides being preserved in the text, Dr. Broadus' "Analysis and Peculiarities of the Gospel" is given in an appendix, besides new lists of the Parables, Miracles, Old Testament Quotations, Uncanonical Sayings of Jesus and a list of the chief Harmonies. References to the sections and pages of the Harmony go with those appendices. There is added, moreover, a full Index of Persons and Places which will be helpful. There is also the usual Synopsis with tables for finding passages. It is believed that this Harmony thus offers peculiar advantages to the student engaged in historical study. Dr. Broadus' work in the volume is the ripe fruit of a lifetime of rich study and reflection by one of the rarest teachers of the New Testament that any age or country has ever seen.

A. T. ROBERTSON.

*Southern Bapt. Theol. Seminary.  
Louisville, Ky., Jan. 1, 1903.*



# A BRIEF ANALYTICAL OUTLINE OF THE HARMONY.

---

PART I.—Matters Connected with our Lord's Birth and Childhood,  
pages 1-11, § 1-13.

Introductory Portions of the Gospels, pages 1-3, § 1.

The First Events of the History, pages 3-8, § 2-8.

The Infancy and Childhood of Jesus, pages 8-11, § 9-13.

PART II.—Beginning of the Forerunner's Ministry, pages 12-15, § 14.

PART III.—Beginning of Our Lord's Ministry, pages 15-24, § 15-23.

The Baptism and Temptation of Jesus, pages 15-17, § 15, 16.

The First Disciples, pages 18, 19, § 17, 18.

Beginning Work in Galilee, pages 19, 20, § 19, 20.

The Opening Ministry in Judea, pages 20-22, § 21, 22.

The Ministry in Samaria and the Return to Galilee, pages  
22-24, § 24.

PART IV.—Our Lord's Great Ministry in Galilee, pages 25-75, § 24-56.

General Survey of the Galilean Ministry, page 25 f., § 24.

Finding a New Home in Capernaum, pages 26-30, § 25-29.

The First Journey About Galilee, pages 30-39, § 30-36.

The Sabbath Controversy, pages 39-43, § 37-39.

Choice of the Twelve and the Great Sermon, pages 44-52, § 40-42.

The Message from John and the Second Tour of Galilee, pages  
52-57, § 43-47.

The Busy Day, pages 57-70, § 48-53.

The Third Journey About Galilee, pages 71-75, § 54-56.

PART V.—Season of Retirement into Districts Around Galilee, pages  
76-103, § 57-74.

The First Withdrawal and Succeeding Events, pages 76-85 § 57-60.

The Second Withdrawal, pages 85 f., § 61.

The Third Withdrawal, pages 86 f., § 62.

The Fourth Withdrawal, pages 88-96, § 63-67.

The Brief Return to Galilee on the Way to Jerusalem, pages  
97-103, § 68-74.



**PART VI.—Closing Ministry in All Parts of the Holy Land, pages 104-139, § 75-103.**

Discourses at the Feast of Tabernacles, pages 104-110, § 75-79.

The Later Judean Ministry, pages 110-119, § 80-88.

At the Feast of Dedication, page 119 f., § 89.

The First Perean Ministry, pages 120-126, § 90-93.

The Raising of Lazarus and Withdrawal, pages 126, 127, § 94, 95.

The Last Journey to Jerusalem, pages 128-139, § 96-103.

**PART VII.—Last Week of Our Lord's Ministry and His Crucifixion, pages 140-217, § 104-133.**

The Arrival at Bethany, page 140, § 104.

The Last Days of the Public Ministry, pages 140-163, § 105-116.

Preparing for the End, pages 169-186, § 117-123.

The Culmination and the Catastrophe, pages 186-217, § 124-133.

**PART VIII.—Our Lord's Appearances and Ascension, pages 218-231, § 134-143.**

The First Day of the Week, pages 218-226, § 134-138.

The Second First Day after the Resurrection, page 226, § 139.

The Later Appearances, pages 226-231, § 140-143.



# SYNOPSIS OF THE HARMONY.

## PART I.

### MATTERS CONNECTED WITH OUR LORD'S BIRTH AND CHILDHOOD.

Sect.	Page.
1. Introductory portions of the several Gospels.	
(a) Dedication of Luke's Gospel.....	1
(b) Introduction to John's Gospel.....	1
(c) The Genealogies in Matthew and Luke.....	2
2. Annunciation of the Birth of John the Baptist.....	3
3. Annunciation to the Virgin Mary of the Birth of Jesus.....	4
4. Visit of Mary to Elisabeth.....	5
5. Birth of John the Baptist, and his Desert Life.....	6
6. Annunciation to Joseph of the Birth of Jesus.....	7
7. Birth of Jesus.....	7
8. Angels proclaim to Shepherds that the Messiah is born at Bethlehem.....	8
9. Circumcision of Jesus, and Presentation in the Temple.....	8
10. Magi visit the new-born King of the Jews.....	9
11. The Child Jesus carried to Egypt, and the Children of Bethlehem slain.....	10
12. The Child brought from Egypt to Nazareth.....	10
13. Jesus lives at Nazareth, and visits Jerusalem when 12 years old..	11

## PART II.

### BEGINNING OF THE FORERUNNER'S MINISTRY.

14. John the Baptist preaches the near approach of the Messianic reign, and baptizes in the Jordan those who repent and believe.....	12
--	----

## PART III.

## BEGINNINGS OF OUR LORD'S MINISTRY.

Sect.	Page.
15. Jesus baptized by John in the Jordan.....	15
16. Jesus tempted in the Wilderness .....	16
17. John testifies to Jesus.....	18
18. Jesus makes his first disciples.....	18
19. Jesus works his first miracle, at Cana.....	19
20. Jesus makes a first sojourn at Capernaum, accompanied by his kindred and his early disciples.....	20
21. Jesus attends the first Passover during his Ministry.	
(a) He cleanses the Temple. (Comp. § 106.).....	20
(b) During the Passover, many believe on Jesus, including the ruler Nicodemus. Conversation with Nicodemus.	20
22. Early Ministry in Judea, and John's renewed testimony.....	21
23. Jesus removes from Judea through Samaria to Galilee.	
(a) Reasons for leaving Judea.....	22
(b) Conversation at Jacob's well, and sojourn at Sychar.....	22
(c) Arrival in Galilee.....	24

## PART IV.

## OUR LORD'S GREAT MINISTRY IN GALILEE.

24. General account of his teaching in Galilee.....	25
25. He heals at Cana the son of a courtier of Capernaum.....	26
26. Rejected at Nazareth, he makes Capernaum his residence. (Comp. § 20.).....	26
27. He calls four fishermen to follow him.....	27
28. He heals a demoniac in the synagogue at Capernaum.....	28
29. He heals Peter's mother-in-law, and many others.....	29
30. He journeys about Galilee, preaching and healing.....	30
31. A leper healed, and much popular excitement.....	31
32. Thronged in Capernaum, he heals a paralytic lowered through the roof.....	32
33. The call of Matthew, who makes him a great entertainment.....	34
34. Jesus discourses on fasting.....	35
35. He raises Jairus' daughter, and heals a woman who only touched his garment.....	36
36. He heals two blind men, and a dumb demoniac.....	39

Sect.	Page.
37. Attending a feast in Jerusalem (probably the Passover), Jesus heals a man on the Sabbath, and defends his action.....	39
38. The disciples of Jesus pluck ears of grain on the Sabbath, and he defends them .....	41
39. Jesus heals a withered hand on the Sabbath, and defends it. (Comp. § 88.).....	42
40. Great multitudes attend him beside the sea of Galilee.....	44
41. After a night of prayer, Jesus selects Twelve Apostles.....	44
42. The Sermon on the Mount. Privileges and Requirements of the Messianic Reign.....	45
43. Jesus heals a centurion's servant at Capernaum.....	52
44. He raises a widow's son at Nain.....	53
45. A message comes from John the Baptist, and our Lord discourses as to John, and various other matters suggested.....	54
46. The woman that was a sinner anoints the Saviour's feet. (Comp. § 117.).....	56
47. Further journeying about Galilee. (Comp. § 30.).....	57
48. Blasphemous accusation of league with Beelzebub. (Comp. § 84.).	57
49. Scribes and Pharisees demand a sign.....	59
50. Christ's mother and brethren .....	59
51. The first great group of Parables.....	60
52. In crossing the lake, Jesus stills the tempest.....	66
53. Beyond the lake, he heals two Gadarene demoniacs.....	67
54. Returning, he visits Nazareth, and is again rejected. (Comp. § 26.)	70
55. Jesus yet again journeys about Galilee (comp. § 30 and 47), and now sends the Twelve before him (comp. § 80), after instructing them .....	71
56. Herod Antipas supposes Jesus to be John the Baptist risen, whom he had beheaded.....	74

## PART V.

### SEASON OF RETIREMENT INTO DISTRICTS AROUND GALILEE.

57. The Twelve return, and Jesus retires with them beyond the lake to rest. Feeding of the Five Thousand.....	76
58. The Twelve try to row back, and Jesus comes walking on the water.	79
59. He discourses in the crowded Synagogue at Capernaum, on eating spiritual food, and on the necessity of a divine teaching and drawing in order to true discipleship. (Comp. § 92.).....	81

Sect.	Page.
60. Emissaries from Jerusalem reproach him for disregarding Tradition .....	83
61. He retires to the region of Tyre and Sidon, and heals a Phœnician woman's daughter.....	85
62. He goes farther North, and then East and South into Decapolis—heals multitudes, and feeds the Four Thousand.....	86
63. After crossing to Galilee, he again retires into the tetrarchy of Philip. A blind man healed.....	88
64. In the neighborhood of Cæsarea-Philippi, the Twelve avow (through Peter) their belief that he is the Messiah.....	89
65. Jesus distinctly foretells that he, the Messiah, will be rejected and killed, and will rise the third day.....	91
66. The Transfiguration, and discourse in descending.....	92
67. The demoniac boy, whom the disciples could not heal.....	94
68. Returning privately through Galilee, he again foretells his death and resurrection. (Comp. § 65, 66, 101.).....	97
69. Jesus, the Messiah, pays the half-shekel for the Temple.....	97
70. The Twelve contend as to who shall be the greatest under the Messiah's reign. His subjects must be childlike. (Comp. § 99.)	98
71. Right treatment of a brother who has sinned against one, and duty of patiently forgiving.....	100
72. The Messiah's followers must give up everything for his service.	101
73. The unbelieving brothers of Jesus counsel him to exhibit himself in Judea, and he rejects the advice.....	102
74. He goes privately to Jerusalem through Samaria.....	102

## PART VI.

### CLOSING MINISTRY, IN ALL PARTS OF THE HOLY LAND.

75. At the Feast of Tabernacles Jesus teaches in the Temple, and people wonder whether he is the Messiah. Attempt of the rulers to arrest him.....	104
[76. Story of an adulteress brought to Jesus for judgment.].....	105
77. Jesus claims to be the Son of God, and to have existed before Abraham. Attempt of the people to stone him.....	106
78. Jesus heals a man born blind. The rulers forbid his being recognized as the Messiah.....	108
79. Jesus intimates that he is going to die for his flock, and come to life again.....	109
80. Mission of the Seventy, and their return. (Comp. § 55.).....	110

Sect.	Page.
81. Jesus answers a lawyer's question as to eternal life, giving the parable of the Good Samaritan.....	111
82. Jesus the guest of Martha and Mary.....	112
83. Jesus again gives a model of prayer (comp. §42,d), and encourages his disciples to pray.....	112
84. Blasphemous accusation of league with Beelzebub. (Comp. §48.)	113
85. While breakfasting with a Pharisee, Jesus severely denounces the Pharisees and lawyers, and excites their enmity .....	114
86. He speaks to his disciples and a vast throng, about hypocrisy, worldly anxieties (comp. §42,e), watchfulness, and his own approaching Passion.....	115
87. All must repent or perish. Parable of the barren fig tree.....	118
88. Jesus heals on the Sabbath, and defends himself. (Comp. §37-39, 91.) Parables of the mustard seed and the leaven. (Comp. §51,d.).....	118
89. At the Feast of Dedication, Jesus will not yet openly say that he is the Messiah. They try to stone him, and he retires to Perea.....	119
90. Teaching in Perea, on a journey toward Jerusalem. Warned against Herod Antipas.....	120
91. While breakfasting with a chief Pharisee, Jesus again heals on the Sabbath, and defends himself. (Comp. §88 and 37-39.) Three lessons suggested by the occasion.....	121
92. Great crowds follow him, and he warns them to count the cost of discipleship to him. (Comp. §59.).....	122
93. Five great Parables—the lost sheep, the lost coin, the lost son—the unrighteous steward—the rich man and the beggar Lazarus. Some other lessons.....	123
94. Jesus raises Lazarus of Bethany from the dead.....	126
95. The Sanhedrin plot his death, and he retires again.....	127
96. Journeying through Samaria and Galilee towards Jerusalem, he teaches that the Messianic reign will come unexpectedly... ..	128
97. Parables of the importunate widow, and of the Pharisee and the Publican .....	129
98. Going from Galilee through Perea, he teaches concerning divorce .....	129
99. He blesses some infant children, and teaches that subjects of the Messianic reign must be childlike. (Comp. §70.).....	131
100. The rich young ruler, and the perils of riches. The rewards of forsaking all to follow the Messiah (comp. §72) will be great, but will be sovereign.....	132



Sect.	Page.
101. Jesus again foretells to the disciples his death and resurrection (comp. § 65-67), and rebukes the selfish ambition of James and John .....	135
102. Blind Bartimæus and his companion healed near Jericho.....	137
103. Jesus visits Zacchæus, speaks the Parable of the pounds, and sets out for Jerusalem.....	138

## PART VII.

### LAST WEEK OF OUR LORD'S MINISTRY, AND HIS CRUCIFIXION.

104. Jesus arrives at Bethany, near Jerusalem.....	140
105. His triumphal entry into Jerusalem as the Messiah.....	140
106. The barren fig tree cursed, and the second cleansing of the Temple. (Comp. § 21,a.).....	144
107. Some Greeks wish to see Jesus, and he foretells that by being "lifted up" he will draw all men to him.....	145
108. The barren fig tree found to have withered.....	146
109. The rulers question the authority of Jesus. He refuses to explain, and sets forth their wickedness by three Parables—the two sons, the wicked husbandmen, the marriage feast of the king's son.....	147
110. The Pharisees and the Herodians try to ensnare Jesus about paying tribute to Cæsar.....	152
111. The Sadducees ask him a puzzling question about the resurrection.....	153
112. A Pharisee who is a lawyer questions him, and then Jesus asks the Pharisees a question about the Messiah, which they cannot answer .....	155
113. In his last public discourse, Jesus solemnly denounces the Scribes and Pharisees. (Comp. § 85.).....	156
114. Jesus closely observes the contributions in the Temple, and commends the poor widow's gift.....	159
115. Sitting on the Mount of Olives, Jesus speaks to his disciples about the destruction of Jerusalem, and his own second coming .....	160
116. Conclusion of this discourse, as to the second coming—Parable of the Ten Virgins, and of the Talents—the Final Judgment.....	167

Sect.	Page.
117. Jesus again predicts, and the rulers plot, his death. Mary anoints him beforehand for burial (comp. § 46), and Judas bargains to betray him.....	169
118. Preparation for the Paschal meal, and contention among the Twelve as to precedence under the Messianic reign.....	172
119. During the Paschal meal, Jesus washes the feet of his disciples.	174
120. Jesus foretells that Judas will betray him, and Peter will deny him.....	174
121. Jesus institutes the Memorial of eating bread and drinking wine.	178
122. Farewell discourse to his disciples.....	179
123. Going forth to Gethsemane, Jesus suffers long in agony.....	183
124. Jesus is betrayed, arrested, and forsaken.....	186
125. Jesus first examined by Annas, the ex-High Priest.....	190
126. Tried and Condemned by Caiaphas and the Sanhedrin.....	190
127. Peter thrice denies his Lord.....	193
128. After dawn, Jesus is formally condemned by the Sanhedrin, and led away to Pilate.....	195
129. Remorse and suicide of Judas the betrayer.....	197
130. Jesus before Pilate the first time.....	197
131. Jesus before Herod Antipas the tetrarch of Galilee.....	200
132. Brought back to Pilate, who slowly and reluctantly consents that he shall be crucified.....	201
133. The Crucifixion.....	207

## PART VIII.

### OUR LORD'S RESURRECTION, APPEARANCES, AND ASCENSION.

134. Angels announce to certain women that Jesus is risen, and Peter and John enter the empty tomb.....	218
135. The risen Lord appears to the women, and separately to Mary Magdalene. These report to the Apostles.....	220
136. Some of the guard report to the Jewish Rulers.....	222
137. Jesus appears to Simon Peter, and to two disciples on the way to Emmaus.....	223
138. He appears to the Apostles (except Thomas), to the two returned from Emmaus, and others, and gives a Commission.....	224
139. He appears again to the Apostles, including Thomas.....	226
140. He appears to seven disciples beside the sea of Galilee.....	226

Sect.	Page.
141. He meets the Apostles and above five hundred on an appointed mountain in Galilee, and gives a Commission.....	228
142. He appears to James; then to all the Apostles, and gives them a Commission.....	229
143. The Ascension.....	230

### INDEX TO NOTES (AT THE END) ON POINTS OF SPECIAL DIFFICULTY.

On § 1, c. The Genealogies of Christ .....	252
On § 7. Probable time of the Saviour's Birth.....	235
On § 37. The Feast of John 5:1, and the Duration of our Lord's Ministry.....	241
On § 41. The four lists of the Twelve Apostles.....	244
On § 42. The Sermon on the Mount.....	246
On § 75. The Combination of Luke and John.....	249
On § 118. Did Christ eat the Passover?.....	253
On § 132. The Hour of the Crucifixion.....	258
On § 134. Time of the Resurrection of Christ.....	260
On § 134. Length of our Lord's Stay in the Tomb.....	263

### INDEX TO APPENDICES.

APPENDIX A—Analysis of the Gospels by Dr. Broadus.....	265
APPENDIX B—A List of the Parables of Jesus .....	270
APPENDIX C—A List of the Miracles of Jesus... ..	271
APPENDIX D—List of the Old Testament Quotations in the Gospels .....	272
APPENDIX E—A List of some Uncanonical Sayings of Jesus .....	276
APPENDIX F—Similar Incidents and Chief Repeated Sayings.....	278
APPENDIX G—A List of the Principal Harmonies of the Gospels (Compiled partly from Clark's Historical Sketch.) .....	279

# TABLE

## FOR FINDING ANY PASSAGE IN THE HARMONY.

### MATTHEW.

Chap.	Verse.	Section.	Page.	Chap.	Verse.	Section.	Page.
1	1-17	1(c)	2	9	1	54	70
1	18-25	6	7	9	2-8	32	32
2	1-12	10	9	9	9-13	33	34
2	13-18	11	10	9	14-17	34	35
2	19-23	12	10	9	18-26	35	36
3	1-12	14	12	9	27-34	36	39
3	13-17	15	15	9	35-38	55	71
4	1-11	16	16	10	1-42	55	71
4	12	23(a)	22	11	1	55	74
4	13-16	26	27	11	2-30	45	54
4	17	24	25	12	1-8	38	41
4	18-22	27	27	12	9-14	39	42
4	23-25	30	30	12	15-21	40	44
5	1,2	42	45	12	22-37	48	57
5	3-12	42(a)	46	12	38-45	49	59
5	13-16	42(b)	46	12	46-50	50	59
5	17-48	42(c)	46	13	1-3	51	60
6	1-18	42(d)	48	13	3-23	51(a)	61
6	19-34	42(e)	49	13	24-30	51(c)	64
7	1-6	42(f)	50	13	31-35	51(d)	64
7	7-12	42(g)	51	13	36-53	51(e)	65
7	13-23	42(h)	51	13	54-58	54	70
7	24-29	42(i)	52	14	1-12	56	74
8	1	43	52	14	13-21	57	76
8	2-4	31	31	14	22-36	58	79
8	5-13	43	52	15	1-20	60	83
8	14-17	29	29	15	21-28	61	85
8	18	52	66	15	29-38	62	86
8	19-22	72	101	15	39	63	88
8	23-27	52	66	16	1-12	63	88
8	28-34	53	67	16	13-20	64	89

## XIV TABLE FOR FINDING ANY PASSAGE IN HARMONY.

## MATTHEW—CONTINUED.

Chap.	Verse.	Section.	Page.	Chap.	Verse.	Section.	Page.
16	21-28	65	91	25	1-46	116	167
17	1-13	66	92	26	1-16	117	169
17	14-20	67	94	26	17-20	118	172
17	22, 23	68	97	26	21-25	120	174
17	24-27	69	97	26	26-29	121	178
18	1-14	70	98	26	30	123	183
18	15-35	71	100	26	31-35	120	176
19	1-12	98	129	26	36-46	123	183
19	13-15	99	131	26	47-56	124	186
19	16-30	100	132	26	57	126	190
20	1-16	100	134	26	58	127	193
20	17-28	101	135	26	59-68	126	190
20	29-34	102	137	26	69-75	127	194
21	1-11	105	140	27	1, 2	128	195
21	12, 13	106	144	27	3-10	129	197
21	14-17	105	143	27	11-14	130	197
21	18, 19	106	144	27	15-30	132	201
21	19-22	108	146	27	31-34	133 (a)	207
21	23-46	109	147	27	35-44	133 (b)	209
22	1-14	109	151	27	45-56	133 (c)	212
22	15-22	110	152	27	57-66	133 (d)	215
22	23-33	111	153	28	1-8	134	218
22	34-46	112	155	28	9, 10	135	220
23	1-39	113	156	28	11-15	136	222
24	1-51	115	160	28	16-20	141	228

## MARK.

Chap.	Verse.	Section.	Page.	Chap.	Verse.	Section.	Page.
1	1-8	14	12	2	18-22	34	35
1	9-11	15	15	2	23-28	38	41
1	12, 13	16	16	3	1-6	39	42
1	14	23(a)	22	3	7-12	40	44
1	14, 15	24	25	3	13-19	41	44
1	16-20	27	27	3	19-30	48	57
1	21-28	28	28	3	31-35	50	59
1	29-34	29	29	4	1, 2	51	60
1	35-39	30	30	4	3-25	51(a)	61
1	40-45	31	31	4	26-29	51(b)	64
2	1-12	32	32	4	30-34	51(d)	64
2	13-17	33	34	4	35-41	52	66

## TABLE FOR FINDING ANY PASSAGE IN HARMONY. XV

## MARK—CONTINUED.

Chap.	Verse.	Section.	Page.	Chap.	Verse.	Section.	Page.
5	1-20	53	67	12	18-27	111	153
5	21	54	70	12	28-37	112	155
5	22-43	35	36	12	38-40	113	156
6	1-6	54	70	12	41-44	114	159
6	6-13	55	71	13	1-37	115	160
6	14-29	56	74	14	1-11	117	169
6	30-44	57	76	14	12-17	118	172
6	45-56	58	79	14	18-21	120	174
7	1-23	60	83	14	22-25	121	178
7	24-30	61	85	14	26	123	183
7	31-37	62	86	14	27-31	120	176
8	1-9	62	87	14	32-42	123	184
8	10-26	63	88	14	43-52	124	186
8	27-30	64	89	14	53	126	190
8	31-38	65	91	14	54	127	193
9	1	65	92	14	55-65	126	190
9	2-13	66	92	14	66-72	127	194
9	14-29	67	94	15	1	128	195
9	30-32	68	97	15	2-5	130	197
9	33-50	70	98	15	6-19	132	201
10	1-12	98	129	15	20-23	133(a)	207
10	13-16	99	131	15	24-32	133(b)	209
10	17-31	100	132	15	33-41	133(c)	212
10	32-45	101	135	15	42-47	133(d)	215
10	46-52	102	137	16	1-8	134	218
11	1-11	105	140	16	9-11	135	220
11	12-18	106	144	16	12, 13	137	223
11	19-25	108	146	16	14	138	224
11	27-33	109	147	16	15-18	141	228
12	1-12	109	149	16	19, 20	143	230
12	13-17	110	152				

## LUKE.

Chap.	Verse.	Section.	Page.	Chap.	Verse.	Section.	Page.
1	1-4	1(a)	1	2	21-38	9	8
1	5-25	2	3	2	39	12	10
1	26-38	3	4	2	40-52	13	11
1	39-56	4	5	3	1-18	14	12
1	57-80	5	6	3	19, 20	23	22
2	1-7	7	7	3	21, 22	15	15
2	8-20	8	8	3	23-38	1(c)	2



# XVI TABLE FOR FINDING ANY PASSAGE IN HARMONY.

## LUKE.—CONTINUED.

Chap.	Verse	Section.	Page.	Chap.	Verse	Section.	Page.
4	1-13	16	16	10	38-42	82	112
4	14, 15	23	22	11	1-13	83	112
4	14, 15	24	25	11	14-36	84	113
4	16-31	26	26	11	37-54	85	114
4	31-37	28	28	12	1-59	86	115
4	38-41	29	29	13	1-9	87	118
4	42-44	30	30	13	10-21	88	118
5	1-11	27	27	13	22-35	90	120
5	12-16	31	31	14	1-24	91	121
5	17-26	32	32	14	25-35	92	122
5	27-32	33	34	15	1-32	93	123
5	33-39	34	35	16	1-31	93	124
6	1-5	38	41	17	1-10	93	125
6	6-11	39	42	17	11-37	96	128
6	12-16	41	44	18	1-14	97	129
6	17-19	42	45	18	15-17	99	131
6	20-26	42(a)	46	18	18-30	100	132
6	27-36	42(c)	46	18	31-34	101	135
6	31	42(g)	51	18	35-43	102	137
6	37-42	42(f)	50	19	1-28	103	138
6	43-46	42(h)	51	19	29-44	105	140
6	47-49	42(i)	52	19	45-48	106	144
7	1-10	43	52	20	1-19	109	147
7	11-17	44	53	20	20-26	110	152
7	18-35	45	54	20	27-40	111	153
7	36-50	46	56	20	41-44	112	156
8	1-3	47	57	20	45-47	113	156
8	4	51	60	21	1-4	114	159
8	5-18	51(a)	61	21	5-36	115	160
8	19-21	50	59	21	37, 38	108	146
8	22-25	52	66	22	1-6	117	169
8	26-39	53	67	22	7-16	118	172
8	40	54	70	22	17-20	121	178
8	41-56	35	36	22	21-23	120	174
9	1-6	55	71	22	24-30	118	173
9	7-9	56	74	22	31-38	120	176
9	10-17	57	76	22	39-46	123	183
9	18-21	64	89	22	47-53	124	186
9	22-27	65	91	22	54	126	190
9	28-36	66	92	22	54-62	127	193
9	37-43	67	94	22	63-65	126	192
9	43-45	68	97	22	66-71	128	195
9	46-50	70	98	23	1	128	196
9	51-56	74	102	23	2-5	130	197
9	57-62	72	101	23	6-12	131	200
10	1-22	80	110	23	13-25	132	201
10	25-37	81	111	23	26-33	133(a)	207

TABLE FOR FINDING ANY PASSAGE IN HARMONY. XVII

LUKE.—CONTINUED.

Chap.	Verse.	Section.	Page.	Chap.	Verse.	Section.	Page.
23	33-43	133 (b)	209	24	13-35	137	223
23	44-49	133 (c)	212	24	36-43	138	224
23	50-56	133 (d)	215	24	44-49	142	229
24	1-8	134	218	24	50-53	143	230
24	9-11	135	220				

JOHN.

Chap.	Verse.	Section.	Page.	Chap.	Verse.	Section.	Page.
1	1-18	1(b)	1	12	1	104	140
1	19-34	17	18	12	2-8	117	169
1	35-51	18	18	12	9-11	104	140
2	1-11	19	19	12	12-19	105	141
2	12	20	20	12	20-50	107	145
2	13-22	21(a)	20	13	1-20	119	174
2	23-25	21(b)	20	13	21-38	120	174
3	1-21	21(b)	20	14	1-31	122(a)	179
3	22-36	22	21	15	1-27	122(b)	180
4	1-4	23(a)	22	16	1-33	122(b)	181
4	5-42	23(b)	22	17	1-26	122(c)	182
4	43-45	23(c)	24	18	1	123	183
4	46-54	25	26	18	2-12	124	186
5	1-47	37	39	18	12-14	125	190
6	1-14	57	76	18	15-18	127	193
6	15-21	58	79	18	19-23	125	190
6	22-71	59	81	18	24	126	190
7	1	60	83	18	25-27	127	194
7	2-9	73	102	18	28	128	196
7	10	74	102	18	28-38	130	197
7	11-52	75	104	18	39, 40	132	202
7	53	76	105	19	1-16	132	203
8	1-11	76	105	19	16, 17	133(a)	207
8	12-59	77	106	19	18-27	133(b)	209
9	1-41	78	108	19	28-30	133(c)	213
10	1-21	79	109	19	31-42	133(d)	215
10	22-42	89	119	20	1-10	134	218
11	1-46	94	126	20	11-18	135	220
11	47-54	95	127	20	19-25	138	224
11	55-57	104	140	20	26-31	139	226
				21	1-25	140	226



## PART I.

### MATTERS CONNECTED WITH OUR LORD'S BIRTH AND CHILDHOOD.

#### § 1. INTRODUCTORY PORTIONS OF THE SEVERAL GOSPELS.

*Matthew, writing for Jewish readers, begins with a genealogy (comp. Gen. 5:1; 6:9; 10:1, etc.). Luke, writing like a Greek historian, begins with a dedication to a friend (so also in Part II of his history, Acts 1:1). John begins in a thoroughly unique manner, not (as in many biographies) with the birth of the subject, but with his eternal pre-existence, and the fact that the entire universe owes its existence to him; adding that he finally became incarnate, and we knew him well (comp. 1 John 1:1). Mark begins his narrative without any formal Introduction.*

#### (a) DEDICATION OF LUKE'S GOSPEL.

Luke 1:1-4.

1 FORASMUCH as many have taken in hand to draw up a narrative concerning those matters which have been <sup>1</sup>fulfilled among us, even as they delivered them unto us, which from the beginning were eyewitnesses and ministers of the word, it seemed good to me also, having traced the course of all things accurately from the first, to write unto thee in order, most excellent Theophilus; that thou mightest know the certainty concerning the <sup>2</sup>things <sup>3</sup>wherein thou wast instructed.

1 Or, fully established. 2. Gr. words. 3. Or, which thou wast taught by word of mouth.

#### (b) INTRODUCTION TO JOHN'S GOSPEL.

John 1:1-18.

1 In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. The same was in the beginning with God. 3 All things were made <sup>1</sup>by him; and without him <sup>2</sup>was not anything made that hath been made. In him was life; and the life was the light of men. And the light shineth in the darkness; and the darkness <sup>3</sup>apprehended it not. There came a man, sent from God, whose name was John. The same came for witness, that he might bear witness of the light, that all might believe through him. He was not the light, but came that he might bear witness of the light. <sup>4</sup>There was the true light, even the light which lighteth <sup>5</sup>every man, coming into the world. He was in the world, and the world was made <sup>1</sup>by him, and the world knew him not. He came unto <sup>6</sup>his own, and they that were his own

John 1:1-18.

12 received him not. But as many as received him, to them gave he the 13 right to become children of God, *even* to them that believe on his name: which were <sup>7</sup>born, not of <sup>8</sup>blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the 14 will of man, but of God. And the Word became flesh, and <sup>9</sup>dwelt among us (and we beheld his glory, glory as of <sup>10</sup>the only begotten 15 from the Father), full of grace and truth. John beareth witness of him, and crieth, saying, <sup>11</sup>This was he of whom I said, He that com- 16 eth after me is become before me: for he was <sup>12</sup>before me. For of his 17 fulness we all received, and grace for grace. For the law was given 18 <sup>1</sup>by Moses; grace and truth came <sup>1</sup>by Jesus Christ. No man hath seen God at any time; <sup>13</sup>the only begotten Son, which is in the bosom of the Father, he hath declared *him*.

1. Or, *through*. 2. Or, *was not anything made*. *That which hath been made was life in him; and the life, &c.* 3. Or, *overcame*. 4. Or, *The true light, which lighteth every man, was coming*. 5. Or, *every man as he cometh*. 6. Gr. *his own things*. 7. Or, *begotten*. 8. Gr. *bloods*. 9. Gr. *tabernacled*. 10. Or, *an only begotten from a father*. 11. Some ancient authorities read *(this was he that said)*. 12. Gr. *first in regard of me*. 13. Many very ancient authorities read *God only begotten*.

### (c) THE GENEALOGIES IN MATTHEW AND LUKE.

Matt. 1:1-17.

1 <sup>1</sup>The book of the <sup>2</sup>generation of Jesus Christ, the son of David, the son of Abraham.  
2 Abraham begat Isaac; and Isaac begat Jacob; and Jacob begat Ju-  
3 dah and his brethren; and Judah begat Perez and Zerah of Tamar;  
and Perez begat Hezron; and Hez-  
4 ron begat <sup>3</sup>Ram; and <sup>3</sup>Ram begat Amminadab;  
and Amminadab begat Nahshon: and Nahshon  
5 begat Salmon; and Salmon begat Boaz of Rahab; and Boaz begat  
6 Obed of Ruth; and Obed begat Jesse; and Jesse begat David the king.

And David begat Solomon of her *that had been the wife of Uriah*;  
7 and Solomon begat Rehoboam; and Rehoboam begat Abijah;  
8 and Abijah begat <sup>4</sup>Asa; and <sup>4</sup>Asa begat Jehoshaphat; and Jeho-  
shaphat begat Joram; and Joram  
9 begat Uzziah; and Uzziah begat Jotham; and Jotham begat Ahaz;  
10 and Ahaz begat Hezekiah; and Hezekiah begat Manasseh; and Manasseh begat <sup>5</sup>Amon; and  
11 <sup>5</sup>Amon begat Josiah; and Josiah begat Jeichoniah and his breth-

Luke 3:23-38.

Being the son (as was supposed)  
24 of Joseph, the son of Heli, the son of Matthat, the son of Levi,  
25 the son of Jannai, the son of Joseph, the son of Mattathias, the son of Amos, the son of Nahum, the son of Esli, the son of Nag-  
26 gai, the son of Maath, the son of Mattathias, the son of Semein, the son of Josech, the son of  
27 Joda, the son of Joanan, the son of Rhessa, the son of Zerubbabel, the son of <sup>7</sup>Shealtiel, the son of  
28 Neri, the son of Melchi, the son of Addi, the son of Cosam, the son of Elmadam, the son of Er, the son of Jesus, the son of Eliezer, the son of Jorim, the son of  
30 Matthat, the son of Levi, the son of Symeon, the son of Judas, the son of Joseph, the son of Jonam,  
31 the son of Eliakim, the son of Melea, the son of Menna, the son of Mattatha, the son of Nathan,  
32 the son of David, the son of Jesse, the son of Obed, the son of Boaz, the son of <sup>8</sup>Salmon, the son of  
33 Nahshon, the son of Amminadab, <sup>9</sup>the son of <sup>10</sup>Arni, the son of Hez-  
34 ron, the son of Perez, the son of



Matt. 1:1-17.

Luke 3:23-38.

ren, at the time of the <sup>6</sup>carrying away to Babylon.

- 12 And after the <sup>6</sup>carrying away to Babylon, Jechoniah begat <sup>7</sup>Shealtiel; and <sup>7</sup>Shealtiel begat 13 Zerubbabel; and Zerubbabel begat Abiud; and Abiud begat Eliakim; and Eliakim begat Azor; and Azor begat Sadoc; and Sadoc begat Achim; and Achim begat Eliud; and Eliud begat Eleazar; and Eleazar begat Matthan; and Matthan begat Jacob; 16 and Jacob begat Joseph the husband of Mary, of whom was born Jesus, who is called Christ.

- 17 So all the generations from Abraham unto David are fourteen generations; and from David to the <sup>6</sup>carrying away to Babylon fourteen generations; and from the <sup>6</sup>carrying away to Babylon unto the Christ fourteen generations.\*

1 Or, *The Genealogy of Jesus Christ*. 2 Or, *The birth*; as in ver. 18. 3 Gr. *Aram*. 4 Gr. *Asaph*. 5 Gr. *Amos*. 6 Or, *removal to Babylon*. 7 Gr. *Salathiel*. 8 Some ancient authorities write *Sala*. 9 Many ancient authorities insert *the son of Admin*; and one writes *Admin* for *Amminadab*. 10 Some ancient authorities write *Aram*.

*The first events of the history are the several Annunciations and related matters, and the birth of John the Forerunner, and of Jesus the Messiah, §§ 2-8.*

## § 2. ANNUNCIATION† OF THE BIRTH OF JOHN THE BAPTIST.

Jerusalem, in the Temple. Probably B.C. 6.

Luke 1:5-25.

- 5 There was in the days of Herod, king of Judea, a certain priest named Zacharias, of the course of Abijah: and he had a wife of the 6 daughters of Aaron, and her name was Elisabeth. And they were both righteous before God, walking in all the commandments and ordinances of the Lord blameless. And they had no child, because that Elisabeth was barren, and they both were now <sup>1</sup>well stricken in years. 8 Now it came to pass, while he executed the priest's office before 9 God in the order of his course, according to the custom of the priest's office, his lot was to enter into the <sup>2</sup>temple of the Lord and burn incense. And the whole multitude of the people were praying without 11 at the hour of incense. And there appeared unto him an angel of the 12 Lord standing on the right side of the altar of incense. And Zacharias was troubled when he saw *him*, and fear fell upon him. But the angel said unto him, Fear not, Zacharias: because thy supplication is

\*Observe that Matthew's three divisions of the genealogy represent three great periods in the history of Israel. Luke's genealogy is strikingly different (see Note in the latter part of this volume, on § 1, c).

†Observe that there are three annunciations: §§ 2, 3, 26, and §§ 4 and 5 are virtually connected with these. Trace this connection throughout §§ 2-7.



Luke 1:5-25.

heard, and thy wife Elisabeth shall bear thee a son, and thou shalt  
 14 call his name John. And thou shalt have joy and gladness; and many  
 15 shall rejoice at his birth. For he shall be great in the sight of the  
 Lord, and he shall drink no wine nor <sup>3</sup>strong drink; and he shall be  
 16 filled with the <sup>4</sup>Holy Ghost, even from his mother's womb. And many  
 17 of the children of Israel shall he turn unto the Lord their God. And  
 he shall <sup>5</sup>go before his face in the spirit and power of Elijah, to turn  
 the hearts of the fathers to the children, and the disobedient *to walk*  
 in the wisdom of the just; to make ready for the Lord a people pre-  
 18 pared *for him*. And Zacharias said unto the angel, Whereby shall I  
 know this? for I am an old man, and my wife <sup>6</sup>well stricken in years.  
 19 And the angel answering said unto him, I am Gabriel, that stand in  
 the presence of God; and I was sent to speak unto thee, and to bring  
 20 thee these good tidings. And behold, thou shalt be silent and not  
 able to speak, until the day that these things shall come to pass, be-  
 cause thou believedst not my words, which shall be fulfilled in their  
 21 season. And the people were waiting for Zacharias, and they mar-  
 22 velled <sup>7</sup>while he tarried in the <sup>2</sup>temple. And when he came out, he  
 could not speak unto them: and they perceived that he had seen a  
 vision in the <sup>2</sup>temple: and he continued making signs unto them, and  
 23 remained dumb. And it came to pass, when the days of his ministra-  
 tion were fulfilled, he departed unto his house.  
 24 And after these days Elisabeth his wife conceived; and she hid her-  
 25 self five months, saying, Thus hath the Lord done unto me in the  
 days wherein he looked upon *me*, to take away my reproach among  
 men.

1. Gr. *advanced in their days*. 2. Or, *sanctuary*. 3. Gr. *sikera*. 4. Or, *Holy Spirit*: and so throughout all the Gospels. 5. Some ancient authorities read *come nigh before his face*. 6. Gr. *advanced in her days*. 7. Or, *at his tarrying*.

### § 3. ANNUNCIATION TO THE VIRGIN MARY OF THE BIRTH OF JESUS.

Nazareth. Probably B.C. 5.

Luke 1:26-38.

26 Now in the sixth month the angel Gabriel was sent from God unto  
 27 a city of Galilee, named Nazareth, to a virgin betrothed to a man  
 whose name was Joseph, of the house of David; and the virgin's name  
 28 was Mary. And he came in unto her, and said, Hail, thou that art  
 29 <sup>1</sup>highly favoured, the Lord *is* with thee.<sup>2</sup> But she was greatly  
 troubled at the saying, and cast in her mind what manner of saluta-  
 30 tion this might be. And the angel said unto her, Fear not, Mary:  
 31 for thou hast found <sup>3</sup>favor with God. And behold, thou shalt con-  
 ceive in thy womb, and bring forth a son, and shalt call his name  
 32 Jesus. He shall be great, and shall be called the Son of the Most  
 High: and the Lord God shall give unto him the throne of his father  
 33 David: and he shall reign over the house of Jacob <sup>4</sup>forever; and of his  
 34 kingdom there shall be no end. And Mary said unto the angel, How  
 35 shall this be, seeing I know not a man? And the angel answered and  
 said unto her, The Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power  
 of the Most High shall overshadow thee: wherefore also <sup>5</sup>that which

Luke 1:26-38.

36 <sup>6</sup>is to be born <sup>7</sup>shall be called holy, the Son of God. And behold,  
 Elisabeth thy kinswoman, she also hath conceived a son in her old  
 37 age: and this is the sixth month with her that <sup>8</sup>was called barren.  
 38 For no word from God shall be void of power. And Mary said, Be-  
 hold, the <sup>9</sup>handmaid of the Lord; be it unto me according to thy  
 word. And the angel departed from her.

1. Or, *endued with grace*. 2. Many ancient authorities add *blessed art thou among women*. (See ver. 42.) 3. Or, *grace*. 4. Gr. *unto the ages*. 5. Or, *the holy thing which is to be born shall be called the son of God*. 6. Or, *is begotten*. 7. Some ancient authorities insert *of thee*. 8. Or, *is*. 9. Gr. *bondmaid*.

#### § 4. VISIT OF MARY TO ELISABETH.

Hill Country of Judea.

Luke 1:39-56.

39 And Mary arose in these days and went into the hill country with  
 40 haste, into a city of Judah; and entered into the house of Zacharias and  
 41 saluted Elisabeth. And it came to pass, when Elisabeth heard the sal-  
 utation of Mary, the babe leaped in her womb; and Elisabeth was filled  
 42 with the Holy Ghost; and she lifted up her voice with a loud cry, and  
 said, Blessed *art* thou among women, and blessed *is* the fruit of thy  
 43 womb. And whence is this to me, that the mother of my Lord should  
 44 come unto me? For behold, when the voice of thy salutation came  
 45 into mine ears, the babe leaped in my womb for joy. And blessed *is*  
 she that <sup>1</sup>believed; for there shall be a fulfilment of the things which  
 46 have been spoken to her from the Lord. And Mary said,

My soul doth magnify the Lord,  
 47 And my spirit hath rejoiced in God my Saviour.  
 48 For he hath looked upon the low estate of his <sup>2</sup>handmaiden:  
 For behold, from henceforth all generations shall call me blessed.  
 49 For he that is mighty hath done to me great things;  
 And holy is his name.  
 50 And his mercy is unto generations and generations  
 On them that fear him.  
 51 He hath shewed strength with his arm;  
 He hath scattered the proud <sup>3</sup>in the imagination of their heart.  
 52 He hath put down princes from *their* thrones,  
 And hath exalted them of low degree.  
 53 The hungry he hath filled with good things;  
 And the rich he hath sent empty away.  
 54 He hath holpen Israel his servant,  
 That he might remember mercy  
 55 (As he spake unto our fathers)  
 Toward Abraham and his seed for ever.  
 56 And Mary abode with her about three months, and returned unto  
 her house.

1. Or, *believed that there shall be*. 2. Gr. *bondmaiden*. 3. Or, *by*.

## §5. BIRTH OF JOHN THE BAPTIST, AND HIS DESERT LIFE.

Hill Country of Judea.

Luke 1:57-80.

57 Now Elisabeth's time was fulfilled that she should be delivered;  
 58 and she brought forth a son. And her neighbors and her kinsfolk  
 heard that the Lord had magnified his mercy toward her; and they  
 59 rejoiced with her. And it came to pass on the eighth day, that they  
 came to circumcise the child; and they would have called him Zacha-  
 60 rias, after the name of his father. And his mother answered and  
 61 said, Not so; but he shall be called John. And they said unto her,  
 62 There is none of thy kindred that is called by this name. And they  
 63 made signs to his father, what he would have him called. And he  
 64 asked for a writing tablet, and wrote, saying, His name is John. And  
 they marvelled all. And his mouth was opened immediately, and his  
 65 tongue *loosed*, and he spake, blessing God. And fear came on all  
 that dwelt round about them: and all these sayings were noised abroad  
 66 throughout all the hill country of Judea. And all that heard them  
 laid them up in their heart, saying, What then shall this child be?  
 For the hand of the Lord was with him.

67 And his father Zacharias was filled with the Holy Ghost, and proph-  
 esied, saying,  
 68 Blessed *be* the Lord, the God of Israel;  
 For he hath visited and wrought redemption for his people,  
 69 And hath raised up a horn of salvation for us  
 In the house of his servant David  
 70 (As he spake by the mouth of his holy prophets which have been  
 since the world began),  
 71 Salvation from our enemies, and from the hand of all that hate us;  
 72 To show mercy towards our fathers,  
 And to remember his holy covenant;  
 73 The oath which he sware unto Abraham our father,  
 74 To grant unto us that we being delivered out of the hand of our en-  
 emies  
 Should serve him without fear,  
 75 In holiness and righteousness before him all our days.  
 76 Yea and thou, child, shalt be called the prophet of the Most High:  
 For thou shalt go before the face of the Lord to make ready his  
 ways;  
 77 To give knowledge of salvation unto his people  
 In the remission of their sins,  
 78 Because of the <sup>1</sup>tender mercy of our God,  
<sup>2</sup>Whereby the dayspring from on high <sup>3</sup>shall visit us,  
 79 To shine upon them that sit in darkness and the shadow of death;  
 To guide our feet into the way of peace.  
 80 And the child grew, and waxed strong in spirit, and was in the des-  
 erts till the day of his shewing unto Israel.\*

1. Or, *heart of mercy*. 2. Or, *Wherein*. 3. Many ancient authorities read *hath vis-  
 ited us*.

\*Dwell on this summary statement as to John's retired life in the wild regions of Judea,  
 whence he will come forth 30 years later, § 14.

## § 6. ANNUNCIATION TO JOSEPH OF THE BIRTH OF JESUS.

Nazareth.

Matt. 1:18-25

18 Now the <sup>1</sup>birth <sup>2</sup>of Jesus Christ was on this wise: When his mother Mary had been betrothed to Joseph, before they came together she  
 19 was found with child of the <sup>3</sup>Holy Ghost. And Joseph her husband, being a righteous man, and not willing to make her a public example,  
 20 was minded to put her away privily. But when he thought on these things, behold, an angel of the Lord appeared unto him in a dream, saying, Joseph, thou son of David, fear not to take unto thee Mary  
 21 thy wife: for that which is <sup>4</sup>conceived in her is of the Holy Ghost. And she shall bring forth a son; and thou shalt call his name JESUS;  
 22 for it is he that shall save his people from their sins. Now all this is come to pass, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the Lord through the prophet, saying,  
 23 Behold, the virgin shall be with child, and shall bring forth a son, And they shall call his name <sup>5</sup>Immanuel;  
 24 which is, being interpreted, God with us. And Joseph arose from his sleep, and did as the angel of the Lord commanded him, and took unto  
 25 him his wife; and knew her not till she had brought forth a son.

1. Or, *generation*: as in ver. 1 in § 3. 2. Some ancient authorities read of *the Christ*.  
 3. Or, *Holy Spirit*. 4. Gr. *begotten*. 5. Gr. *Emmanuel*.

## § 7. BIRTH OF JESUS.

Bethlehem. Probably B.C. 5.

Luke 2:1-7.

1 Now it came to pass in those days, there went out a decree from  
 2 Cæsar Augustus, that all the <sup>1</sup>world should be enrolled. This was the first enrolment made when Quirinius was governor of Syria.  
 3 And all went to enrol themselves, every one to his own city.\* And  
 4 Joseph also went up from Galilee, out of the city of Nazareth, into Judea, to the city of David, which is called Bethlehem, because he was  
 5 of the house and family of David; to enrol himself with Mary, who was  
 6 betrothed to him, being great with child. And it came to pass, while they were there, the days were fulfilled that she should be delivered.  
 7 And she brought forth her firstborn son; and she wrapped him in swaddling clothes, and laid him in a manger, because there was no room for them in the inn.

1. Gr. *inhabited earth*.

\*Observe how the ruler of the civilized world is unconsciously bringing it about that the Messiah, the son of David, shall be born at Bethlehem, though his mother's home was Nazareth. All the previous history of Rome and of Israel gathers about this manger. As to Quirinius, and as to the probable time of the Saviour's birth, see Note at the end of the book, § 7.



## § 8. ANGELS PROCLAIM TO SHEPHERDS THAT THE MESSIAH IS BORN AT BETHLEHEM.

Near Bethlehem.

Luke 2:8-20.

8 And there were shepherds in the same country abiding in the field,  
9 and keeping <sup>1</sup>watch by night over their flock. And an angel of the  
Lord stood by them, and the glory of the Lord shone round about  
10 them, and they were sore afraid. And the angel said unto them, Be  
11 not afraid; for behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy which  
shall be to all the people: for there is born to you this day in the city  
12 of David, a Saviour which is <sup>2</sup>Christ the Lord. And this *is* the sign  
unto you; Ye shall find a babe wrapped in swaddling clothes, and lying  
13 in a manger. And suddenly there was with the angel a multitude of  
the heavenly host praising God, and saying,

14 Glory to God in the highest,

And on earth <sup>3</sup>peace among <sup>4</sup>men in whom he is well pleased.

15 And it came to pass, when the angels went away from them into  
heaven, the shepherds said one to another, Let us now go even unto  
Bethlehem, and see this <sup>5</sup>thing that is come to pass, which the Lord  
16 hath made known unto us. And they came with haste, and found  
17 both Mary and Joseph, and the babe lying in the manger. And when  
they saw it, they made known concerning the saying which was spok-  
18 en to them about this child. And all that heard it wondered at the  
19 things which were spoken unto them by the shepherds. But Mary  
20 kept all these <sup>6</sup>sayings, pondering them in her heart. And the  
shepherds returned, glorifying and praising God for all the things  
that they had heard and seen, even as it was spoken unto them.

1. Or, *night-watches*. 2. Or, *Anointed Lord*. 3. Many ancient authorities read *peace, good pleasure among men*. 4. Gr. *men of good pleasure*. 5. Or, *saying*. 6. Or, *things*.

*Next, in §§ 9-13 we find certain events connected with Jesus' infancy and childhood.*

## § 9. CIRCUMCISION OF JESUS, AND PRESENTATION IN THE TEMPLE.

Bethlehem and Jerusalem.

Luke 2:21-38.

21 And when eight days were fulfilled for circumcising him, his name  
was called JESUS, which was so called by the angel before he was con-  
ceived in the womb.

22 And when the days of their purification according to the law of  
23 Moses were fulfilled, they brought him up to Jerusalem, to present  
him to the Lord (as it is written in the law of the Lord, Every male  
that openeth the womb, shall be called holy to the Lord), and to offer  
24 a sacrifice according to that which is said in the law of the Lord, A  
25 pair of turtledoves, or two young pigeons. And behold, there was a  
man in Jerusalem, whose name was Simeon; and this man was right-  
eous and devout, looking for the consolation of Israel: and the Holy  
26 Spirit was upon him. And it had been revealed unto him by the Holy  
Spirit, that he should not see death, before he had seen the Lord's

Luke 2:21-38.

27 Christ. And he came in the Spirit into the temple: and when the  
 28 parents brought in the child Jesus, that they might do concerning  
 him after the custom of the law, then he received him into his arms,  
 and blessed God and said,\*

29 Now lettest thou thy <sup>1</sup>servant depart, O <sup>2</sup>Lord,

According to thy word, in peace;

30 For mine eyes have seen thy salvation,

31 Which thou hast prepared before the face of all the peoples;

32 A light for <sup>3</sup>revelation to the Gentiles,

And the glory of thy people Israel.

33 And his father and his mother were marvelling at the things which  
 34 were spoken concerning him; and Simeon blessed them, and said unto  
 Mary his mother, Behold, this *child* is set for the falling and rising  
 35 up of many in Israel; and for a sign which is spoken against; yea and  
 a sword shall pierce through thine own soul; that thoughts out of many  
 36 hearts may be revealed. And there was one Anna, a prophetess,  
 the daughter of Phanuel, of the tribe of Asher (she was <sup>4</sup>of a great age,  
 37 having lived with a husband seven years from her virginity, and she had  
 been a widow even for four-score and four years), which departed not  
 from the temple, worshipping with fastings and supplications night  
 38 and day. And coming up at that very hour she gave thanks unto  
 God, and spake of him to all them that were looking for the redemp-  
 tion of Jerusalem.

1. Gr. *bondservant*. 2. Gr. *Master*. 3. Or, *the unveiling of the Gentiles*. 4. Gr. *advanced in many days*.

## § 10. MAGI VISIT THE NEW-BORN KING OF THE JEWS.

Jerusalem and Bethlehem.

Matt. 2:1-12.

1 Now when Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judea in the days of  
 2 Herod the king, behold, <sup>1</sup>wise men from the east came to Jerusalem,  
 saying, <sup>2</sup>Where is he that is born King of the Jews? for we saw his  
 3 star in the east, and are come to worship him. And when Herod the  
 4 king heard it, he was troubled, and all Jerusalem with him. And  
 gathering together all the chief priests and scribes of the people, he  
 5 inquired of them where the Christ should be born. And they said  
 unto him, In Bethlehem of Judea: for thus it is written <sup>3</sup>by the  
 prophet,

6 And thou Bethlehem, land of Judah,

Art in no wise least among the princes of Judah;

For out of thee shall come forth a governor,

Which shall be shepherd of my people Israel.

7 Then Herod privily called the <sup>1</sup>wise men, and learned of them  
 8 carefully <sup>4</sup>what time the star appeared. And he sent them to Beth-  
 lehem, and said, Go and search out carefully concerning the young  
 child; and when ye have found *him*, bring me word, that I also may  
 9 come and worship him. And they, having heard the king, went  
 their way; and lo, the star, which they saw in the east, went be-

\* Notice the four Psalms here occurring, those of Elisabeth and Mary in § 4, of Zacharias in § 5, of Simeon in § 9.



Matt. 2:1-12.

- fore them, till it came and stood over where the young child was.  
 10 And when they saw the star, they rejoiced with exceeding great joy.  
 11 And they came into the house and saw the young child with Mary his mother; and they fell down and worshipped him; and opening their treasures they offered unto him gifts, gold and frankincense  
 12 and myrrh. And being warned of *God* in a dream that they should not return to Herod, they departed into their own country another way.

1. Gr. *Magi*. Compare Esther 1:13; Dan. 2:12. 2. Or, *Where is the King of the Jews that is born?* 3. Or, *through*. 4. Or, *the time of the star that appeared*.

## § 11. THE CHILD JESUS CARRIED TO EGYPT, AND THE CHILDREN AT BETHLEHEM SLAIN.

Probably B.C. 4.

Matt. 2:13-18.

- 13 Now when they were departed, behold, an angel of the Lord appeareth to Joseph in a dream, saying, Arise and take the young child and his mother, and flee into Egypt, and be thou there until I tell thee: for Herod will seek the young child to destroy him. And he arose and took the young child by night, and departed into Egypt;  
 14 and was there until the death of Herod: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the Lord through the prophet, saying, Out of Egypt did I call my son. Then Herod, when he saw that he was mocked of the 'wise men, was exceeding wroth, and sent forth, and slew all the male children that were in Bethlehem, and in all the borders thereof, from two years old and under, according to the time  
 15 which he had carefully learned of the 'wise men. Then was fulfilled that which was spoken 'by Jeremiah the prophet, saying,  
 16 A voice was heard in Ramah,  
 Weeping and great mourning,  
 Rachel weeping for her children;  
 And she would not be comforted, because they are not.

1. Gr. *Magi*. 2. Or, *through*.

## § 12. THE CHILD BROUGHT FROM EGYPT TO NAZARETH.

Probably B.C. 4.

Matt. 2:19-23.

Luke 2:39.

- 19 But when Herod was dead, behold, an angel of the Lord appeareth in a dream to Joseph in  
 20 Egypt, saying, Arise and take the young child 39 And when they and his mother, and go into the land of Israel: had accomplished  
 21 for they are dead that sought the young child's all things that were  
 life. And he arose and took the young child according to the  
 and his mother, and came into the land of Is- law of the Lord,  
 22 rael. But when he heard that Archelaus was they returned into

Matt. 2:19-23.

reigning over Judea in the room of his father Herod, he was afraid to go thither; and being  
 23 warned of God in a dream, he withdrew into the parts of Galilee, and came and dwelt in a city called Nazareth; that it might be fulfilled which was spoken <sup>1</sup>by the prophets, that he should be called a Nazarene.

Luke 2:39.

Galilee, to their own city Nazareth.\*

1. Or, *through*.

§ 13. JESUS LIVES AT NAZARETH, AND VISITS JERUSALEM WHEN  
 12 YEARS OLD.

Probably A.D. 7 or 8.

Luke 2:40-52.

40 And the child grew, and waxed strong, <sup>1</sup>filled with wisdom; and the grace of God was upon him.  
 41 And his parents went every year to Jerusalem at the feast of the  
 42 passover. And when he was twelve years old, they went up after the  
 43 custom of the feast; and when they had fulfilled the days, as they  
 were returning, the boy Jesus tarried behind in Jerusalem; and his  
 44 parents knew it not; but supposing him to be in the company, they  
 went a day's journey; and they sought for him among their kinsfolk  
 45 and acquaintance: and when they found him not, they returned to  
 46 Jerusalem, seeking for him. And it came to pass, after three days  
 they found him in the temple, sitting in the midst of the <sup>2</sup>doctors,  
 47 both hearing them, and asking them questions: and all that heard  
 48 him were amazed at his understanding and his answers. And  
 49 when they saw him, they were astonished: and his mother said unto  
 him, <sup>3</sup>Son, why hast thou thus dealt with us? behold, thy father and  
 50 I sought thee sorrowing. And he said unto them, How is it that ye  
 51 sought me? wist ye not that I must be <sup>4</sup>in my Father's house? And  
 they understood not the saying which he spake unto them. And he  
 went down with them, and came to Nazareth; and he was subject unto  
 them: and his mother kept all *these* <sup>5</sup>sayings in her heart.  
 52 And Jesus advanced in wisdom and <sup>6</sup>stature, and in <sup>7</sup>favor with  
 God and men.

1. Gr *becoming full of wisdom*. 2. Or, *teachers*. 3. Gr. *Child*. 4. Or, *about my Father's business*. Gr. *in the things of my Father*. 5. Or, *things*. 6. Or, *age*. 7. Or, *grace*.

\* After the return to Nazareth, in § 12, we know nothing of Jesus' life at that place beyond the general statements of Luke 2:40, 52, with the knowledge and dispositions indicated in the narrative of § 13, and the fact that he was a carpenter, until he comes forth to be baptized by John his forerunner, § 15. The social and political conditions of this period in Galilee are described by Eidersheim, Geikie, and other writers on the Life of Jesus, and briefly stated in the author's commentary on Matthew, p. 30 f. Dwell on the general statement of Luke 2:52 (§ 13).

## PART II.

## BEGINNING OF THE FORERUNNER'S MINISTRY.

Several months. Probably A.D. 25 or 26.

In the wilderness of Judea, and beside the Jordan.

§ 14. JOHN THE BAPTIST PREACHES THE NEAR APPROACH OF THE  
MESSIANIC REIGN, AND BAPTIZES IN THE JORDAN THOSE  
WHO REPENT AND BELIEVE.

Matt. 3:1-12.

Mark 1:1-8.

Luke 3:1-18.

1 And in those days cometh John the Baptist, preaching in the wilderness of Judea, saying, Repent ye; for the kingdom of heaven is at hand. For this is he that was spoken of by Isaiah the prophet, saying,  
The voice of one crying in the wilderness,  
Make ye ready the way of the Lord,  
Make his paths straight.  
4 Now John himself had his raiment of camel's hair, and a leathern girdle about his loins; and

1 The beginning of the gospel of Jesus Christ the Son of God.

2 Even as it is written in Isaiah the prophet,

Behold, I send my messenger before thy face,  
Who shall prepare thy way;

3 The voice of one crying in the wilderness,

Make ye ready the way of the Lord,  
Make his paths straight;

4 John came, who baptized in the wilderness and preached the baptism of repentance unto re-

5 mission of sins. And there went out unto him all the country

1 Now in the fifteenth year of the reign of Tiberius Cæsar, Pontius Pilate being governor of Judea, and Herod being tetrarch of Galilee, and his brother Philip tetrarch of the region of Ituræa and Trachonitis, and Lysanias tetrarch of Abilene,  
2 in the highpriesthood of Annas and Caiaphas, the word of God came unto John the son of Zacharias in the wilderness. And he came into all the region round about Jordan, preaching the baptism of repentance unto remission of sins; as it is written in the book of the words of Isaiah the prophet,

The voice of one crying in the wilderness,  
Make ye ready the way of the Lord,  
Make his paths straight.

5 Every valley shall be filled,  
And every moun-

Matt. 3:1-12.

his food was locusts and wild honey.  
 5 Then went out unto him Jerusalem, and all Judea, and all the region round about  
 6 Jordan; and they were baptized of him in the river Jordan, confessing their

7 sins. But when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees coming to his baptism, he said unto them, Ye offspring of vipers, who warned you to flee from the wrath  
 8 to come? Bring forth therefore fruit worthy of <sup>2</sup>repentance: and think not to say within yourselves, We have Abraham to our father: for I say unto you, that God is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham. And  
 10 even now is the axe laid unto the root of the trees: every tree therefore that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire.

Mark 1:1-8.

of Judea, and all they of Jerusalem; and they were baptized of him in the river Jordan, confessing their sins.  
 6 And John was clothed with camel's hair, and *had* a leathern girdle about his loins, and did eat locusts and wild honey.

Luke 3:1-18.

tain and hill shall be brought low; And the crooked shall become straight, And the rough ways smooth;  
 6 And all flesh shall see the salvation of God.  
 7 He said therefore to the multitude that went out to be baptized of him, Ye offspring of vipers, who warned you to flee from the wrath to  
 8 come? Bring forth therefore fruits worthy of <sup>2</sup>repentance; and begin not to say within yourselves, We have Abraham to our father: for I say unto you, that God is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abra-  
 9 ham. And even now is the axe also laid unto the root of the trees: every tree therefore that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into  
 10 the fire. And the multitudes asked him, saying, What then must we do?  
 11 And he answered and said unto them, He that hath two coats, let him impart to him that hath none; and he that hath food, let him  
 12 do likewise. And there came also <sup>3</sup>publicans to be baptized,

Matt. 3:1-12.

Mark 1:1-8.

Luke 3:1-18.

11 I indeed baptize you  
<sup>3</sup>with water unto re-  
 pentance: but he that  
 cometh after me is  
 mightier than I,  
 whose shoes I am not  
<sup>4</sup>worthy to bear: he  
 shall baptize you  
<sup>3</sup>with the <sup>7</sup>Holy  
 Ghost and *with* fire:  
 12 whose fan is in his  
 hand, and he will  
 thoroughly cleanse  
 his threshing-floor;  
 and he will gather his  
 wheat into the gar-  
 ner, but the chaff he  
 will burn up with un-  
 quenchable fire.

7 And he preached,  
 saying, There com-  
 eth after me he that  
 is mightier than I,  
 the latchet of whose  
 shoes I am not <sup>4</sup>wor-  
 thy to stoop down  
 8 and unloose. I bap-  
 tized you <sup>3</sup>with wa-  
 ter; but he shall bap-  
 tize you <sup>3</sup>with the  
<sup>7</sup>Holy Ghost.

and they said unto  
 him, <sup>9</sup>Master, what  
 13 must we do? And  
 he said unto them,  
 Extort no more than  
 that which is ap-  
 14 pointed you. And  
<sup>10</sup>soldiers also asked  
 him, saying, And  
 we, what must we  
 do? And he said  
 unto them, Do vio-  
 lence to no man, nei-  
 ther <sup>11</sup>exact *anything*  
 wrongfully; and be  
 content with your  
 wages.

15 And as the peo-  
 ple were in expect-  
 ation, and all men  
 reasoned in their  
 hearts concerning  
 John, whether hap-  
 ly he were the  
 16 Christ; John an-  
 swered, saying unto  
 them all, I indeed  
 baptize you with  
 water: but there  
 cometh he that is  
 mightier than I,  
 the latchet of whose  
 shoes I am not <sup>4</sup>wor-  
 thy to unloose: he  
 shall baptize you  
<sup>3</sup>with the <sup>7</sup>Holy  
 Ghost and *with* fire:  
 17 whose fan is in his  
 hand, thoroughly to  
 cleanse his thresh-  
 ing-floor, and to  
 gather the wheat  
 into his garner: but  
 the chaff he will  
 burn up with un-  
 quenchable fire.

18 With many other  
 exhortations there-  
 fore preached he



Luke 3:1-18.

<sup>12</sup>good tidings unto the people.\*

1 Or, *through*. 2 Or, *your repentance*. 3 Or, *in*. 4 Gr. *sufficient*. 5 Some ancient authorities omit *the Son of God*. 6 Some ancient authorities read *in the prophets*. 7 Or, *Holy Spirit*. 8 That is, *collectors or renters of Roman taxes*; and so elsewhere. 9 Or, *Teacher*. 10 Gr. *soldiers in service*. 11 Or, *accuse any one*. 12 Or. *the gospel*.

## PART III.

## BEGINNINGS OF OUR LORD'S MINISTRY.†

In all parts of the Holy Land, lasting several months.

For the most part probably in A.D. 27.

*This early ministry divides itself into the Baptism and Temptation (§ 15, 16), the first calling of disciples (§ 17, 18), the beginning of his work in Galilee (§ 19, 20), the opening ministry in Judea (§ 21, 22), the ministry in Samaria and return to Galilee (§ 23).*

## § 15. JESUS BAPTIZED BY JOHN IN THE JORDAN.

Bethany beyond Jordan.

Matt. 3:13-17.

Mark 1:9-11.

Luke 3:21, 22.

13 Then cometh Jesus from Galilee to the Jordan unto John, to be baptized of him.  
14 But John would have hindered him, saying, I have need to be baptized of thee, and comest thou to me?  
15 But Jesus answering said unto him, Suffer <sup>12</sup>it now: for thus it becometh us to fulfil all righteousness. Then he

9 And it came to pass in those days, that Jesus came from Nazareth of Galilee, and was baptized of John <sup>4</sup>in the Jordan.

\* One may easily put together all that we are told of John the Baptist, in Sections 2, 4, 5, 14, 15, 17, 18, 22, 23(a), 45, 56. Comp. § 109, and Acts 18:25; 19:1-7; and the general introductory statement in John 1:6-15.

† The precise duration of this early ministry cannot be determined. Our Lord's baptism must have been at least two months *before* the Passover (§ 16, 20), and may have been some weeks or months earlier. Then the highly successful ministry in Judea *after* the Passover must have lasted several months, John 3:22 (§ 22); 4:1-3 (§ 23). If the "yet four months" in John 4:35 (§ 23) be understood to be not a common saying as to the usual interval between seedtime and harvest, but a statement that it was *then* just four months before harvest, that would make the Judean ministry extend eight months after the Passover. But this interpretation is upon the whole improbable, and we can only say that the opening ministry lasted several months. The time occupied makes very little difference for our understanding the events and discourses.



Matt. 3:13-17.

16 suffereth him. And Jesus, when he was baptized, went up straightway from the water: and lo, the heavens were opened <sup>2</sup>unto him, and he saw the Spirit of God descending as a dove, and coming  
 17 upon him; and lo, a voice out of the heavens, saying, <sup>3</sup>This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.

Mark 1:9-11.

10 And straightway coming up out of the water, he saw the heavens rent asunder,

and the Spirit as a dove descending  
 11 upon him: and a voice came out of the heavens, Thou art my beloved Son, in thee I am well pleased.

Luke 3:21, 22.

21 Now it came to pass, when all the people were baptized, that Jesus also having been baptized, and praying, the heaven was  
 22 opened, and the Holy Ghost descended in a bodily form, as a dove, upon him, and a voice came out of heaven, Thou art my beloved Son; in thee I am well  
 23 pleased. And Jesus himself, when he began to teach, was about thirty years of age.

1 Or. *me*. 2 Some ancient authorities omit *unto him*. 3 Or, *This is my son; my beloved in whom I am well pleased*. 4 Gr. *into*.

### § 16. JESUS TEMPTED IN THE WILDERNESS.

Matt. 4:1-11.

1 Then was Jesus led up of the Spirit into the wilderness to be tempted of the devil.  
 2 And when he had fasted forty days and forty nights, he afterward hungered.  
 3 And the tempter came and said unto him, If thou art the Son of God, command that these stones become  
 4 <sup>1</sup>bread. But he answered and said, It is written, Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth  
 5 of God. Then the devil taketh him into the holy city; and he set him on the <sup>2</sup>pinnacle of the temple, and saith unto him, If thou art the

Mark 1:12, 13.

12 And straightway the Spirit driveth him forth into the wilderness. And he was in the wilderness forty days tempted of Satan; and he was with the wild beasts;

Luke 4:1-13.

1 And Jesus, full of the Holy Spirit, returned from the Jordan, and was led <sup>3</sup>by the Spirit in the wilderness during  
 2 forty days, being tempted of the devil. And he did eat nothing in those days: and when they were completed, he hungered. And the devil said unto him, If thou art the Son of God, command this stone that it become <sup>4</sup>bread. And Jesus answered unto him, It is written, Man shall not live by  
 5 bread alone. And he led him up, and shewed him all the kingdoms of <sup>5</sup>the world in a moment  
 6 of time. And the devil said unto him,

Matt. 4:1-11.

Mark 1:12, 13.

Luke 4:1-13.

Son of God, cast thyself down: for it is written,

He shall give his angels charge concerning thee:  
And on their hands they shall bear thee up,

Lest haply thou dash thy foot against a stone.

7 Jesus said unto him, Again it is written, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.

8 Again the devil taketh him unto an exceeding high mountain, and sheweth him all the kingdoms of the world, and the glory of

9 them; and he said unto him, All these things will I give thee, if thou wilt fall down and worship

10 me. Then saith Jesus unto him, Get thee hence, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve.

11 Then the devil leaveth him; and behold angels came and ministered unto him.

and the  
angels ministered  
unto him

To thee will I give all this authority, and the glory of them: for it hath been delivered unto me; and to whomsoever I will I give it.

7 If thou therefore wilt worship before me, it shall all be thine.

8 And Jesus answered and said unto him, It is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou

9 serve. And he led him to Jerusalem, and set him on the pinnacle of the temple, and said unto him, If thou art the Son of God, cast thyself down from hence:  
10 for it is written.

He shall give his angels charge concerning thee, to guard thee:

11 And on their hands they shall bear thee up,

Lest haply thou dash thy foot against a stone.

12 And Jesus answering said unto him, It is said, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.

13 And when the devil had completed every temptation, he departed from him for a season.

1. Gr. loaves. 2. Gr. wing. 3. ~~the~~ <sup>the</sup> 4. Or, a loaf. 5. Gr. the inhabited earth.  
6. Or, until.

## § 17. JOHN TESTIFIES TO JESUS.

At Bethany beyond the Jordan.

John 1:19-34.

19 And this is the witness of John, when the Jews sent unto him from  
20 Jerusalem priests and Levites to ask him, Who art thou? And he  
21 confessed, and denied not: and he confessed, I am not the Christ. And  
they asked him, What then? Art thou Elijah? And he saith, I am not.  
22 Art thou the prophet? And he answered, No. They said therefore  
unto him, Who art thou? that we may give an answer to them that  
23 sent us. What sayest thou of thyself? He said, I am the voice of one  
24 crying in the wilderness, Make straight the way of the Lord, as said  
25 Isaiah the prophet. <sup>1</sup>And they had been sent from the Pharisees.

And they asked him, and said unto him, Why then baptizest thou, if  
thou art not the Christ, neither Elijah, neither the prophet? John  
26 answered them, saying, I baptize <sup>2</sup>with water: in the midst of you  
standeth one whom ye know not, *even* he that cometh after me, the  
27 latchet of whose shoe I am not worthy to unloose. These things were  
28 done in <sup>3</sup>Bethany beyond Jordan, where John was baptizing.

29 On the morrow he seeth Jesus coming unto him, and saith, Behold,  
30 the Lamb of God, which <sup>4</sup>taketh away the sin of the world! This is  
he of whom I said, After me cometh a man which is become before me:  
31 for he was <sup>5</sup>before me. And I knew him not; but that he should be  
32 made manifest to Israel, for this cause came I baptizing <sup>2</sup>with water.

And John bare witness, saying, I have beheld the Spirit descending  
33 as a dove out of heaven; and it abode upon him. And I knew him not:  
but he that sent me to baptize <sup>2</sup>with water, he said unto me, Upon  
whomsoever thou shalt see the Spirit descending, and abiding upon  
34 him, the same is he that baptizeth <sup>2</sup>with the Holy Spirit. And I have  
seen, and have borne witness that this is the son of God.\*

1. Or, *And certain had been sent from among the Pharisees.* 2. Or, *in.* 3. Many ancient authorities read *Bethabarrah*, some *Betharabah.* 4. Or, *beareth the sin.* 5. Gr. *first in regard of me.*

## § 18. JESUS MAKES HIS FIRST† DISCIPLES.

At Bethany beyond the Jordan.

John 1:35-51.

35 Again on the morrow John was standing, and two of his disciples;  
36 and he looked upon Jesus as he walked, and saith, Behold, the Lamb  
37 of God! And the two disciples heard him speak, and they followed  
38 Jesus. And Jesus turned, and beheld them following, and saith unto  
them, Whatseek ye? And they said unto him, Rabbi (which is to say,  
39 being interpreted, <sup>1</sup>Master), where abidest thou? He saith unto them,  
Come, and ye shall see. They came therefore and saw where he abode;

\*Put together John the Baptist's testimonies to Jesus, 14, 15, 17, 18, 22, 45. Comp. John 1:6-15. Add the testimony of Jesus to John, § 37, 45, 66, 103. Notice here the *four successive days* in John 1:19, 29, 35, 43, and the third day from this last in John 2:1. Even the *hour* is retained among these vivid recollections in John 1:39.

† Notice here a series of First Things; first testimony of John (§ 17), first disciples (§ 18), first miracle (§ 19), first residence at Capernaum (§ 20), first passover during his ministry (§ 21, a), first extended discourse (§ 21, b).

John 1:35-51.

and they abode with him that day: it was about the tenth hour. One  
 40 of the two that heard John *speaking*, and followed him, was Andrew,  
 41 Simon Peter's brother. He findeth first his own brother Simon, and  
 saith unto him, We have found the Messiah (which is, being inter-  
 42 preted, <sup>2</sup>Christ). He brought him unto Jesus. Jesus looked upon  
 him, and said, thou art Simon the son of <sup>3</sup>John: thou shalt be called  
 Cephas (which is by interpretation, <sup>4</sup>Peter).

43 On the morrow he was minded to go forth into Galilee, and he find-  
 eth Philip: and Jesus saith unto him, Follow me. Now Philip was  
 44 from Bethsaida, of the city of Andrew and Peter. Philip findeth Na-  
 45 thanael, and saith unto him, We have found him, of whom Moses in  
 the law, and the prophets, did write, Jesus of Nazareth, the son of  
 46 Joseph. And Nathanael said unto him, Can any good thing come out  
 47 of Nazareth? Philip saith unto him, Come and see. Jesus saw Na-  
 thanael coming to him, and saith of him, Behold, an Israelite indeed,  
 48 in whom is no guile! Nathanael saith unto him, Whence knowest  
 thou me? Jesus answered and said unto him, Before Philip called  
 thee, when thou wast under the fig tree, I saw thee. Nathanael an-  
 49 swered him, Rabbi, thou art the son of God; thou art King of Israel.\*  
 50 Jesus answered and said unto him, Because I said unto thee, I saw  
 thee underneath the fig tree, believest thou? thou shalt see greater  
 51 things than these. And he saith unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto  
 you, Ye shall see the heaven opened, and the angels of God ascending  
 and descending upon the Son of man.

1. Or, *Teacher*. 2. That is, *Anointed*. 3. Gr. *Joanes*: called in Matt. 16:17. *Jonah*.  
 4. That is, *Rock* or *Stone*.

## § 19. JESUS WORKS HIS FIRST MIRACLE.

At Cana in Galilee.

John 2:1-11.

2 And the third day there was a marriage in Cana of Galilee: and the  
 2 mother of Jesus was there: and Jesus also was bidden, and his disci-  
 3 ples, to the marriage. And when the wine failed, the mother of Jesus  
 4 saith unto him, They have no wine. And Jesus saith unto her, Wo-  
 5 man, what have I to do with thee? mine hour is not yet come. His  
 mother saith unto the servants, Whatsoever he saith unto you, do it.  
 6 Now there were six waterpots of stone set there after the Jews' man-  
 7 ner of purifying, containing two or three firkins apiece. Jesus saith  
 8 unto them, Fill the waterpots with water. And they filled them up  
 to the brim. And he saith unto them, Draw out now, and bear unto  
 9 the ruler of the feast. And they bare it. And when the ruler of the  
 feast tasted the water <sup>2</sup> now become wine, and knew not whence it was  
 (but the servants which had drawn the water knew), the ruler of the  
 10 feast calleth the bridegroom, and saith unto him, Every man setteth  
 on first the good wine; and when *men* have drunk freely, *then* that  
 11 which is worse: thou hast kept the good wine until now. This begin-  
 ning of his signs did Jesus in Cana of Galilee, and manifested his  
 glory; and his disciples believed on him.

1. Or, *steward*. 2. Or, *that it had become*.

\*Notice that these first disciples at once believed that Jesus was the Messiah (ver. 41, 46,  
 49). Compare on § 23 (c) and § 64.



‡ 20. JESUS MAKES A FIRST SOJOURN AT CAPERNAUM, ACCOMPANIED BY HIS KINDRED AND HIS EARLY DISCIPLES.

(Comp. ‡ 26, where Capernaum will become his home.)

John 2:12.

After this he went down to Capernaum, he, and his mother, and *his* brethren, and his disciples: and there they abode not many days.

‡ 21. JESUS ATTENDS THE FIRST PASSOVER DURING HIS MINISTRY.

Jerusalem.\* Probably A.D. 27.

(a) He cleanses the Temple. (Comp. ‡ 106.)

John 2:13-22.

13 And the passover of the Jews was at hand, and Jesus went up to  
14 Jerusalem. And he found in the temple those who sold oxen and  
15 sheep and doves, and the changers of money sitting: and he made a  
scourge of cords, and cast all out of the temple, both the sheep and  
16 the oxen; and he poured out the changers' money, and overthrew their  
tables; and to them that sold the doves he said, Take these things  
17 hence; make not my Father's house a house of merchandise. His dis-  
18 ciples remembered that it was written, The zeal of thine house shall  
eat me up. The Jews therefore answered and said unto him, What  
19 sign shewest thou unto us, seeing thou doest these things? Jesus an-  
swered and said unto them, Destroy this <sup>1</sup>temple, and in three days I  
20 will raise it up. The Jews therefore said, Forty and six years was  
21 this <sup>1</sup>temple in building, and wilt thou raise it up in three days? But  
22 he spake of the <sup>1</sup>temple of his body. When therefore he was raised  
from the dead, his disciples remembered that he spake this; and they  
believed the scripture, and the word which Jesus had said.

1. Or, *sanctuary*.

(b) During the Passover, many believed on Jesus, including the ruler Nicodemus. Conversation with Nicodemus.

John 2:23 to 3:21.

23 Now when he was in Jerusalem at the passover, during the feast,  
24 many believed on his name, beholding his signs which he did. But  
25 Jesus did not trust himself unto them, for that he knew all men, and  
because he needed not that any one should bear witness concerning  
<sup>1</sup>man: for he himself knew what was in man.

3 Now there was a man of the Pharisees, named Nicodemus,† a ruler  
2 of the Jews: the same came unto him by night, and said to him,  
Rabbi, we know that thou art a teacher come from God: for no man  
3 can do these signs that thou doest, except God be with him. Jesus

\*Observe the successive *scenes* of this early ministry—beside the Jordan, on the eastern side (‡ 18), at Cana of Galilee (‡ 19), at Capernaum (‡ 20), at Jerusalem (‡ 21), in Judea (‡ 22), in Samaria (‡ 23).

†Nicodemus appears as an exception to the statement of 2:24, as one whom Jesus did trust, and who amid all difficulties of temperament and station proved not unworthy of the trust (‡ 75, and ‡ 133 d).

John 2:23 to 3:21.

answered and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a  
 4 man be born <sup>2</sup>anew, he cannot see the kingdom of God. Nicodemus  
 saith unto him, How can a man be born when he is old? can he enter  
 5 a second time into his mother's womb, and be born? Jesus answered,  
 Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and  
 6 the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God. That which is  
 born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit.  
 7 Marvel not that I said unto thee, Ye must be born <sup>2</sup>anew. <sup>3</sup>The wind  
 8 bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the voice thereof, but  
 knowest not whence it cometh, and whither it goeth: so is every one  
 9 that is born of the Spirit. Nicodemus answered and said unto him,  
 10 How can these things be? Jesus answered and said unto him, Art  
 thou the teacher of Israel, and understandest not these things?  
 11 Verily, verily, I say unto thee, We speak that we do know, and bear  
 12 witness of that we have seen; and ye receive not our witness. If I  
 told you earthly things, and ye believe not, how shall ye believe, if I  
 13 tell you heavenly things? And no man hath ascended into heaven,  
 but he that descended out of heaven, *even* the Son of man, <sup>4</sup>which is in  
 14 heaven. And as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even  
 so must the Son of man be lifted up: that whosoever <sup>5</sup>believeth may  
 15 in him have eternal life.  
 16 For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son,  
 that whosoever believeth on him should not perish, but have eternal  
 17 life. For God sent not the Son into the world to judge the world; but  
 18 that the world should be saved through him. He that believeth on  
 him is not judged; he that believeth not has been judged already, be-  
 cause he hath not believed on the name of the only begotten Son of  
 19 God. And this is the judgement, that the light is come into the  
 world, and men loved the darkness rather than the light; for their  
 20 works were evil. For every one that <sup>6</sup>doeth ill hateth the light, and  
 21 cometh not to the light, lest his works should be <sup>7</sup>reproved. But he  
 that doeth the truth cometh to the light, that his works may be made  
 manifest, <sup>8</sup>that they have been wrought in God.

1. Or, a man, for . . . the man. 2. Or, from above. 3. Or, The Spirit breatheth. 4. Many  
 ancient authorities omit *which is in heaven*. 5. Or, believeth in him may have. 6. Or,  
*practiseth*. 7. Or, convicted. 8. Or, because.

## § 22. EARLY MINISTRY IN JUDEA, AND JOHN'S RENEWED TESTIMONY.

Judea and Ænon.

John 3:22-36.

22 After these things came Jesus and his disciples into the land of  
 23 Judea; and there he tarried with them, and baptized. And John also  
 was baptizing in Ænon near to Salim, because there <sup>1</sup>was much water  
 24 there; and they came, and were baptized. For John was not yet cast  
 25 into prison. There arose therefore a questioning on the part of John's  
 26 disciples with a Jew about purifying. And they came unto John, and  
 said to him, Rabbi, he that was with thee beyond Jordan, to whom  
 thou hast borne witness, behold, the same baptizeth, and all men  
 27 come to him. John answered and said, A man can receive nothing,  
 28 except it have been given him from heaven. Ye yourselves bear me



John 3:22-36.

witness, that I said, I am not the Christ, but, that I am sent before  
 29 him. He that hath the bride is the bridegroom: but the friend of  
 the bridegroom, which standeth and heareth him, rejoiceth greatly  
 because of the bridegroom's voice: this my joy therefore is fulfilled.  
 30 He must increase, but I must decrease.  
 31 He that cometh from above is above all: he that is of the earth is of  
 the earth, and of the earth he speaketh: <sup>2</sup>he that cometh from heaven  
 32 is above all. What he hath seen and heard, of that he beareth wit-  
 33 ness; and no man receiveth his witness. He that hath received his  
 34 witness hath set his seal to *this*, that God is true. For he whom God  
 hath sent speaketh the words of God: for he giveth not the Spirit by  
 35 measure. The Father loveth the Son, and hath given all things  
 36 into his hand. He that believeth on the Son hath eternal life; but he  
 that <sup>3</sup>obeyeth not the Son shall not see life, but the wrath of God  
 abideth on him.

1. Gr. *were many waters*. 2. Some ancient authorities read *he that cometh from heaven beareth witness of what he hath seen and heard*. 3. Or, *believeth not*.

## § 23. JESUS REMOVES FROM JUDEA THROUGH SAMARIA TO GALILEE.

### (a) Reasons for leaving Judea.

John 4:1-4.

1 When therefore the Lord knew how that the Pharisees had heard  
 2 that Jesus was making and baptizing more disciples than John\*  
 3 (although Jesus himself baptized not, but his disciples), he left  
 4 Judea, and departed again into Galilee. And he must needs pass  
 through Samaria.

Luke 3:19,20.

19 But Herod the tetrarch, being reproved by him for Herodias his  
 brother's wife, and for all the evil things which Herod had done,  
 20 added yet this above all, that he shut up John in prison.†

Matt. 4:12.

Now when he  
 heard that John was  
 delivered up he with-  
 drew into Galilee.

Mark 1:14.

Now after that  
 John was delivered  
 up Jesus came into  
 Galilee.

Luke 4:14.

And Jesus return-  
 ed in the power of  
 the Spirit into Gali-  
 lee.

### (b) Conversation at Jacob's Well, and sojourn at Sychar.

John 4:5-42.

5 So he cometh to a city of Samaria, called Sychar, near to the parcel  
 of ground that Jacob gave to his son Joseph; and Jacob's <sup>1</sup>well was

\*Up to this point, our Lord's ministry has run parallel to that of John. His first disciples were gained in § 18, probably some others at the Passover, § 21, and certainly many in Judea, § 22, until at length he is surpassing John, § 23 (a).

†The place of John's imprisonment was Machaerus, east of the Dead Sea.

John 4:5-42.

6 there. Jesus therefore, being wearied with his journey, sat <sup>2</sup>thus by  
7 the well<sup>1</sup>. It was about the sixth hour. There cometh a woman of  
8 Samaria to draw water: Jesus saith unto her, Give me to drink. For  
9 his disciples were gone away into the city to buy food. The Samaritan  
woman therefore saith unto him, How is it that thou, being a  
Jew, askest drink of me, which am a Samaritan woman? (<sup>2</sup>For Jews  
10 have no dealings with Samaritans.) Jesus answered and said unto  
her, If thou knewest the gift of God, and who it is that saith to thee,  
Give me to drink; thou wouldest have asked of him, and he would  
11 have given thee living water. The woman saith unto him, <sup>4</sup>Sir, thou  
hast nothing to draw with, and the well is deep: from whence then  
12 hast thou that living water? Art thou greater than our father Jacob,  
which gave us the well, and drank thereof himself, and his sons, and  
13 his cattle? Jesus answered and said unto her, Every one that drink-  
14 eth of this water shall thirst again: but whosoever drinketh of the  
water that I shall give him shall never thirst; but the water that I  
shall give him shall become in him a well of water springing up unto  
15 eternal life. The woman saith unto him, <sup>4</sup>Sir, give me this water,  
16 that I thirst not, neither come all the way hither to draw. Jesus  
17 saith unto her, Go, call thy husband, and come hither. The woman  
answered and said unto him, I have no husband. Jesus saith unto  
18 her, Thou saidst well, I have no husband: for thou hast had five hus-  
bands; and he whom thou now hast is not thy husband: this hast thou  
19 said truly. The woman saith unto him, <sup>4</sup>Sir, I perceive that thou  
20 art a prophet. Our fathers worshipped in this mountain; and ye say,  
21 that in Jerusalem is the place where men ought to worship. Jesus  
saith unto her, Woman, believe me, the hour cometh, when neither  
22 in this mountain, nor in Jerusalem, shall ye worship the Father. Ye  
worship that which ye know not; we worship that which we know: for  
23 salvation is from the Jews. But the hour cometh, and now is, when  
the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and truth:  
24 <sup>6</sup>for such doth the Father seek to be his worshippers. <sup>6</sup>God is a  
25 Spirit: and they that worship him must worship in spirit and  
truth. The woman saith unto him, I know that Messiah cometh  
(which is called Christ): when he is come, he will declare unto us all  
26 things. Jesus saith unto her, I that speak unto thee am *he*.  
27 And upon this came his disciples; and they marvelled that he was  
speaking with a woman; yet no man said, What seekest thou? or, Why  
28 speakest thou with her? So the woman left her waterpot, and went  
29 away into the city, and saith to the men, Come, see a man, which told  
30 me all things that *ever* I did: can this be the Christ? They went out  
31 of the city, and were coming to him. In the mean while the disciples  
32 prayed him, saying, Rabbi, eat. But he said to them, I have meat to  
33 eat that ye know not. The disciples therefore said one to another,  
34 Hath any man brought him *ought* to eat? Jesus saith unto them, My  
35 meat is to do the will of him that sent me, and to accomplish his work.  
Say not ye, There are yet four months, and *then* cometh the harvest?  
behold, I say unto you, Lift up your eyes, and look on the fields, that  
36 they are <sup>7</sup>white already unto harvest. He that reapeth receiveth  
wages, and gathereth fruit unto life eternal; that he that soweth and  
37 he that reapeth may rejoice together. For herein is the saying true,  
38 One soweth and another reapeth. I sent you to reap that whereon

John 4:5-42.

ye have not laboured: others have laboured, and ye are entered into their labour.

39 And from that city many of the Samaritans believed on him \*because of the word of the woman, who testified, He told me all things that  
40 ever I did. So when the Samaritans came unto him, they besought  
41 him to abide with them: and he abode there two days. And many  
42 more believed because of his word; and they said to the woman, Now we believe, not because of thy speaking: for we have heard for ourselves, and know that this is indeed the Saviour of the world.†

1. Gr. *spring*: and so in ver. 14; but not in ver. 11, 12. 2. Or, *as he was*. 3. Some ancient authorities omit *For Jews have no dealings with Samaritans*. 4. Or, *Lord*. 5. Or, *for such the Father also seeketh*. 6. Or, *God is spirit*. 7. Or, *white unto harvest*. *Already he that reapeth, &c*,

(c) Arrival in Galilee.

John 4:43-45.

43 And after the two days he went forth from thence into Galilee.  
44 For Jesus himself testified, that a prophet hath no honour in his own  
45 country. So when he came into Galilee, the Galileans received him, having seen all the things that he did in Jerusalem at the feast: for they also went unto the feast.

\*Notice that John also had recently been preaching to Samaritans (§22), and compare hereafter Philip's work in the city of Samaria (Acts 8:5 ff.)

† In this early ministry Jesus allowed himself to be regarded as the Messiah by his first disciples, §18, and personally declared that he was the Messiah to the woman at the well, §23 b (John 4:26), which many other Samaritans also personally believed (John 4:39, 42). He never declared this to the Jewish rulers at Jerusalem till the very end, §126, doubtless because such an avowal would lead them to kill him, and so must not be made till his work in teaching the people and training his disciples should be completed. Compare what he says in §64.

## PART IV.

## OUR LORD'S GREAT MINISTRY IN GALILEE.

*Probably more than a year,\* in A.D. 27 and 28.*

*The matters presented by this great ministry may be grouped as follows: (1) He revisits Cana and Nazareth (§25-26), then settles at Capernaum, and recalls four disciples (§27-29). (2) He makes a journey about Galilee, teaching and healing on a large scale (§30), afterwards performing various miracles at Capernaum, and calling Matthew (§31-36). (3) While attending a feast at Jerusalem he heals on the Sabbath, and afterwards does the same in Galilee, in both cases awakening a desire to kill him (§37-39). (4) Great crowds now attend his ministry in Galilee, and he chooses the twelve disciples, giving to them and the multitude the Sermon on the Mount (§40-42). (5) Various miracles, especially the one at Nain, spread his fame over all the land, and then comes a message of inquiry from John the Forerunner, which occasions special discourses (§43-46). (6) Now we find him again journeying about Galilee (§47), and presently meet with the blasphemous accusation of league with Satan, and the opposition of his mother and brothers (§48-50). (7) Then comes the first great group of Parables (§51), immediately after which he crosses the Lake, heals the Gadarene demoniacs, and returning to Galilee revisits Nazareth (§52-54). (8) Finally, he makes a third journey about Galilee, with the Twelve sent in advance (§55), and presently the miracles of Jesus and his disciples excite the jealous fears of Herod Antipas (§56).*

## § 24. GENERAL ACCOUNT OF HIS TEACHING IN GALILEE.

Matt. 4:17.

From that time began Jesus to preach, and to say, Repent ye; for the kingdom of heaven is at hand.

Mark 1:14,15.

14 [Now after that John was delivered up, Jesus came into Galilee,] preaching the gospel of God,

Luke 4:14,15.

14 [And Jesus returned in the power of the Spirit into Galilee:] and a fame went out concerning him

\*We cannot confidently determine the length of the ministry in Galilee. We are not sure whether it began in summer or late autumn (see footnote on § 15). If the feast of John 5:1 was a Passover (see note at the end of the book on § 37), the Galilean ministry lasted at least 18 months, for it ended when another Passover was near, John 6:4 (§ 57). Otherwise we should not certainly know that it lasted more than some 6 or 8 months. About the two subsequent periods of our Lord's ministry we shall find no room to question that each lasted 6 months; but here we have to admit much uncertainty as to the time. After all, a determination of the time employed would be a matter of very little importance to our study of this period.

Throughout this great ministry in Galilee, and the periods that will follow after, the reader ought to trace carefully the progress of the history along several lines: (1) the Saviour's progressive self-manifestation; (2) the gradual training of the Twelve who are to carry on his teaching and work after his death; (3) the deepening and spreading hostility of the Jewish influential classes and official rulers. By constantly observing these parallel lines of progress, it will be seen that the history and teachings of our Lord exhibit a vital growth, moving on to an end by him foreseen (Luke 12:50), when the hostility of the rulers will culminate as he before the Sanhedrin avows himself to be the Messiah, and the Twelve will be almost prepared to succeed him.



Mark 1:14,15.

Luke 4:14,15.

15 and saying, The  
time is fulfilled, and  
the kingdom of God  
is at hand: repent  
ye, and believe in  
the gospel.

through all the re-  
gion round about.  
15 And he taught in  
their synagogues,  
being glorified of all.

*In § 25-29 he revisits Cana and Nazareth (comp. § 19, 20), then settles at Capernaum, and recalls four disciples.*

§ 25. HE HEALS AT CANA THE SON OF A COURTIER OF CAPERNAUM.

John 4:46-54.

46 He came therefore again unto Cana of Galilee, where he made the  
47 water wine. And there was a certain 'nobleman, whose son was sick  
at Capernaum. When he heard that Jesus was come out of Judea  
into Galilee, he went unto him, and besought *him* that he would come  
48 down, and heal his son; for he was at the point of death. Jesus there-  
49 fore said unto him, Except ye see signs and wonders, ye will in no  
50 wise believe. The 'nobleman saith unto him. 'Sir, come down ere  
my child die. Jesus saith unto him, Go thy way; thy son liveth. The  
man believed the word that Jesus spake unto him, and he went his  
51 way. And as he was now going down, his 'servants met him, saying,  
52 that his son lived. So he inquired of them the hour when he began  
to amend. They said therefore unto him, Yesterday at the seventh  
53 hour the fever left him. So the father knew that *it was* at that hour  
in which Jesus said unto him, Thy son liveth: and himself believed,  
54 and his whole house. This is again the second sign that Jesus did,  
having come out of Judea into Galilee.

1. Or, *king's officer*. 2. Or, *Lord*. 3. Gr. *bondservants*.

§ 26. REJECTED AT NAZARETH, HE MAKES CAPERNAUM HIS RESIDENCE.

(Comp. § 54.)

Luke 4:16-31.

16 And he came to Nazareth, where he had been brought up: and he  
entered, as his custom was, into the synagogue on the sabbath day,  
17 and stood up to read. And there was delivered unto him 'the book of  
the prophet Isaiah. And he opened the 'book, and found the place  
where it was written,  
18 The Spirit of the Lord is upon me,  
'Because he anointed me to preach 'good tidings to the poor:  
He hath sent me to proclaim release to the captives,  
And recovering of sight to the blind,  
To set at liberty them that are bruised,  
19 To proclaim the acceptable year of the Lord.  
20 And he closed the 'book, and gave it back to the attendant, and sat  
down: and the eyes of all in the synagogue were fastened on him.

Luke 4:16-31.

21 And he began to say unto them, To-day hath this scripture been fulfilled in your ears. And all bare him witness, and wondered at the words of grace which proceeded out of his mouth: and they said, Is 23 not this Joseph's son? And he said unto them, Doubtless ye will say unto me this parable, Physician, heal thyself: whatsoever we have heard done at Capernaum, do also here in thine own country. And 24 he said, Verily I say unto you, No prophet is acceptable in his own 25 country. But of a truth I say unto you, There were many widows in Israel in the days of Elijah, when the heaven was shut up three years and six months, when there came a great famine over all the land; 26 and unto none of them was Elijah sent, but only to <sup>e</sup>Zarephath, in the land of Sidon, unto a woman that was a widow. And there were many 27 lepers in Israel in the time of Elisha the prophet; and none of them was cleansed, but only Naaman the Syrian. And they were all filled 28 with wrath in the synagogue, as they heard these things; and they 29 rose up, and cast him forth out of the city, and led him unto the brow of the hill whereon their city was built, that they might throw him 30 down headlong. But he passing through the midst of them went his 31 way. And he came down to Capernaum, a city of Galilee.

Matt. 4:13-16.

13 And leaving Nazareth\* he came and dwelt in Capernaum, which is 14 by the sea, in the borders of Zebulun and Naphtali; that it might be fulfilled which was spoken <sup>e</sup>by Isaiah the prophet, saying,  
15 The land of Zebulun and the land of Naphtali,  
    <sup>f</sup>Toward the sea, beyond Jordan,  
    Galilee of the <sup>g</sup>Gentiles,  
16 The people which sat in darkness  
    Saw a great light,  
    And to them which sat in the region and shadow of death,  
    To them did light spring up.

1. Or, a roll. 2. Or, roll. 3. Or, wherefore. 4. Or, the gospel. 5. Gr. Sarepta.  
6. Or, through. 7. Gr. the way of the sea. 8. Nations, and so elsewhere.

§ 27. HE CALLS FOUR FISHERMEN TO FOLLOW HIM.

By the Sea of Galilee, near Capernaum.

Matt. 4:18-22.

Mark 1:16-20.

Luke 5:1-11.

<p>18 And walking by the sea of Galilee, he saw two brethren, Simon who is called Peter, and Andrew his brother, casting a net into the sea;</p>	<p>16 And passing along by the sea of Galilee, he saw Simon and Andrew the brother of Simon casting a net in the sea: for they were fishers.</p>	<p>1 Now it came to pass, while the multitude pressed upon him, and heard the word of God, that he was standing by the lake of Gennesaret;</p>
--	--	--

\* Nazareth was never the Saviour's residence during his public ministry. After the wedding at Cana he lived a short time at Capernaum (§ 20), and henceforth that city will be his abode, till he leaves Galilee 6 months before the crucifixion—most of the time, however, being actually spent in several journeys throughout Galilee, together with a trip to Jerusalem (§ 37), and retirement to districts around Galilee (§ 57-67).



Matt. 4:18-22.

for they were fishers.  
 19 And he saith unto them, Come ye after me, and I will make you fishers of men.  
 20 And they straightway left the nets, and  
 21 followed him. And going on from thence he saw other two brethren, <sup>1</sup>James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother, in the boat with Zebedee their father, mending their nets; and he called them.  
 22 And they straightway left the boat and their father, and followed him.\*

Mark 1:16-20.

17 And Jesus said unto them, Come ye after me, and I will make you to become fishers of men. And straightway they left the nets, and  
 19 followed him. And going on a little further, he saw James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother, who were also in the boat mending  
 20 the nets. And straightway he called them: and they left their father Zebedee in the boat with the hired servants, and went after him.

Luke 5:1-11.

2 and he saw two boats standing by the lake: but the fishermen had gone out of them, and were washing their nets.  
 3 And he entered into one of the boats, which was Simon's, and asked him to put out a little from the land. And he sat down and taught the multitudes out of  
 4 the boat. And when he had left speaking, he said unto Simon, Put out into the deep, and let down your nets for a  
 5 draught. And Simon answered and said, Master, we toiled all night, and  
 6 took nothing: but at thy word I will let down the nets. And when they had this done, they inclosed a great multitude of fishes; and  
 7 their nets were breaking; and they beckoned unto their partners in the other boat, that they should come and help them. And they  
 8 came, and filled both the boats, so that they began to sink. But Simon Peter, when he saw it, fell down at Jesus' knees, saying, Depart  
 9 from me; for I am a sinful man, O Lord. For he was amazed, and all that were with him, at the draught of the fishes which they  
 10 had taken; and so were also James and John, sons of Zebedee, which were partners with Simon. And Jesus said unto Simon, Fear  
 11 not; from henceforth thou shalt <sup>2</sup>catch men. And when they had brought their boats to land, they left all, and followed him.

1. Or, *Jacob*: and so elsewhere. 2. Gr. *take alive*.

## § 28. HE HEALS A DEMONIAK IN THE SYNAGOGUE AT CAPERNAUM.

Mark 1:21-28.

21 And they go into Capernaum; and straightway on the sabbath day he entered into the syna-  
 22 gogue and taught. And they were astonished at his teaching:

Luke 4:31-37.

31 [And he came down to Capernaum, a city of Galilee.] And he was teaching them on the sab-  
 32 bath day: and they were astonished at his teaching; for his

\*Three of these became his disciples at the beginning (§ 18), and James probably soon after, and they were doubtless among the "disciples" who attended his early ministry (§ 19, 20, 21, 22, 23). After the return to Galilee they may have seen no occasion to follow him still, for we find no mention of them in § 25 and § 26, and here he calls them to leave everything else, and follow him continually.

Mark 1:21-28.

for he taught them as having authority, and not as the scribes.  
 23 And straightway there was in their synagogue a man with an unclean spirit, and he cried out,  
 24 saying, What have we to do with thee, thou Jesus of Nazareth? art thou come to destroy us? I know thee who thou art, the  
 25 Holy One of God. And Jesus rebuked <sup>1</sup>him, saying, hold thy peace, and come out of him.  
 26 And the unclean spirit, <sup>2</sup>tearing him and crying with a loud voice,  
 27 came out of him. And they were all amazed, insomuch that they questioned among themselves, saying, What is this? a new teaching! with authority he commandeth even the unclean spirits, and  
 28 they obey him. And the report of him went out straightway everywhere into all the region of Galilee round about.

1. Or, it. 2. Or, convulsing. 3. Gr. demon. 4. Or, let alone. 5. Or, this word, that with authority—come out?

Luke 4:31-37.

33 word was with authority. And in the synagogue there was a man, which had a spirit of an unclean <sup>3</sup>devil; and he cried out  
 34 with a loud voice, 'Ah! what have we to do with thee, thou Jesus of Nazareth? art thou come to destroy us? I know thee who thou  
 35 art, the Holy One of God. And Jesus rebuked him, saying, Hold thy peace, and come out of him. And when the <sup>3</sup>devil had thrown him down in the midst, he came out of him, having done him no  
 36 hurt. And amazement came upon all, and they spake together, one with another, saying, What is <sup>5</sup>this word? for with authority and power he commandeth the unclean spirits, and they come  
 37 out. And there went forth a rumour concerning him into every place of the region round about.

## § 29. HE HEALS PETER'S MOTHER-IN-LAW AND MANY OTHERS.

Capernaum.

Matt. 8:14-17.

Mark 1:29-34.

Luke 4:38-41.

29 And straightway <sup>3</sup>when they were come out of the synagogue, they came into the house of Simon and Andrew, with James and  
 14 And when Jesus was come into Peter's house, he saw his wife's mother lying sick of a fever.  
 15 And he touched her hand, and the fever left her; and she arose, and ministered unto him.  
 16 And when even was

30 John. Now Simon's wife's mother lay sick of a fever; and straightway they tell him of her: and he came and took her by the hand, and raised her up; and the fever left her, and she ministered unto them.  
 38 And he rose up from the synagogue and entered into the house of Simon. And Simon's wife's mother was holden with a great fever; and they besought him for  
 39 her. And he stood over her, and rebuked the fever; and it left her: and immediately she rose up and ministered unto them.  
 40 And when the sun

Matt. 8:14-17.

come, they brought  
unto him many 'pos-  
sessed with devils:  
and he cast out the  
spirits with a word,  
and healed all that  
17 were sick: that it  
might be fulfilled  
which was spoken  
by Isaiah the proph-  
et, saying, Himself  
took our infirmities,  
and bare our dis-  
eases.

Mark 1:29-34.

the sun did set,  
they brought unto  
him all that were  
sick, and them  
that were 'possessed  
33 with devils. And  
all the city was gath-  
ered together at the  
34 door. And he heal-  
ed many that were  
sick with divers dis-  
eases, and cast out  
many 'devils; and he  
suffered not the 'dev-  
ils to speak, because  
they knew him<sup>5</sup>.

Luke 4:38-41.

was setting, all they  
that had any sick  
with divers diseases  
brought them unto  
him; and he laid his  
hands on every one  
of them, and healed  
41 them. And 'devils  
also came out from  
many, crying out,  
and saying, Thou art  
the Son of God. And  
rebuking them, he  
suffered them not to  
speak, because they  
knew that he was  
the Christ.

1. Or, *demoniacs*. 2. Or, *through*. 3. Some ancient authorities read *when he was come out of the synagogue, he came, &c.* 4. Gr. *demons*. 5. Many ancient authorities add *to be Christ*. See Luke 4:41.

*In § 30-36 he makes a great journey about Galilee, teaching and healing, and afterwards performs several miracles at Capernaum, and calls Matthew.*

### § 30. HE JOURNEYS ABOUT GALILEE, PREACHING AND HEALING.

Matt. 4:23-25.

23 And he went out, and  
began to teach in  
their synagogues,  
and they glorified  
him. And he  
went about in all  
the cities and  
towns, teaching  
and healing  
them. And he  
said unto them,  
I am sending you  
forth, two by two,  
into every city and  
town, that ye may  
preach the Gospel,  
and heal the sick  
there. And when  
ye shall have  
preached in every  
city and town, when  
ye depart, shake  
the dust off your  
feet, that it may  
be a testimony  
against you. And  
he sent them  
forth. And they  
went, and preached  
everywhere, and  
healed every-  
where. And when  
Jesus was come  
back, he saw  
them, and  
glorified them,  
because they had  
obeyed his com-  
mandments, that  
he had sent them  
to do.

Mark 1:35-39.

35 And in the morn-  
ing, a great while  
before day, he rose  
up and went out,  
and departed into a  
desert place, and  
36 there prayed. And  
Simon and they that  
were with him fol-  
37 lowed after him; and  
they found him, and  
say unto him, All  
are seeking thee.  
38 And he saith unto  
them, Let us go else-  
where into the next  
towns, that I may  
preach there also;  
for to this end came  
I forth. And he went

Luke 4:42-44.

42 And when it was  
day, he came out and  
went into a desert  
place: and the mul-  
titudes sought after  
him, and came unto  
him, and would have  
stayed him, that he  
should not go from  
43 them. But he said  
unto them, I must  
preach the 'good ti-  
dings of the king-  
dom of God to the  
other cities also; for  
therefore was I sent.

Matt. 4:23-25.

about in all Galilee,\* teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the <sup>2</sup>gospel of the kingdom, and healing all manner of disease and all manner of sickness

24 among the people. And the report of him went forth into all Syria: and they brought unto him all that were sick, holden with divers diseases and torments, <sup>3</sup>possessed with devils, and epileptic, and 25 palsied; and he healed them. And there followed him great multitudes from Galilee and Decapolis and Jerusalem and Judea and from beyond Jordan.

1. Some ancient authorities read *he*. 2. Or, *good tidings*: and so elsewhere. 3. Or, *demoniacs*. 4. Gr. *demons*. 5. Or, *Gospel*. 6. Very many ancient authorities read *Judea*

Mark 1:35-39.

into their synagogues throughout all Galilee, preaching and casting out <sup>4</sup>devils.

Luke 4:42-44.

44 And he was preaching in the synagogues of <sup>6</sup>Galilee.

§ 31. A LEPER HEALED, AND MUCH POPULAR EXCITEMENT.

Matt. 8:2-4.

2 And behold, there came to him a leper and worshipped him, saying, Lord, if thou wilt thou canst make me clean,

3 And he stretched forth his hand, and touched him, saying, I will; be thou made clean. And straightway his leprosy was cleansed.

4 And Jesus saith unto him, See thou tell no man; but go thy way, shew thyself to the priest, and offer the gift that Moses com-

Mark 1:40-45.

40 And there cometh to him a leper, beseeching him, and kneeling down to him, and saying unto him, If thou wilt, thou canst make me

41 clean. And being moved with compassion, he stretched forth his hand, and touched him, and saith unto him, I will; be thou made 42 clean. And straightway the leprosy departed from him, and he was made

43 clean. And he <sup>2</sup>strictly charged him, and straightway sent 44 him out, and saith unto him, See thou say nothing to any man: but go thy way,

Luke 5:12-16.

12 And it came to pass, while he was in one of the cities, behold, a man full of leprosy: and when he saw Jesus, he fell on his face, and besought him, saying, Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make me 13 clean. And he stretched forth his hand, and touched him, saying, I will; be thou made clean. And straightway the leprosy departed from him.

14 And he charged him to tell no man: but go thy way, and shew thyself to the priest, and offer for thy

\*This journey about all Galilee included a *great mass* of teaching and healing (dwell on Matt. 4:23-25), of which only a few specimens are recorded (§ 31-36), and these apparently occurred at Capernaum, his headquarters. The journey in § 47 (given by Luke only) is probably distinct from this of § 30, and if so it would be a *second*, while that of § 55, which is quite certainly distinct, would then be a *third* journey about Galilee. The reader ought to expand his imagination and take in these extended labors.



Matt. 8:2-4.  
manded, for a testimony unto them.

Mark 1:40-45.  
shew thyself to the priest, and offer for thy cleansing the things which Moses commanded, for a testimony unto them.  
45 But he went out, and began to publish it much, and to spread abroad the <sup>3</sup>matter, insomuch that <sup>4</sup>Jesus could no more openly enter into <sup>6</sup>a city, but was without in desert places: and they came to him from every quarter.

Luke 5:12-16.  
cleansing, according as Moses commanded, for a testimony unto them.

15 But so much the more went abroad the report concerning him: and great multitudes came together to hear, and to be healed of their  
16 infirmities. But he withdrew himself in the deserts, and prayed.

1. Some ancient authorities omit *and kneeling down to him*. 2. Or, *sternly*. 3. Gr. *word*. 4. Gr. *he*. 5. Or, *the city*.

## § 32. THROGGED IN CAPERNAUM, HE HEALS A PARALYTIC LOWERED THROUGH THE ROOF.

Matt. 9:2-8.

Mark 2:1-12.  
4 And when he entered again into Capernaum after some days, it was noised that he was  
2 <sup>4</sup>in the house. And many were gathered together, so that there was no longer room *for them*, no, not even about the door: and he spake the word unto them.  
3 And they come bringing unto him a man sick of the palsy, borne of four.  
4 And when they could not <sup>6</sup>come nigh unto him for the crowd, they uncovered the roof where he was: and when they had broken it up, they let down the bed whereon the

2 And behold they brought to him a man sick of the palsy, lying on a bed;

Luke 5:17-26.

17 And it came to pass on one of those days, that he was teaching; and there were Pharisees and doctors of the law sitting by, which were come out of every village of Galilee and Judea and Jerusalem: and the power of the Lord was with him <sup>6</sup>to  
18 heal. And behold, men bring on a bed a man that was palsied: and they sought to bring him in, and to lay him before  
19 him. And not finding by what *way* they might bring him in because of the multitude, they went up to the housetop, and let him down through



Matt. 9:2-8.

and Jesus seeing their faith said unto the sick of the palsy, 'Son, be of good cheer; thy sins are forgiven. And behold, certain of the scribes said within themselves, This man blasphemeth.

4 And Jesus <sup>2</sup>knowing their thoughts said,

Wherefore think ye evil in your hearts?  
5 For whether is easier, to say, Thy sins are forgiven; or to say, Arise and walk?

6 But that ye may know that the Son of man hath <sup>3</sup>power on earth to forgive sins (then saith he to the sick of the palsy), Arise, and take up thy bed, and go unto thy house. And he arose, and departed to his house.

8 But when the multitudes saw it, they were afraid, and glorified God, which had giv-

Mark 2:1-12.

sick of the palsy lay.

5 And Jesus seeing their faith saith unto the sick of the

6 palsy, 'Son, thy sins are forgiven. But there were certain of the scribes sitting there, and reasoning in their hearts, Why doth this man thus speak? he blasphemeth: who can forgive sins but one,

8 even God? And straightway Jesus, perceiving in his spirit that they so reasoned within themselves, saith unto them, Why reason ye these things in your hearts? Whether is easier, to say to the sick of the palsy, Thy sins are forgiven; or to say, Arise, and take up thy bed, and walk?

10 But that ye may know that the Son of man hath <sup>3</sup>power on earth to forgive sins (he saith to the sick of the palsy), I say unto thee, Arise, take up thy bed, and go unto thy house.

12 And he arose, and straightway took up the bed, and went forth before them all; insomuch that they were all amazed, and glorified God, saying, We never saw it on this fashion.

Luke 5:17-26.

the tiles with his couch into the midst before Jesus. And seeing their faith, he said, Man, thy sins are forgiven thee. 21 And the scribes and the Pharisees began to reason, saying, Who is this that speaketh blasphemies? Who can forgive sins but God alone?

22 But Jesus perceiving their reasonings, answered and said unto them, 'What reason ye in your hearts?

23 Whether is easier to say, Thy sins are forgiven thee; or to say, Arise and walk?

24 But that ye may know that the Son of man hath <sup>3</sup>power on earth to forgive sins (he said unto him that was palsied), I say unto thee, Arise, and take up thy couch, and go unto thy house. And immediately he rose up before them, and took up that whereon he lay, and departed to his house, 26 glorifying God. And amazement took hold on all, and they glorified God; and they

Matt. 9:2-8.

en such <sup>a</sup>power unto  
men.

Luke 5:17-26.

were filled with fear,  
saying, We have  
seen strange things  
to-day.

1. Gr. *Child*. 2. Many ancient authorities read *seeing*. 3. Or, *authority*. 4. Or, *at home*. 5. Many ancient authorities read *bring him unto him*. 6. Gr. *that he should heal*. Many ancient authorities read *that he should heal them*. 7. Or, *Why*.

### § 33. THE CALL OF MATTHEW, WHO MAKES HIM A GREAT ENTERTAINMENT.

Capernaum.

Matt. 9:9-13.

9 And as Jesus passed by from thence, he saw a man, called Matthew, sitting at the place of toll: and he saith unto him, Follow me. And he arose, and followed him.

10 And it came to pass, as he <sup>1</sup>sat at meat in the house, behold, many publicans and sinners came and sat down with Jesus and his disciples.

11 And when the Pharisees saw it, they said unto his disciples, Why eateth your <sup>2</sup>Master with the publicans and sinners?

12 But when he heard it, he said, They that are <sup>a</sup>whole have no need of a physician, but they that

Mark 2:13-17.

13 And he went forth again by the sea side; and all the multitude resorted unto him, and he taught them.

14 And as he passed by, he saw Levi the son of Alphæus sitting at the place of toll, and he saith unto him, Follow me.

And he arose and followed him. And it came to pass, that he was sitting at meat in his house, and many <sup>4</sup>publicans and sinners sat down with Jesus and his disciples: for there were many, and they

16 followed him. And the scribes <sup>5</sup>of the Pharisees, when they saw that he was eating with the sinners and publicans, said unto his disciples, <sup>6</sup>He eateth <sup>7</sup>and drinketh with publicans and sinners.

17 And when Jesus heard it, he saith unto them, They that are <sup>a</sup>whole have no need of a physi-

Luke 5:27-32.

27 And after these things he went forth, and beheld a publican, named Levi, sitting at the place of toll, and said unto him, Follow me.

28 And he forsook all, and rose up and followed him.

29 And Levi made him a great feast in his house: and there was a great multitude of publicans and of others that were sitting at meat with them.

30 And <sup>a</sup>the Pharisees and their scribes murmured against his disciples, saying, Why do ye eat and drink with the publicans and sinners?

31 And Jesus answering said unto them, They that are <sup>a</sup>whole have no need of a physician; but

Matt. 9:9-13.

13 are sick. But go ye and learn what *this* meaneth, I desire mercy, and not sacrifice: for I came not to call the righteous, but sinners.

Mark 2:13-17.

cian, but they that are sick: I came not to call the righteous, but sinners.

Luke 5:27-32.

they that are sick.

32 I am not come to call the righteous but sinners to repentance.

1. Gr. *reclined*: and so always. 2. Or, *Teacher*. 3. Gr. *strong*. 4. That is, *collectors or renters of Roman taxes*: and so elsewhere. 5. Some ancient authorities read *and the Pharisees*. 6. Or, *how is it that he eateth... sinners?* 7. Some ancient authorities omit *and drinketh*. 8. Or, *the Pharisees and the scribes among them*.

## § 34. JESUS DISCOURSES ON FASTING.

Matt. 9:14-17.

14 Then come to him the disciples of John, saying, Why do we and the Pharisees fast oft, but thy disciples fast not. And Jesus said unto them, Can the sons of the bride-chamber mourn, as long as the bride-groom is with them? But the days will come, when the bride-groom shall be taken away from them, and then will they fast.

Mark 2:18-22.

18 And John's disciples and the Pharisees were fasting: and they come and say unto him, Why do John's disciples and the disciples of the Pharisees fast, but thy disciples fast not? And Jesus said unto them, Can the sons of the bride-chamber fast, while the bride-groom is with them? as long as they have the bride-groom with them they cannot fast. But the days will come, when the bride-groom shall be taken away from them, and then they will fast in that day.

Luke 5:33-39.

33 And they said unto him, The disciples of John fast often, and make supplications; likewise also the *disciples* of the Pharisees; but thine eat and drink. And Jesus said unto them, Can ye make the sons of the bride-chamber fast while the bride-groom is with them?

35 But the days will come; and when the bride-groom shall be taken away from them, then will they fast in those days.

36 And he spake also a parable unto them; No man rendeth a piece from a new garment and putteth it upon an old garment; else he will rend the new, and also the piece from the new will not agree with the

And no

16 man putteth a piece of undressed cloth upon an old garment; for that which should fill it up taketh from the garment, and a worse rent is made. Neith-

21 No man seweth a piece of undressed cloth on an old garment; else that which should fill it up taketh from it, the new from the old, and a worse rent is made.

Matt. 9:14-17.

er do *men* put new wine into old <sup>2</sup>wine-skins: else the skins burst and the wine is spilled, and the skins perish; but they put new wine into fresh wine-skins, and both are preserved.

Mark 2:18-22.

22 And no man putteth new wine into old <sup>2</sup>wine-skins: else the wine will burst the skins, and the wine perisheth, and the skins: but *they put* new wine into fresh wine-skins.

Luke 5:33-39.

37 old. And no man putteth new wine into old <sup>2</sup>wine-skins; else the new wine will burst the skins, and itself will be spilled, and the skins will perish.  
38 But new wine must be put into fresh  
39 wine-skins. And no man having drunk old *wine* desireth new: for he saith, The old is <sup>3</sup>good.

1. Some ancient authorities omit *oft*. 2. That is, *skins used as bottles*. 3. Many ancient authorities read *better*.

### § 35. HE RAISES JAIRUS' DAUGHTER, AND HEALS A WOMAN WHO ONLY TOUCHED HIS GARMENT.

Matt. 9:18-26.

18 While he spake these things unto them\*, behold, there came <sup>1</sup>a ruler, and worshipped him, saying, My daughter is even now dead: but come and lay thy hand upon her, and she shall live.  
19 And Jesus arose, and followed him, and *so did* his disciples.

Mark 5:22-43.

22 And there cometh one of the rulers of the synagogue, Jairus by name; and seeing him, he falleth at his feet, and beseecheth him much, saying, My little daughter is at the point of death:  
*I pray thee*, that thou come and lay thy hands on her, that she may be <sup>2</sup>made  
24 whole, and live. And he went with him; and a great multitude followed him, and they thronged him.

Luke 8:41-56.

41 And behold there came a man named Jairus, and he was a ruler of the synagogue: and he fell down at Jesus' feet, and besought him to come into his  
42 house; for he had an only daughter, about twelve years of age, and she lay a dying. But as he went the multitudes thronged him.

20 And behold, a woman, who had an issue of blood twelve years, came behind

25 And a woman, which had an issue of blood twelve years, and had suffered

43 And a woman having an issue of blood twelve years, which <sup>3</sup>had spent all her

\*The express language of Matt. 9:18 compels us to place the incidents of § 35 directly after Matthew's entertainment. But Mark and Luke, who are usually chronological (while Matthew in this portion is not), give these incidents a good deal farther on. The question of position in the Harmony cannot be settled, and it makes no difference as to understanding the contents of the section.

Matt. 9:18-26.

him, and touched  
the border of his  
21 garment: for she said  
within herself, If I  
do but touch his  
garment, I shall be  
made whole.

Mark 5:22-43.

many things of many  
physicians, and had  
spent all that she  
had, and was nothing  
bettered, but rather  
27 grew worse, having  
heard the things  
concerning Jesus,  
came in the crowd  
behind, and touched  
28 his garment. For  
she said, If I touch  
but his garments, I  
shall be made whole.  
29 And straightway the  
fountain of her  
blood was dried up;  
and she felt in her  
body that she was  
healed of her plague.  
30 And straightway Je-  
sus, perceiving in  
himself that the  
power proceeding  
from him had gone  
forth, turned him  
about in the crowd,  
and said, Who  
touched my gar-  
31 ments? And his dis-  
ciples said unto him,  
Thou seest the mul-  
titude thronging  
thee, and sayest  
thou, Who touched  
32 me? And he looked  
round about to see  
her that had done  
33 this thing. But the  
woman fearing and  
trembling, knowing  
what had been done  
to her, came and fell  
down before him,  
and told him all the  
34 truth. And he said  
unto her, Daughter,  
thy faith hath made  
thee whole; go in  
peace, and be whole  
of thy plague.

Luke 8:41-56.

living upon physi-  
cians, and could not  
be healed of any,  
44 came behind him,  
and touched the  
border of his gar-  
ment: and immedi-  
ately the issue of  
her blood stanch'd.  
45 And Jesus said, Who  
is it that touched  
me? And when all  
denied, Peter said,  
and they that were  
with him, Master,  
the multitudes press  
thee and crush thee.  
46 But Jesus said, Some  
one did touch me;  
for I perceived that  
power had gone forth  
47 from me. And when  
the woman saw  
that she was not  
hid, she came trem-  
bling, and falling  
down before him  
declared in the pres-  
ence of all the peo-  
ple for what cause  
she touched him,  
and how she was  
healed immediately.  
48 And he said unto  
her, Daughter, thy  
faith hath made  
thee whole; go in  
peace.



Matt. 9:18-26.

22 But Jesus turning and seeing her said, Daughter, be of good cheer; thy faith hath <sup>3</sup>made thee whole. And the woman was <sup>2</sup>made whole from that hour. And when Jesus came into the ruler's house, and saw the flute-players, and the crowd making a tumult, he said, Give place: for the damsel is not dead, but sleepeth. And they laughed at him to scorn. But when the crowd was put forth, he entered in, and took her by the hand; and the damsel arose. And <sup>4</sup>the fame hereof went forth into all that land.

Mark 5:22-43.

35 While he yet spake, they come from the ruler of the synagogue's *house*, saying, Thy daughter is dead: why troublest thou the <sup>6</sup>Master any further? But Jesus, <sup>7</sup>not heeding the word spoken, saith unto the ruler of the synagogue, Fear not, only believe. And he suffered no man to follow with him, save Peter, and James, and John the brother of James. And they come to the house of the ruler of the synagogue; and he beholdeth a tumult, and *many* weeping and wailing greatly. And when he was entered in, he saith unto them, Why make ye a tumult and weep? the child is not dead, but sleepeth. And they laughed him to scorn. But he, having put them all forth, taketh the father of the child and her mother and them that were with him, and goeth in where the child was. And taking the child by the hand, he saith unto her, Talitha cumi; which is, being interpreted, Damsel, I say unto thee, Arise. And straightway the damsel rose up, and walked; for she was twelve years old.

Luke 8:41-56.

49 While he yet spake, there cometh one from the ruler of the synagogue's *house*, saying, Thy daughter is dead; trouble not the <sup>6</sup>Master. But Jesus hearing it, answered him, Fear not: only believe, and she shall be <sup>7</sup>made whole. And when he came to the house, he suffered not any man to enter in with him, save Peter, and John, and James, and the father of the maiden and her mother. And all were weeping, and bewailing her: but he said, Weep not; for she is not dead, but sleepeth. And they laughed him to scorn, knowing that she was dead. But he, taking her by the hand, called, saying, Maiden, arise. And her spirit returned, and she rose up immediately. and he commanded that *something* be given her to eat. And her parents were amazed: but he charged them to tell no man what had been done.

Mark 5:22-43.

And they were amazed straightway with a great amazement. And he charged them much that no man should know this: and he commanded that something should be given her to eat.

1. Gr. *one ruler*. 2. Or, *saved*. 3. Or, *saved thee*. 4. Gr. *this fame*. 5. Gr. *scourge*. 6. Or, *Teacher*. 7. Or, *overhearing*. 8. Some ancient authorities omit *had spent all her living upon physicians, and*. 9. Some ancient authorities omit *and they that were with him*.

§ 36. HE HEALS TWO BLIND MEN, AND A DUMB DEMONIAK.

Matt. 9:27-34.

27 And as Jesus passed by from thence, two blind men followed him, crying out, and saying, Have mercy on us, thou son of David. And when he was come into the house, the blind men came to him: and Jesus saith unto them, Believe ye that I am able to do this? They say unto him, Yea, Lord. Then touched he their eyes, saying, According to your faith be it done unto you. And their eyes were opened. And 31 Jesus strictly charged them, saying, See that no man know it. But they went forth, and spread abroad his fame in all that land. 32 And as they went forth, behold, there was brought to him a dumb man possessed with a devil. And when the devil was cast out, the dumb man spake: and the multitudes marvelled, saying, It was never 34 so seen in Israel. But the Pharisees said, By the prince of the devils casteth he out devils.

1. Or, *sternly*. 2. Gr. *demon*. 3. Or, *In*. 4. Gr. *demons*.

*In § 37-39 the Saviour seems to the Jews to break the Sabbath, and hence a great hostility, with design to kill him. He defends himself and his disciples (§ 38) by various arguments and personal claims.*

§ 37. ATTENDING A FEAST IN JERUSALEM (PROBABLY THE PASSOVER),  
JESUS HEALS A MAN ON THE SABBATH, AND DEFENDS  
THIS ACTION.

John 5:1-47.

1 After these things there was a feast\* of the Jews; and Jesus went up to Jerusalem.

\* This feast of John 5:1 was *most probably* a Passover (see note at end of volume, on § 37). If so, we should know that our Lord's public ministry lasted three years and a fraction, and that the great ministry in Galilee lasted some 18 to 20 months. Otherwise, we should know of only two years and a fraction for the former, and 6 to 8 months for the latter; as John gives three passovers beyond question (John 2:13; 6:4; 12:1), and our Lord's ministry began some time before the first of these (§15-20). If the feast of 5:1 was not a passover, it is quite impossible to determine what other feast it was. While one would be glad to settle these questions, if it were possible, yet it really does not matter as regards understanding our Lord's recorded history and teachings during the great ministry in Galilee, the only point of difference being that if this feast was a Passover we should conceive of the three journeys about Galilee as occupying a longer time, and including more extensive unrecorded labors in preaching and healing.

John 5:1-47.

- 2 Now there is in Jerusalem by the sheep *gate* a pool, which is called  
 3 in Hebrew <sup>2</sup>Bethesda, having five porches. In these lay a multitude  
 5 of them that were sick, blind, halt, withered<sup>3</sup>. And a certain man  
 was there, which had been thirty and eight years in his infirmity.  
 6 When Jesus saw him lying, and knew that he had been now a long  
 time *in that case*, he saith unto him, Wouldst thou be made whole?  
 7 The sick man answered him, 'Sir, I have no man, when the water is  
 troubled, to put me into the pool: but while I am coming, another  
 8 steppeth down before me. Jesus saith unto him, Arise, take up thy  
 9 bed, and walk. And straightway the man was made whole, and took  
 up his bed and walked.
- 10 Now it was the sabbath on that day. So the Jews said unto him  
 that was cured, It is the sabbath, and it is not lawful for thee to take  
 11 up thy bed. But he answered them, He that made me whole, the  
 12 same said unto me, Take up thy bed, and walk. They asked him,  
 13 Who is the man that said unto thee, Take up *thy bed*, and walk? But  
 he that was healed wist not who it was: for Jesus had conveyed him-  
 14 self away, a multitude being in the place. Afterward Jesus findeth  
 him in the temple, and said unto him, Behold, thou art made whole:  
 15 sin no more, lest a worse thing befall thee. The man went away, and  
 16 told the Jews that it was Jesus which had made him whole. And for  
 this cause did the Jews persecute Jesus, because he did these things  
 17 on the sabbath. But Jesus answered them, My Father worketh even  
 18 until now, and I work. For this cause therefore the Jews sought the  
 more to kill him, because he not only brake the sabbath, but also  
 called God his own Father, making himself equal with God.
- 19 Jesus therefore answered and said unto them,  
 Verily, verily, I say unto you, The Son can do nothing of himself,  
 but what he seeth the Father doing: for what things soever he doeth,  
 20 these the Son also doeth in like manner. For the Father loveth the  
 Son, and sheweth him all things that himself doeth; and greater  
 21 works than these will he shew him, that ye may marvel. For as the  
 Father raiseth the dead and quickeneth them, even so the Son also  
 22 quickeneth whom he will. For neither doth the Father judge any  
 man, but he hath given all judgement unto the Son; that all may  
 23 honour the Son, even as they honour the Father. He that honoureth  
 24 not the Son honoureth not the Father which sent him. Verily, verily,  
 I say unto you, He that heareth my word, and believeth him that sent  
 me, hath eternal life, and cometh not into judgement, but hath passed  
 25 out of death into life. Verily, verily, I say unto you, The hour  
 cometh, and now is, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of  
 26 God; and they that hear shall live. For as the Father hath life  
 in himself, even so gave he to the Son also to have life in himself:  
 27 and he gave him authority to execute judgement, because he is <sup>4</sup>the  
 28 Son of man. Marvel not at this: for the hour cometh, in which all  
 29 that are in the tombs shall hear his voice, and shall come forth; they  
 that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have  
<sup>5</sup>done ill, unto the resurrection of judgement.
- 30 I can of myself do nothing: as I hear, I judge: and my judgement is  
 righteous; because I seek not mine own will, but the will of him that  
 31 sent me. If I bear witness of myself, my witness is not true. It is  
 32 another that beareth witness of me; and I know that the witness

John 5:1-47.

33 which he witnesseth of me is true. Ye have sent unto John, and he  
34 hath borne witness unto the truth. But the witness which I receive  
is not from man: howbeit I say these things, that ye may be saved.  
35 He was the lamp that burneth and shineth: and ye were willing to  
36 rejoice for a season in his light. But the witness which I have is  
greater than *that of John*: for the works which the Father hath given  
me to accomplish, the very works that I do, bear witness of me, that  
37 the Father hath sent me. And the Father which sent me, he hath  
borne witness of me. Ye have neither heard his voice at any time,  
38 nor seen his form. And ye have not his word abiding in you: for  
39 whom he sent, him ye believe not. 'Ye search the scriptures, because  
ye think that in them ye have eternal life; and these are they which  
40 bear witness of me; and ye will not come to me, that ye may have life.  
41 I receive not glory from men. But I know you, that ye have not the  
42 love of God in yourselves. I am come in my Father's name, and ye  
43 receive me not; if another shall come in his own name, him ye will  
44 receive. How can ye believe, which receive glory one of another, and  
45 the glory that *cometh from the only God* ye seek not? Think not that  
I will accuse you to the Father: there is one that accuseth you, *even*  
46 Moses, on whom ye have set your hope. For if ye believed Moses, ye  
47 would believe me; for he wrote of me. But if ye believe not his  
writings, how shall ye believe my words?\*

1. Many ancient authorities read *the feast*. 2. Some ancient authorities read *Bethsaida*, others *Bethzatha*. 3. Many ancient authorities insert, wholly or in part, *waiting for the moving of the water*: 4. *for an angel of the Lord went down at certain seasons into the pool, and troubled the water: whosoever then first after the troubling of the water stepped in was made whole, with whatsoever disease he was holden*. 4. Or, *Lord*. 5. Or, *a son of man*. 6. Or, *practised*. 7. Or, *Search the scriptures*. 8. Some ancient authorities read *the only one*.

### § 38. THE DISCIPLES OF JESUS PLUCK EARS OF GRAIN ON THE SABBATH, AND HE DEFENDS THEM.†

Matt. 12:1-8.

Mark 2:23-28.

Luke 6:1-5.

<p>1 At that season Jesus went on the sabbath- day through the corn-fields: and his disciples were an hungred, and began to pluck ears of corn, 2 and to eat. But the</p>	<p>23 And it came to pass, that he was go- ing on the sabbath day through the cornfields; and his disciples <sup>a</sup>began, as they went, to pluck the ears of corn.</p>	<p>1 Now it came to pass, on a <sup>a</sup>sabbath, that he was going through the corn- fields; and his disci- ples plucked the ears of corn, and did eat, rubbing them in</p>
---	---	--

\*Observe that here more than a year before the crucifixion, and probably two years (i. e. if the feast of 5:1 was a passover), the hostility of the Jews at *Jerusalem* (comp. John 4:1) has reached the point of a desire to kill him, as a sabbath-breaker and a blasphemer (5:16-18). So we shall find him staying away from Jerusalem at the passover of John 6:4, and until the Tabernacles six months before the crucifixion (John 7:1-10, § 73, 74). Meantime, the hostility will go on increasing in other parts of the country (§ 39, Mark 3:6; § 48, etc.).—Notice also that in this discourse at Jerusalem our Lord repeatedly declares himself in a high sense the Son of God (compare in § 40), and the appointed judge of mankind (ver. 27), and says that Moses wrote concerning him (ver. 46). All this indicated that he was the Messiah, but he did not expressly assert it. That would have precipitated the collision, for to claim to be the Messiah would in the view of the Jewish rulers involve *political* consequences (since they expected the Messiah to be a *king*), and many of the rulers cared far more for politics than for religion. Comp. John 11:48.

†The important events and discourses of § 38 and 39 doubtless occurred on the way back from Jerusalem, or in Galilee, as in § 40 he withdraws to the sea of Galilee.



Matt. 12:1-8.

Pharisees, when they saw it, said unto him, Behold, thy disciples do that which it is not lawful to do upon the sabbath. But he said unto them, Have ye not read what David did, when he was an hungred, and they that were with him: how he entered into the house of God, and did eat the shewbread, which it was not lawful for him to eat, neither for them that were with them, but only for the priests? Or have ye not read in the law, how that on the sabbath day the priests in the temple profane the sabbath, and are guiltless? But I say unto you, that one greater than the temple is here. But if ye had known what this meaneth, I desire mercy, and not sacrifice, ye would not have condemned the guiltless. For the Son of man is lord of the sabbath.

Mark 2:23-28.

24 And the Pharisees said unto him, Behold, why do they on the sabbath day that which is not lawful?  
25 And he said unto them, Did ye never read what David did, when he had need, and was an hungred, he, and they that were with him? How he entered into the house of God when Abiathar was high priest, and did eat the shewbread, which is not lawful to eat, save for the priests, and gave also to them that were with him?

Luke 6:1-5.

2 their hands. But certain of the Pharisees said, Why do ye that which it is not lawful to do on the sabbath day? And Jesus answering them said, Have ye not read even this, what David did, when he was an hungred, he, and they that were with him; how he entered into the house of God, and did take and eat the shewbread, and gave also to them that were with him; which it is not lawful to eat save for the priests alone?

27 And he said unto them, The sabbath was made for man, and not man for the sabbath: so that the Son of man is lord even of the sabbath.

5 And he said unto them, The Son of man is lord of the sabbath.

1. Some ancient authorities read *they did eat*. 2. Gr. *a greater thing*. 3. Gr. *began to make their way plucking*. 4. Some ancient authorities read *in the days of Abiathar the high priest*. 5. Many ancient authorities insert *second-first*.

### § 39. JESUS HEALS A WITHERED HAND ON THE SABBATH, AND DEFENDS IT.

(Compare § 78, 88, 91.)

Matt. 12:9-14.

9 And he departed

Mark 3:1-6.

1 And he entered a-

Luke 6:6-11.

6 And it came to



Matt. 12:9-14.

thence, and went  
into their syna-  
10 gogue; and behold,  
a man having a with-  
ered hand.

And  
they asked him, say-  
ing, Is it lawful to  
heal on the sabbath  
day? that they might  
accuse him.

11 And he  
said unto them,  
What man shall  
there be of you, that  
shall have one sheep,  
and if this fall into a  
pit on the sabbath  
day, will he not lay  
hold on it, and lift  
12 it out? How much  
then is a man of  
more value than a  
sheep! Wherefore it  
is lawful to do good  
on the sabbath day.

13 Then saith he to the  
man, Stretch forth  
thy hand. And he  
stretched it forth;  
and it was restored  
whole, as the other.

14 And the Pharisees  
went out, and took  
counsel against him,  
how they might de-  
stroy him.

Mark 3:1-6.

gain into the syna-  
gogue; and there  
was a man there  
which had his hand  
withered.

2 And they watch-  
ed him, whether he  
would heal him on  
the sabbath day;  
that they might ac-  
cuse him.

3 And he  
saith unto the man  
that had his hand  
withered, 'Stand  
4 forth. And he saith  
unto them, Is it law-  
ful on the sabbath  
day to do good,  
or to do harm? to  
save a life, or to kill?  
But they held their  
5 peace. And when he  
had looked round  
about on them with  
anger, being grieved  
at the hardening of  
their hearts, he saith  
unto the man,  
Stretch forth thy  
hand. And he  
stretched it forth:  
and his hand was re-  
stored.

6 And the Phar-  
isees went out and  
straightway with  
the Herodians took  
counsel against him,  
how they might de-  
stroy him.\*

Luke 6:6-11.

pass on another sab-  
bath, that he enter-  
ed into the syna-  
gogue and taught:  
and there was a man  
there, and his right  
hand was withered.

7 And the scribes and  
the Pharisees watch-  
ed him, whether he  
would heal on the  
sabbath; that they  
might find how to  
8 accuse him. But he  
knew their thoughts;  
and he said to the  
man that had his  
hand withered, Rise  
up, and stand forth  
in the midst. And  
he arose and stood  
9 forth. And Jesus  
said unto them, I ask  
you, Is it lawful on  
the sabbath to do  
good, or to do harm?  
to save a life, or to  
10 destroy it? And he  
looked round about  
on them all, and said  
unto him, Stretch  
forth thy hand. And  
he did so: and his  
hand was restored.

11 But they were filled  
with 'madness; and  
communed one with  
another what they  
might do to Jesus.

1. Gr. *Arise into the midst.* 2. Or, *foolishness.*

\*Here at some point near the sea of Galilee, there is already a plot to kill him, as some  
had wished to do in Jerusalem (comp. on § 37).

*In § 40-42 great throngs attend his ministry, and he selects twelve disciples to be his helpers, giving to them and the multitudes the Sermon on the Mount.*

§ 40. GREAT MULTITUDES ATTEND HIM BESIDE THE SEA OF GALILEE.

Matt 12:15-21.

15 And Jesus perceiving it, withdrew from thence: and many followed him;

16 and he healed them all,

and charged them that they should  
17 not make him known: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken <sup>1</sup>by Isaiah, the prophet, saying,  
18 Behold, my servant whom I have chosen;  
My beloved in whom my soul is well pleased:  
I will put my Spirit upon him,  
And he shall declare judgement to the Gentiles.  
19 He shall not strive, nor cry aloud;  
Neither shall any one hear his voice in the streets.  
20 A bruised reed shall he not break,  
And smoking flax shall he not quench,  
Till he send forth judgement unto victory.  
21 And in his name shall the Gentiles hope.

1. Or, *through*. 2. Or, *all the things that he did*. 3. Gr. *scourges*. 4. Gr. *fell*.

Mark 3:7-12.

7 And Jesus with his disciples withdrew to the sea: and a great multitude from Galilee followed:  
8 and from Judea, and from Jerusalem, and from Idumæa, and beyond Jordan, and about Tyre and Sidon, a great multitude, hearing <sup>2</sup>what great things he <sup>9</sup>did, came unto him. And he spake to his disciples, that a little boat should wait on him because of the crowd, lest they should throng him, for he had healed many; insomuch that as many as had <sup>3</sup>plagues <sup>4</sup>pressed upon him that they might touch  
11 him. And the unclean spirits, whensoever they beheld him, fell down before him, and cried, saying, Thou art the Son of God.  
12 And he charged them much that they should not make him known.

§ 41. AFTER A NIGHT OF PRAYER, JESUS SELECTS TWELVE APOSTLES.

Mark 3:13-19.

Luke 6:12-16.

13 And he goeth up into the mountain, and calleth unto him whom 12 And it came to pass in these days, that he went out into the

Mark 3:13-19.

he himself would: and they went  
14 unto him. And he appointed  
twelve<sup>1</sup>, that they might be with  
him, and that he might send  
15 them forth to preach, and to have  
16 authority to cast out <sup>2</sup>devils; <sup>3</sup>and  
17 Simon he surnamed Peter; and  
James the *son* of Zebedee, and  
John the brother of James; and  
them he surnamed Boanerges,  
18 which is, Sons of thunder: and  
Andrew, and Philip, and Bar-  
tholomew, and Matthew, and  
Thomas, and James the *son* of  
Alphæus, and Thaddæus, and Si-  
mon the <sup>4</sup>Cananæan,  
19 and Judas  
Iscariot, which also betrayed  
him.

1. Some ancient authorities add *whom also he named apostles*. See Luke 6:13. 2. Gr. *demons*. 3. Some ancient authorities insert *and he appointed twelve*. 4. Or, *Zealot*. See Luke 6:15; Acts 1:13. 5. Or, *brother*. See Jude 1.

Luke 6:12-16.

mountain to pray; and he con-  
tinued all night in prayer to  
13 God. And when it was day, he  
called his disciples: and he  
chose from them twelve, whom  
also he named Apostles;<sup>\*</sup>  
14 Simon,  
whom he also named Peter, and  
Andrew his brother, and James  
and John, and Philip and Bar-  
tholomew,  
15 and Matthew and  
Thomas, and James the *son* of  
Alphæus, and Simon which was  
16 called the Zealot, and Judas, the  
*son* of <sup>5</sup>James, and Judas Iscariot,  
which was the traitor.

## § 42. THE SERMON ON THE MOUNT. PRIVILEGES AND REQUIREMENTS OF THE MESSIANIC REIGN.

Matthew, chapters 5-7. Luke 6:17-49.†

A level place on a mountain, not far from Capernaum.

Introductory statements.

Matt. 5:1, 2.

1 And seeing the multitudes, he  
went up into the mountain: and  
when he had sat down, his disci-  
2 ples came unto him: and he open-  
ed his mouth and taught them,  
saying,

Luke 6:17-19.

17 And he came down with them,  
and stood on a level place, and a  
great multitude of his disciples,  
and a great number of the peo-  
ple from all Judea and Jerusalem,  
and the sea coast of Tyre and  
Sidon, which came to hear him,  
and to be healed of their diseases;  
18 and they that were troubled  
with unclean spirits were healed.  
19 And all the multitude sought to  
touch him: for power came forth  
from him, and healed *them* all.

<sup>\*</sup>Matthew postpones giving the names of the Twelve till they are sent out to preach in Galilee (§ 55). There is a fourth list in Acts 1:13. See the four compared in note at the end of this volume, on § 41.

†There is little doubt that the discourses given by Matthew and Luke are the same, Matthew locating it on "the mountain," and Luke "on a level place," which might easily be a level spot on a mountain. (See note at end of this book, on § 42.) Observe that they begin and end alike, and pursue the same general order. Luke omits various matters of special interest to Matthew's Jewish readers (e. g. Matt. 5:17-42), and other matters that he himself will give elsewhere (e. g. Luke 11:1-4; 12:22-31); while Luke has a few sentences (as ver. 24-26, 38-40), which are not given by Matthew.

## (a) The Beatitudes. Privileges of the Messiah's subjects.

Matt. 5:3-12.

3 Blessed are the poor in spirit:  
 4 for theirs is the kingdom of hea-  
 5 ven. 'Blessed are they that  
 6 mourn: for they shall be com-  
 7 forted. Blessed are the meek:  
 8 for they shall inherit the earth.  
 9 Blessed are they that hunger  
 10 and thirst after righteousness:  
 11 for they shall be filled. Blessed  
 12 are the merciful: for they shall  
 13 obtain mercy. Blessed are the  
 14 pure in heart: for they shall see  
 15 God. Blessed are the peace-  
 16 makers: for they shall be called  
 17 sons of God. Blessed are they  
 18 that have been persecuted for  
 19 righteousness' sake: for theirs is  
 20 the kingdom of heaven. Blessed  
 21 are ye when *men* shall reproach  
 22 you, and persecute you, and say  
 23 all manner of evil against you  
 24 falsely, for my sake. Rejoice,  
 25 and be exceeding glad: for great  
 26 is your reward in heaven: for so  
 persecuted they the prophets  
 which were before you.

Luke 6:20-26.

20 And he lifted up his eyes on  
 his disciples, and said, Blessed  
 are ye poor: for yours is the  
 21 kingdom of God. Blessed are  
 ye that hunger now: for ye shall  
 be filled. Blessed are ye that  
 weep now: for ye shall laugh.  
 22 Blessed are ye, when men shall  
 hate you, and when they shall  
 separate you *from their company*,  
 and reproach you, and cast out  
 your name as evil, for the Son of  
 23 man's sake. Rejoice in that day,  
 and leap *for joy*: for behold, your  
 reward is great in heaven: for in  
 the same manner did their fath-  
 24 ers unto the prophets. But woe  
 unto you that are rich! for ye  
 have received your consolation.  
 25 Woe unto you, ye that are full  
 now! for ye shall hunger. Woe  
 unto you, ye that laugh now! for  
 26 ye shall mourn and weep. Woe  
 unto you, when all men shall  
 speak well of you! for in the same  
 manner did their fathers to the  
 false prophets.

1. Some ancient authorities transpose ver. 4 and 5.

## (b) Influence and Responsibility of the Messiah's Subjects.

Matt. 5:13-16.

13 Ye are the salt of the earth: but if the salt have lost its savour,  
 wherewith shall it be salted? it is thenceforth good for nothing, but  
 14 to be cast out and trodden under foot of men. Ye are the light  
 15 of the world. A city set on a hill cannot be hid. Neither do *men*  
 light a lamp, and put it under the bushel, but on the stand; and it  
 16 shineth unto all that are in the house. Even so let your light shine  
 before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your  
 Father which is in heaven.

## (c) Relation of the Messianic teaching to the Law, and to the current teaching.

Matt. 5:17-48; Luke 6:27-36.

17 Think not that I came to destroy the law or the prophets: I came  
 18 not to destroy but to fulfil. For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and  
 earth pass away, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass away from  
 19 the law, till all things be accomplished. Whosoever therefore shall



Matt. 5:17-48; Luke 6:27-36.

break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, shall be called least in the kingdom of heaven: but whosoever shall do and  
20 teach them, he shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven. For I say unto you, that except your righteousness shall exceed *the righteousness* of the scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no wise enter into the kingdom of heaven.

21 Ye have heard that it was said to them of old time, Thou shalt not  
22 kill; and whosoever shall kill shall be in danger of the judgement: but I say unto you, that every one who is angry with his brother  
'shall be in danger of the judgement. and whosoever shall say to his brother <sup>2</sup>Raca, shall be in danger of the council; and whosoever shall  
23 say, <sup>3</sup>Thou fool, shall be in danger <sup>4</sup>of the <sup>5</sup>hell of fire. If therefore thou art offering thy gift at the altar, and there rememberest that  
24 thy brother hath aught against thee, leave there thy gift before the altar, and go thy way, first be reconciled to thy brother, and then  
25 come and offer thy gift. Agree with thine adversary quickly, whiles thou art with him in the way; lest haply the adversary deliver thee to the judge, and the judge <sup>6</sup>deliver thee to the officer, and thou be  
26 cast into prison. Verily I say unto thee, Thou shalt by no means come out thence, till thou have paid the last farthing.

27 Ye have heard that it was said, Thou shalt not commit adultery:  
28 but I say unto you, that every one that looketh on a woman to lust after her hath committed adultery with her already in his heart.  
29 And if thy right eye causeth thee to stumble, pluck it out, and cast it from thee; for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should  
30 perish, and not thy whole body be cast into <sup>7</sup>hell. And if thy right hand causeth thee to stumble, cut it off, and cast it from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not thy  
31 whole body go into <sup>7</sup>hell. It was said also, Whosoever shall put  
32 away his wife, let him give her a writing of divorcement: but I say unto you, that every one that putteth away his wife, saving for the cause of fornication, maketh her an adulteress; and whosoever shall marry her when she is put away committeth adultery.

33 Again, ye have heard that it was said to them of old time, Thou shalt not forswear thyself, but shalt perform unto the Lord thine  
34 oaths: but I say unto you, Swear not at all; neither by the heaven, for  
35 it is the throne of God; nor by the earth, for it is the footstool of his  
36 feet; nor <sup>8</sup>by Jerusalem, for it is the city of the great King. Neither shalt thou swear by thy head, for thou canst not make one hair white  
37 or black. <sup>9</sup>But let your speech be, Yea, yea; Nay, nay: and whatsoever is more than these is of <sup>10</sup>the evil one.

38 Ye have heard that it was said, An eye for an eye, and a tooth for a  
39 tooth: but I say unto you, Resist not <sup>11</sup>him that is evil; but whosoever  
40 smiteth thee on thy right cheek, turn to him the other also. And if any man would go to law with thee, and take away thy coat, let him  
41 have thy cloke also. And whosoever shall <sup>12</sup>compel thee to go one  
42 mile, go with him twain. Give to him that asketh thee, and from him that would borrow of thee turn not thou away.

43 Ye have heard that it was said, Thou shalt love thy neighbour,



Matt. 5:17-48.

Luke 6:27-36.

44 and hate thine enemy: But I say  
unto you, Love your enemies,  
and pray for them that persecute  
45 you; that ye may be sons of your  
Father which is in heaven: for  
he maketh his sun to rise on the  
evil and the good, and sendeth  
rain on the just and the unjust.

46 For if ye love them that love  
you, what reward have ye? do  
not even the <sup>13</sup>publicans the  
47 same? And if you salute your  
brethren only, what do ye more  
*than others?* do not even the  
48 Gentiles the same? Ye therefore  
shall be perfect, as your heaven-  
ly Father is perfect.

27 But I say  
unto you which hear, Love your  
enemies, do good to them that  
28 hate you, bless them that curse  
you, pray for them that despise-  
29 fully use you. To him that  
smiteth thee on the *one* cheek  
offer also the other; and from  
him that taketh away thy cloke  
withhold not thy coat also.  
30 Give to every one that asketh  
thee; and of him that taketh  
away thy goods ask them not  
32 again. And if ye love them  
that love you, what thank  
have ye? for even sinners love  
33 those that love them. And if ye  
do good to them that do good to  
you, what thank have ye? for  
34 even sinners do the same. And  
if ye lend to them of whom ye  
hope to receive, what thank have  
ye? even sinners lend to sinners,  
35 to receive again as much. But  
love your enemies, and do *them*  
good, and lend, <sup>14</sup>never despair-  
ing; and your reward shall be  
great, and ye shall be sons of the  
Most High: for he is kind toward  
36 the unthankful and evil. Be ye  
merciful, even as your Father is  
merciful.

1. Many ancient authorities insert *without cause*. 2. An expression of contempt.  
3. Or, *Moreh*, a Hebrew expression of condemnation. 4. Gr. *unto* or *into*. 5. Gr. *Gehenna of fire*. 6. Some ancient authorities omit *deliver thee*. 7. Gr. *Gehenna*. 8. Or, *toward*. 9. Some ancient authorities read *But your speech shall be*. 10. Or, *evil*: as in ver. 39; 6:13. 11. Or, *evil*. 12. Gr. *impress*. 13. That is, *collectors* or *renters* of Roman taxes: and so elsewhere. 14. Some ancient authorities read, *despairing of no man*.

(d) Good works must not be performed ostentatiously. For example, alms-giving, prayer, fasting.

Matt. 6:1-18.

1 Take heed that ye do not your righteousness before men, to be seen  
of them: else ye have no reward with your Father which is in heaven.  
2 When therefore thou doest alms, sound not a trumpet before thee,  
as the hypocrites do in the synagogues and in the streets, that they  
may have glory of men. Verily I say unto you, They have received  
3 their reward. But when thou doest alms, let not thy left hand know  
4 what thy right hand doeth: that thine alms may be in secret: and thy  
Father which seeth in secret shall recompense thee.

Matt. 6:1-18.

5 And when ye pray, ye shall not be as the hypocrites: for they love to stand and pray in the synagogues and in the corners of the streets, that they may be seen of men. Verily I say unto you, They have received their reward. But thou, when thou prayest, enter into thine inner chamber, and having shut thy door, pray to thy Father which is in secret, and thy Father which seeth in secret shall recompense thee. And in praying use not vain repetitions, as the Gentiles do: for they think that they shall be heard for their much speaking. Be not therefore like unto them: for your Father knoweth what things ye have need of, before ye ask him. After this manner therefore pray ye: Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name. Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done, as in heaven, so on earth. Give us this day our daily bread. And forgive us our debts, as we also have forgiven our debtors. And bring us not into temptation, but deliver us from the evil one. For if ye forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you. But if ye forgive not men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses.

16 Moreover when ye fast, be not, as the hypocrites, of a sad countenance: for they disfigure their faces, that they may be seen of men to fast. Verily I say unto you, They have received their reward. But thou, when thou fastest, anoint thy head, and wash thy face; that thou be not seen of men to fast, but of thy Father which is in secret: and thy Father, which seeth in secret, shall recompense thee.

1. Some ancient authorities read *God your Father*. 2. Gr. *our bread for the coming day*. 3 Or, *evil*. 4. Many authorities, some ancient, but with variations, add *For thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever, Amen*.

(e) Single-hearted devotion to God, as opposed to worldly aims and anxieties.

Matt. 6:19-34.

19 Lay not up for yourselves treasures upon the earth, where moth and rust doth consume, and where thieves break through and steal: but lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust doth consume, and where thieves do not break through nor steal: for where thy treasure is, there will thy heart be also. The lamp of the body is the eye: if therefore thine eye be single, thy whole body shall be full of light. But if thine eye be evil, thy whole body shall be full of darkness. If therefore the light that is in thee be darkness, how great is the darkness! No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon. Therefore I say unto you, Be not anxious for your life, what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink; nor yet for your body, what ye shall put on. Is not the life more than the food, and the body more than the raiment? Behold, the birds of the heaven, that they sow not, neither do they reap, nor gather into barns; and your heavenly Father feedeth them. Are not ye of much more value than they?

27 And which of you by being anxious can add one cubit unto his stature? And why are ye anxious concerning raiment? Consider the

Matt. 6:19-34.

29 lilies of the field, how they grow; they toil not, neither do they spin:  
 yet I say unto you, that even Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed  
 30 like one of these. But if God doth so clothe the grass of the field,  
 which to-day is, and to-morrow is cast into the oven, *shall he* not much  
 31 more *clothe* you, O ye of little faith? Be not therefore anxious, say-  
 ing, What shall we eat? or, What shall we drink? or, Wherewithal  
 32 shall we be clothed? For after all these things do the Gentiles seek;  
 for your heavenly Father knoweth that ye have need of all these  
 33 things. But seek ye first his kingdom, and his righteousness; and all  
 34 these things shall be added unto you. Be not therefore anxious for  
 the morrow: for the morrow will be anxious for itself. Sufficient  
 unto the day is the evil thereof.

1. Gr. *dig through*. 2. Or, *age*.

(f) About judging others.

Matt. 7:1-6.

Luke 6:37-42.

- |   |   |
|---|---|
| <p>1 Judge not, that ye be not judg-<br/>         2 ed. For with what judgement ye<br/>         judge, ye shall be judged: and<br/>         with what measure ye mete, it<br/>         shall be measured unto you.</p> <p>3 And why beholdest thou the<br/>         mote that is in thy brother's eye,<br/>         but considerest not the beam that<br/>         4 is in thine own eye? Or how wilt<br/>         thou say to thy brother, Let me<br/>         cast out the mote out of thine<br/>         eye; and lo, the beam is in thine<br/>         5 own eye? Thou hypocrite, cast<br/>         out first the beam out of thine<br/>         own eye; and then shalt thou see<br/>         clearly to cast out the mote out of<br/>         thy brother's eye.</p> <p>6 Give not that which is holy un-<br/>         to the dogs, neither cast your<br/>         pearls before the swine, lest hap-</p> | <p>37 And judge not, and ye shall not<br/>         be judged: and condemn not, and<br/>         ye shall not be condemned: re-<br/>         lease, and ye shall be released:<br/>         38 give, and it shall be given unto<br/>         you; good measure, pressed<br/>         down, shaken together, running<br/>         over, shall they give into your<br/>         bosom. For with what measure<br/>         ye mete it shall be measured to<br/>         you again.</p> <p>39 And he spake also a parable<br/>         unto them, Can the blind guide<br/>         the blind? shall they not both<br/>         40 fall into a pit? The disciple is<br/>         not above his 'master: but every<br/>         one when he is perfected shall<br/>         41 be as his 'master. And why be-<br/>         holdest thou the mote that is in<br/>         thy brother's eye, but consider-<br/>         est not the beam that is in thine<br/>         42 own eye? Or how canst thou say<br/>         to thy brother, Brother, let me<br/>         cast out the mote that is in thine<br/>         eye, when thou thyself beholdest<br/>         not the beam that is in thine own<br/>         eye? Thou hypocrite, cast out<br/>         first the beam out of thine own<br/>         eye, and then shalt thou see<br/>         clearly to cast out the mote <b>that</b><br/>         is in thy brother's eye.</p> |
|---|---|

Matt. 7:1-6.

ly they trample them under their feet, and turn and rend you.

1 Or. *teacher*.

(g) Prayer, and the Golden Rule.

Matt. 7:7-12.

7 Ask, and it shall be given you: seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it  
8 shall be opened unto you. for every one that asketh receiveth; and he  
9 that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened. Or  
what man is there of you, who, if his son shall ask him for a loaf, will  
10 give him a stone; or if he shall ask for a fish, will give him a serpent?  
11 If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children,  
how much more shall your Father which is in heaven give good things

Luke 6:31.

12 to them that ask him? All things therefore whatsoever ye would  
that men should do unto you, 31 And as ye would that men  
even so do ye also unto them: for should do to you, do ye also to  
this is the law and the prophets. them likewise.

(h) The way of salvation hard to find and follow.

Matt. 7:13-23.

13 Enter ye in by the narrow gate: for wide <sup>1</sup>is the gate, and broad is  
the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many be they that enter in  
14 thereby. <sup>2</sup>For narrow is the gate, and straitened the way, that lead-  
eth unto life, and few be they that find it.

15 Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep's clothing,  
16 but inwardly are ravening wolves. By their fruits ye shall know  
17 them. Do *men* gather grapes of thorns, or figs of thistles? Even so

Luke 6.43-46.

18 bringeth forth evil fruit. A good 43 For there is no good tree that  
tree cannot bring forth evil fruit, bringeth forth corrupt fruit; nor  
neither can a corrupt tree bring again a corrupt tree that bring-  
19 forth good fruit. Every tree that 44 eth forth good fruit. For each  
bringeth not forth good fruit is tree is known by its own fruit.  
hewn down, and cast into the fire. For of thorns men do not gather  
20 Therefore by their fruits ye shall 45 they grapes. The good man out  
21 know them. Not every one that of the good treasure of his heart  
saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall bringeth forth that which is good,  
enter the kingdom of heaven; but and the evil *man* out of the evil  
22 which is in heaven. Many will say *treasure* bringeth forth that which  
to me in that day, Lord, Lord, did is evil<sup>1</sup> for out of the abundance of  
we not prophesy by thy name, and the heart his mouth speaketh.  
and by thy name cast out <sup>3</sup>devils, and 46 And why call ye me, Lord, Lord,  
by thy name do many <sup>4</sup>mighty and do not the things which I say?  
23 works? And then will I profess un-  
to them, I never knew you: depart  
from me, ye that work iniquity.

1. Some ancient authorities omit *is the gate*. 2. Many ancient authorities read  
*How narrow is the gate, &c* 3. Gr. *demons*. 4. Gr. *powers*



## (i) Conclusion. The Two Builders.

Matt. 7:24-29.

Luke 6:47-49.

- 24 Every one therefore which 47 Every one that cometh unto  
 heareth these words of mine, and  
 doeth them, shall be likened un-  
 to a wise man, which built his 48 whom he is like: he is like a man  
 25 house upon the rock: and the building a house, who digged and  
 rain descended, and the floods went deep, and laid a foundation  
 came, and the winds blew, and upon the rock: and when a flood  
 beat upon that house; and it fell arose, the stream brake against  
 not: for it was founded upon that house, and could not shake  
 26 the rock. And every one that it: 'because it had been well  
 heareth these words of mine, 49 builded. But he that heareth,  
 and doeth them not, shall be and doeth not, is like a man that  
 likened unto a foolish man, built a house upon the earth  
 which built his house upon the without a foundation; against  
 27 sand: and the rain descended, which the stream brake, and  
 and the floods came, and the straightway it fell in; and the  
 winds blew, and smote upon that ruin of that house was great.  
 house; and it fell: and great was  
 the fall thereof.
- 28 And it came to pass, when Je-  
 sus ended these words, the mul-  
 titudes were astonished at his  
 29 teaching: for he taught them as  
*one* having authority, and not as  
 their scribes.

1. Many ancient authorities read *for it had been founded upon the rock: as in Matt.*  
 7:25.

## ‡ 43. JESUS HEALS A CENTURION'S SERVANT AT CAPERNAUM.

Matt. 8:1,5-13.

Luke 7:1-10.

- 1 And when he was come down  
 from the mountain, great multi-  
 tudes followed him.
- 5 And when he was entered into  
 Capernaum, there came unto him  
 a centurion,
- 6 beseeching him, and  
 saying, Lord, my 'servant lieth  
 in the house sick of the palsy,  
 grievously tormented.
- 7 And he saith  
 unto him, I will come and heal  
 him.
- 1 After he had ended all his say-  
 ings in the ears of the people, he  
 entered into Capernaum.
- 2 And a certain centurion's 'ser-  
 vant, who was 'dear unto him,  
 was sick and at the point of  
 3 death. And when he heard  
 concerning Jesus, he sent unto  
 him elders of the Jews, asking  
 him that he would come and  
 4 save his 'servant. And they,  
 when they came to Jesus, be-  
 sought him earnestly, saying,  
 He is worthy that thou shouldst  
 5 do this for him: for he loveth  
 our nation, and himself built us  
 6 our synagogue. And Jesus went  
 with them. And when he was  
 now not far from the house, the



Matt. 8:1,5-13.

- 8 And the centurion answered and said, Lord, I am not <sup>2</sup>worthy that thou shouldst come under my roof: but only <sup>3</sup>say the word, and my <sup>1</sup>servant shall be healed.
- 9 For I also am a man <sup>4</sup>under authority, having under myself soldiers: and I say to this one, Go, and he goeth; and to another, Come, and he cometh; and to my <sup>5</sup>servant, Do this, and he doeth it.
- 10 And when Jesus heard it, he marvelled, and said to them that followed, Verily I say unto you, <sup>6</sup>I have not found so great
- 11 faith, no, not in Israel. And I say unto you, that many shall come from the east and the west, and shall <sup>7</sup>sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, in
- 12 the kingdom of heaven: but the sons of the kingdom shall be cast forth into the outer darkness: there shall be weeping and
- 13 gnashing of teeth. And Jesus said unto the centurion, Go thy way; as thou hast believed so be it done unto thee. And the <sup>8</sup>servant was healed in that hour.

Luke 7:1-10.

- centurion sent friends to him, saying unto him, Lord, trouble not thyself: for I am not <sup>2</sup>worthy that thou shouldst come under
- 7 my roof: wherefore neither thought I myself worthy to come unto thee: but <sup>3</sup>say the word, and my <sup>1</sup>servant shall be healed.
- 8 For I also am a man set under authority, having under myself soldiers: and I say to this one, Go, and he goeth; and to another, Come, and he cometh; and to my <sup>5</sup>servant, Do this, and he doeth
- 9 it. And when Jesus heard these things, he marvelled at him, and turned and said unto the multitude that followed him, I say unto you, I have not found so great faith, no, not in Israel.
- 10 And they that were sent, returning to the house, found the <sup>6</sup>servant whole.

1. Or, boy. 2. Gr. *sufficient*. 3. Gr. *say with a word*. 4. Some ancient authorities insert *set*: as in Luke 7:8. 5. Gr. *bondservant*. 6. Many ancient authorities read *With no man in Israel have I found so great faith*. 7. Gr. *recline*. 8. Or, *precious to him* Or, *honourable with him*.

#### § 44. HE RAISES A WIDOW'S SON AT NAIN.

Luke 7:11-17.

- 11 And it came to pass <sup>1</sup>soon afterwards, that he went to a city called
- 12 Nain; and his disciples went with him, and a great multitude. Now when he drew near to the gate of the city, behold, there was carried out one that was dead, the only son of his mother, and she was a
- 13 widow: and much people of the city was with her. And when the Lord saw her, he had compassion on her, and said unto her, Weep
- 14 not. And he came nigh and touched the bier: and the bearers stood
- 15 still. And he said, Young man, I say unto thee, Arise. And he that was dead sat up, and began to speak. And he gave him to his mother.
- 16 And fear took hold on all: and they glorified God, saying, A great

Luke 7:11-17.

17 prophet is arisen among us: and, God hath visited his people. And this report went forth concerning him in the whole of Judea, and the region round about.\*

1. Many ancient authorities read on the next day.

‡ 45. A MESSAGE COMES FROM JOHN THE BAPTIST. AND OUR LORD DISCOURSES AS TO JOHN, AND VARIOUS OTHER MATTERS SUGGESTED.

Galilee.

Matt. 11:2-30.

Luke 7:18-35.

2 Now when John heard in the prison† the works of the Christ, he sent by his disciples, and said 3 unto him, Art thou he that cometh, or look we for another?

4 And Jesus answered and said unto them, Go your way and tell John the things which ye do 5 hear and see: the blind receive their sight, and the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, and the deaf hear, and the dead are raised up, and the poor have 'good tidings preached to them. 6 And blessed is he, whosoever shall find none occasion of stumbling in me.

7 And as these went their way, Jesus began to say unto the multitudes concerning John, What went ye out into the wilderness to behold? a reed shaken with 8 the wind? But what went ye out for to see? a man clothed in soft raiment? Behold, they that wear soft raiment are in 9 kings' houses. 2But wherefore

18 And the disciples of John told 19 him all of these things. And John calling unto him 14two of his disciples sent them to the Lord, saying, Art thou he that cometh, or look we for another?

20 And when the men were come unto him, they said, John the Baptist hath sent us unto thee, saying, Art thou he that cometh, 21 or look we for another? In that hour he cured many of diseases and 15plagues and evil spirits; and on many that were blind he 22 bestowed sight. And he answered and said unto them, Go your way, and tell John what things ye have seen and heard; the blind receive theirsight, the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, and the deaf hear, the dead are raised up, the poor have 'good 23 tidings preached to them. And blessed is he, whosoever shall find none occasion of stumbling in me.

24 And when the messengers of John were departed, he began to say unto the multitudes concerning John, What went ye out into the wilderness to behold? a 25 reed shaken with the wind? But what went ye out to see? a man clothed in soft raiment? Behold, they which are gorgeously apparelled, and live delicately, are

\*Observe that his fame as having raised the dead, and as being "a great prophet," spread widely, and reaching John, led to his message of inquiry (connect Luke 7:17 and 18).

†John's prison was at Machaerus, east of the Dead Sea. Jesus was somewhere in Galilee, probably near Nain (‡ 44), which was in the southern part of Galilee.

Matt. 11:2-30.

went ye out? to see a prophet?  
Yea, I say unto you, and much  
10 more than a prophet. This is he,  
of whom it is written,

Behold, I send my messenger  
before thy face,

Who shall prepare thy way be-  
fore thee.

11 Verily I say unto you, Among  
them that are born of women  
there hath not arisen a greater  
than John the Baptist: yet he  
that is <sup>3</sup>but little in the kingdom  
of heaven is greater than he.

12 And from the days of John the  
Baptist until now the kingdom of  
heaven suffereth violence, and  
men of violence take it by force.

13 For all the prophets and the law  
14 prophesied until John. And if  
ye are willing to receive <sup>it</sup>, this is

15 Elijah, which is to come. He  
that hath ears <sup>5</sup>to hear, let him  
hear.

16 But whereunto  
shall I liken this generation? It  
is like unto children sitting in  
the marketplaces, which call un-  
17 to their fellows, and say, We  
piped unto you, and ye did not  
dance; we wailed, and ye did not  
<sup>6</sup>mourn.

18 For John came  
neither eating nor drinking, and  
19 they say, He hath a <sup>7</sup>devil. The  
Son of man came eating and  
drinking, and they say, Behold, a  
gluttonous man, and a winebibber,  
a friend of publicans and sinners!

And wisdom <sup>8</sup>is justified by her  
<sup>9</sup>works.

20 Then began he to upbraid  
the cities wherein most of his  
<sup>10</sup>mighty works were done, be-

Luke 7:18-35.

26 in kings' courts. But what went  
ye out to see? a prophet? Yea,  
I say unto you, and much more  
27 than a prophet. This is he of  
whom it is written,

Behold, I send my messenger  
before thy face,

Who shall prepare thy way  
before thee.

28 I say unto you, Among them  
that are born of women there is  
none greater than John: yet he  
that is <sup>3</sup>but little in the kingdom  
of God is greater than he.

29 And all the  
people when they heard, and the  
publicans, justified God, <sup>16</sup>being  
baptized with the baptism of

30 John. But the Pharisees and  
the lawyers rejected for them-  
selves the counsel of God, <sup>17</sup>being

31 not baptized of him. Whereunto  
then shall I liken the men of  
this generation, and to what are

32 they like? They are like unto  
children that sit in the market-  
place, and call one to another;  
which say, We piped unto you,  
and ye did not dance; we wailed,

33 and ye did not weep. For John  
the Baptist is come eating no  
bread nor drinking wine; and ye

34 say, He hath a <sup>7</sup>devil. The Son  
of man is come eating and drink-  
ing; and ye say, Behold, a glut-  
tonous man, and a winebibber, a  
friend of publicans and sinners!

35 And wisdom <sup>8</sup>is justified of all  
her children.

Matt. 11:2-30.

21 cause they repented not. Woe unto thee, Chorazin! woe unto thee, Bethsaida! for if the <sup>10</sup>mighty works had been done in Tyre and Sidon which were done in you, they would have repented long ago in sack-  
22 cloth and ashes. Howbeit I say unto you, it shall be more tolerable  
23 for Tyre and Sidon in the day of judgement, than for you. And thou, Capernaum, shalt thou be exalted unto heaven? thou shalt <sup>11</sup>go down  
24 unto Hades: for if the <sup>10</sup>mighty works had been done in Sodom which were done in thee, it would have remained until this day. Howbeit I say unto you, that it shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom in the day of judgement, than for thee.

25 At that season Jesus answered and said, I <sup>12</sup>thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that thou didst hide these things from the  
26 wise and understanding, and didst reveal them unto babes: yea, Father,  
27 for so it was well-pleasing in thy sight. All things have been delivered unto me of my Father: and no one knoweth the Son, save the Father: neither doth any know the Father, save the Son, and he  
28 to whomsoever the Son willeth to reveal him. Come unto me, all ye  
29 that labour and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest. Take my yoke upon you, and learn of me; for I am meek and lowly in heart:  
30 and ye shall find rest unto your souls. For my yoke is easy, and my burden is light.

1. Or, *the gospel*. 2. Many ancient authorities read *But what went ye out to see? a prophet?* 3. Gr. *lesser*. 4. Or, *him*. 5. Some ancient authorities omit *to hear*. 6. Gr. *beat the breast*. 7. Gr. *demon*. 8. Or, *was*. 9. Many ancient authorities read *children*: as in Luke vii. 35. 10. Gr. *powers*. 11. Many ancient authorities read *be brought down*. 12. Or, *praise*. 13. Or, *that*. 14. Gr. *certain two*. 15. Gr. *scourges*. 16. Or, *having been*. 17. Or, *not having been*.

‡ 46. THE WOMAN THAT WAS A SINNER \*ANointed THE SAVIOUR'S FEET. (Compare ‡ 117.)

Galilee.

Luke 7:36-50.

36 And one of the Pharisees desired him that he would eat with him.  
37 And he entered into the Pharisee's house, and sat down to meat. And behold, a woman which was in the city, a sinner; and when she knew that he was sitting at meat in the Pharisee's house, she brought <sup>1</sup>an  
38 alabaster cruse of ointment, and standing behind at his feet, weeping, she began to wet his feet with her tears, and wiped them with the hair of her head, and <sup>2</sup>kissed his feet, and anointed them with the  
39 ointment. Now when the Pharisee which had bidden him saw it, he spake within himself, saying, This man, if he were <sup>3</sup>a prophet, would have perceived who and what manner of woman this is which  
40 toucheth him, that she is a sinner. And Jesus answering said unto him, Simon, I have somewhat to say unto thee. And he saith, <sup>4</sup>Mas-  
41 ter, say on. A certain lender had two debtors: the one owed five

\*This anointing in Galilee must be distinct from the anointing at Bethany, near Jerusalem, more than a year later. See ‡ 117. This sinful and penitent woman is represented by a very late tradition as being Mary Magdalene, and hence all the popular uses of the term Magdalene. But that notion has no historical support whatever, and it becomes violently improbable when we find that in the very next paragraph (‡ 47) Luke introduces Mary Magdalene as a new figure in the history.



Luke 7:36-50.

42 hundred 'pence, and the other fifty. When they had not *wherewith* to  
 pay, he forgave them both. Which of them therefore will love him  
 43 most? Simon answered and said, He, I suppose, to whom he forgave  
 44 the most. And he said unto him, Thou hast rightly judged. And  
 turning to the woman, he said unto Simon, Seest thou this woman?  
 I entered into thine house, thou gavest me no water for my feet: but  
 she hath wetted my feet with her tears, and wiped them with her hair.  
 45 Thou gavest me no kiss: but she, since the time I came in, hath not  
 46 ceased to 'kiss my feet. My head with oil thou didst not anoint: but  
 47 she hath anointed my feet with ointment. Wherefore I say unto thee,  
 Her sins, which are many, are forgiven: for she loved much: but to  
 48 whom little is forgiven, *the same* loveth little. And he said unto her,  
 49 Thy sins are forgiven. And they that sat at meat with him began to  
 50 say 'within themselves, Who is this that even forgiveth sins? And he  
 said unto the woman, Thy faith hath saved thee; go in peace.

1. Or, *a flask*. 2. Gr. *kissed much*. 3. Some ancient authorities read *the prophet*. See John 1:21, 25. 4. Or, *Teacher*. 5. The word in the Greek denotes a coin worth about seventeen cents. 6. Gr. *kiss much*. 7. Or, *among*.

‡ 47. FURTHER JOURNEYING ABOUT GALILEE.\* (Comp. ‡ 30.)

Luke 8:1-3.

1 And it came to pass soon afterwards, that he went about through  
 cities and villages, preaching and bringing the 'good tidings of the  
 2 kingdom of God, and with him the twelve, and certain women which  
 had been healed of evil spirits and infirmities, Mary that was called  
 3 Magdalene, from whom seven 'devils had gone out, and Joanna the  
 wife of Chuza Herod's steward, and Susanna, and many others, which  
 ministered unto 'them of their substance.

1. Or, *gospel*. 2. Gr. *demons*. 3. Many ancient authorities read *him*.

*Notice that the events of ‡ 48-53 all occurred on the same day.*

‡ 48. BLASPHEMOUS ACCUSATION OF LEAGUE WITH BEELZEBUB.

(Compare ‡ 84.)

Galilee.

Matt. 12:22-37.

Mark 3:19-30.

19 And he cometh into a house.  
 20 And the multitude cometh together again, so that they could  
 21 not so much as eat bread. And when his friends heard it, they  
 went out to lay hold on him: for they said, He is beside himself.  
 22 Then was brought unto him  
 'one possessed with a devil, blind

\*This journey about Galilee is probably distinct from those of ‡ 30 and ‡ 55, making *three* such journeys in all. See on ‡ 30.



Matt. 12:22-37.

Mark 3:19-30.

and dumb: and he healed him, insomuch that the dumb man spake and saw. And all the multitudes were amazed, and said, 23 Is this the son of David? But when the Pharisees heard it, they said, \*This man doth not cast out <sup>2</sup>devils, but <sup>3</sup>by Beelzebub the prince of the <sup>2</sup>devils. 25 And knowing their thoughts he said unto them, Every kingdom divided against itself is brought to desolation; and every city or house divided against itself shall 26 not stand: and if Satan casteth out Satan, he is divided against himself; how then shall his 27 kingdom stand? And if I <sup>3</sup>by Beelzebub cast out <sup>2</sup>devils, <sup>3</sup>by whom do your sons cast them out? therefore shall they 28 be your judges. But if I <sup>3</sup>by the Spirit of God cast out <sup>2</sup>devils, then is the kingdom of God come 29 upon you. Or how can one enter into the house of the strong *man*, and spoil his goods, except he first bind the strong *man*? and then 30 he will spoil his house. He that is not with me is against me; and he that gathereth not with 31 me scattereth. Therefore I say unto you, every sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven <sup>4</sup>unto men; but the blasphemy against the Spirit shall not be forgiven. 32 And whosoever shall speak a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him; but whosoever shall speak against the Holy Spirit it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this <sup>6</sup>world, nor 33 in that which is to come. Either make the tree good, and its fruit good; or make the tree corrupt, and its fruit corrupt: for the tree is 34 known by its fruit. Ye offspring of vipers, how can ye, being evil,

22 And the scribes which came down from Jerusalem said, he hath Beelzebub, and, <sup>3</sup>By the prince of the <sup>2</sup>devils casteth he 23 out the <sup>2</sup>devils. And he called them unto him, and said unto them in parables, How can Satan 24 cast out Satan? And if a kingdom be divided against itself, 25 that kingdom cannot stand. And if a house be divided against itself, that house will not be able 26 to stand. And if Satan hath risen up against himself, and is divided, he cannot stand, but hath an end.

27 But no one can enter into the house of the strong *man*, and spoil his goods, except he first bind the strong *man*; and then he will spoil his house.

28 Verily I say unto you, All their sins shall be forgiven unto the sons of men, and their blasphemies wherewith 29 soever they shall blaspheme: but whosoever shall blaspheme against the Holy Spirit hath never forgiveness, but is guilty 30 of an eternal sin: because they said, He hath an unclean spirit.

\*See a similar accusation described hereafter in § 84; and allusion made to such accusation heretofore, § 36.—Observe here a very *busy day*: in the *forenoon* teaching a crowded audience (Mark 3:19), some of whom insult and blaspheme him, and others demand a sign (§ 43), and at length his mother and brother try to carry him off as insane (§ 50, comp. Mark 3:21); in the *afternoon* giving a group of most remarkable parables, several of which he interprets (§ 51); towards night crossing the Lake in a boat, so tired and worn that he sleeps soundly amid the alarming storm (§ 52); then healing the Gadarene demoniacs, and returning by boat, apparently the same evening (§ 53). What a day of toil and trial.

Matt. 12:22-37.

35 speak good things? for out of the abundance of the heart the mouth  
36 speaketh. The good man out of his own good treasure bringeth forth  
good things: and the evil man out of his evil treasure bringeth forth  
37 evil things. And I say unto you, that every idle word that men shall  
speak, they shall give account thereof in the day of judgement. For  
by thy words thou shalt be justified, and by thy words thou shalt be  
condemned.

1. Or, *a demoniac*. 2. Gr. *demons*. 3. Or, *in*. 4. Some ancient authorities read *unto you men*. 5. Or, *age*.

§ 49. SCRIBES AND PHARISEES DEMAND A SIGN.

Same day. Galilee.

Matt. 12:38-45.

38 Then certain of the scribes and Pharisees answered him, saying,  
39 <sup>1</sup>Master, we would see a sign from thee. But he answered and said  
unto them, An evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign;  
and there shall no sign be given to it but the sign of Jonah the  
40 prophet: for as Jonah was three days and three nights in the belly of  
the <sup>2</sup>whale; so shall the Son of man be three days and three nights in  
41 the heart of the earth. The men of Nineveh shall stand up in the  
judgement with this generation, and shall condemn it: for they re-  
pent<sup>ed</sup> at the preaching of Jonah; and behold, <sup>3</sup>a greater than Jonah  
42 is here. The queen of the south shall rise up in the judgement with  
this generation, and shall condemn it: for she came from the ends of  
the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon; and behold, <sup>3</sup>a greater than  
43 Solomon is here. But the unclean spirit, when <sup>4</sup>he is gone out of the  
man, passeth through waterless places, seeking rest, and findeth it  
44 not. Then <sup>4</sup>he saith, I will return into my house whence I came out;  
and when <sup>4</sup>he is come, <sup>4</sup>he findeth it empty, swept, and garnished.  
45 Then goeth <sup>4</sup>he, and taketh with <sup>4</sup>himself seven other spirits more  
evil than <sup>4</sup>himself, and they enter in and dwell there: and the last  
state of that man becometh worse than the first. Even so shall it be  
also unto this evil generation.

1. Or, *Teacher*. 2. Gr. *sea-monster*. 3. Gr. *more than*. 4. Or, *it*. 5. Or, *itself*.

§ 50. CHRIST'S MOTHER AND BRETHREN.

Same day. Galilee.

Matt. 12:46-50.

Mark 3:31-35.

Luke 8:19-21.

<p>46 While he was yet speaking to the mul- titudes, behold, his mother and his bre- thren stood without, seeking to speak to 47 him. <sup>1</sup>And one said unto him, Behold,</p>	<p>31 And there come his mother and his brethren; and stand- ing without, they sent unto him, call- 32 ing him. And a mul- titude was sitting</p>	<p>19 And there came to him his mother and brethren, and they could not come at him for the crowd. 20 And it was told him, Thy mother and thy</p>
--	---	---

Matt. 12:46-50.

thy mother and thy brethren stand without, seeking to speak to thee.

48 But he answered and said unto him that told him, Who is my mother? and who are my  
49 brethren? And he stretched forth his hand towards his disciples, and said, Behold, my mother and my brethren!  
50 For whosoever shall do the will of my Father which is in heaven, he is my brother, and sister, and mother.

Mark 3:31-35.

about him; and they say unto him, Behold, thy mother and thy brethren without seek for thee. And he answered them, and saith, Who is my mother and my brethren?

34 And looking round on them which sat round about him, he saith, Behold, my mother and my brethren!  
35 For whosoever shall do the will of God,

the same is my brother, and sister, and mother.

Luke 8:19-21.

brethren stand without, desiring to see thee.

21 But he answered and said unto them,

My mother and my brethren are these which hear the word of God, and do it.

1. Some ancient authorities omit ver. 47.

### § 51. THE FIRST GREAT GROUP OF PARABLES.\*

Same day. Beside the Sea of Galilee.

Matt. 13:1-3.

1 On that day went Jesus out of the house, and sat by the  
2 sea side. And there were gathered unto him great multitudes, so that he entered into a boat, and sat; and all the multitude stood on  
3 the beach. And he spake to them many things in parables, saying,

Mark 4:1,2.

1 And again he began to teach by the sea side. And there is gathered unto him a very great multitude, so that he entered into a boat, and sat in the sea; and all the multitude were by the sea on the land.  
2 And he taught them many things in parables, and said unto them in his teaching, Hearken:

Luke 8:4.

4 And when a great multitude came together, and they of every city resorted unto him,

he spake by a parable:

\*We have met various *separate* parables heretofore, but here is a *group* of eight. Two other great groups will occur hereafter, one group given in Luke only, §81-83, and the last group during the last week of our Lord's public ministry, §109.

(a) Parable of the Sower.

Matt. 13:3-23.

3 Behold, the sower went forth to sow;  
4 and as he sowed, some *seeds* fell by the way side, and the birds came and devoured them; and others fell upon the rocky places, where they had not much earth: and straightway they sprang up, because they had no deepness of earth:  
6 and when the sun was risen, they were scorched; and because they had no root, they withered away. And others fell upon the thorns; and the thorns grew up, and choked them:  
8 and others fell upon the good ground, and yielded fruit, some a hundredfold, some sixty, some thirty.

9 He that hath ears<sup>1</sup>, let him hear.

10 And the disciples came, and said unto him, Why speakest thou unto them in parables?

11 And he 11 answered and said unto them, Unto you it is given to know the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven, but to them it is not 12 given. For whoso-

Mark 4:3-25.

3 Behold, the sower went forth to sow; and it came to pass, as he sowed, some *seed* fell by the way side, and the birds came and devoured 5 it. And other fell on the rocky *ground*, where it had not much earth: and straightway it sprang up, because it had no deepness 6 of earth: and when the sun was risen, it was scorched; and because it had no root, it withered away. And other fell 7 among the thorns, and the thorns grew up, and choked it, and it yielded no 8 fruit. And others fell into the good ground, and yielded fruit, growing up and increasing; and brought forth, thirtyfold, and sixtyfold, and a hundredfold.

9 And he said, Who hath ears to hear, let him hear.

10 And when he was alone, they that were about him with the twelve asked of him the parables.

And he 10 said unto them, Unto you is given the mystery of the kingdom of God: but unto them that are without, all things are done in parables:

Luke 8:5-18.

5 The sower went forth to sow his seed: and as he sowed, some fell by the way side; and it was trodden under foot, and the birds of the heaven devoured it. And 6 other fell on the rock; and as soon as it grew, it withered away, because it had no moisture.

7 And other fell amidst the thorns; and the thorns grew with it, 8 and choked it. And other fell into the good ground, and grew, and brought forth fruit a hundredfold. As he said these things, he cried,

He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

9 And his disciples asked him what this parable might be.

10 And he said, Unto you it is given to know the mysteries of the kingdom of God: but to the rest in parables;



Matt. 13:3-23.

Mark 4:3-25.

Luke 8:5-18.

- ever hath, to him shall be given, and he shall have abundance; but whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken away even that which he
- 13 hath. Therefore speak I to them in parables; because seeing they see not, and hearing they hear not, neither do they understand.
- 12 that seeing they may see, and not perceive; and hearing they may hear, and not understand; lest haply they should turn again, and it should be forgiven them.\*
- that seeing they may not see, and hearing they may not understand.
- 14 And unto them is fulfilled the prophecy of Isaiah, which saith, By hearing ye shall hear, and shall in no wise understand; And seeing ye shall see, and shall in no wise perceive:
- 15 For this people's heart is waxed gross, And their ears are dull of hearing, And their eyes they have closed; Lest haply they should perceive with their eyes, And hear with their ears, And understand with their heart, And should turn again, And I should heal them.
- 16 But blessed are your eyes, for they see; and your ears, for they hear.
- 17 For verily I say unto you, that many prophets and righteous men desired to see the things which ye see, and saw them not; and to hear the things which ye hear, and heard them not.
- 13 And he saith unto them, Know ye not this parable? and how shall ye know all the parables?
- 11 Now the parable is this: The seed is the word of God. And those by the way side are they that have heard;
- 14 The sower soweth the word. And these are they by the way side, where the word is sown; and when they have heard, straightway cometh Satan, and taketh away the word which hath been sown in
- 15 the word. And these are they by the way side, where the word is sown; and when they have heard, straightway cometh Satan, and taketh away the word which hath been sown in
- 16 them. And these in like manner are they
- 18 Hear then ye the parable of the sower. When any one heareth the word of the kingdom, and understandeth it not,
- 12 word of God. And those by the way side are they that have heard;
- 13 then cometh the evil one, and snatcheth away that which hath been sown in his heart. This is he that was sown by the
- 14 then cometh the devil, and taketh away the word from their heart, that they may not believe and be saved.

\*Observe that this was said just after the blasphemous accusation of league with Beelzebub (2 48), on the same day (Matt. 13:1).



Matt. 13:3-23.

20 way side. And he that was sown upon the rocky places, this is he that heareth the word, and straightway with joy receiveth it; yet hath he not root in himself, but endureth for a while; and when tribulation or persecution ariseth because of the word, straightway he stumbleth.

22 And he that was sown among the thorns, this is he that heareth the word; and the care of the <sup>2</sup>world, and the deceitfulness of riches,

choke the word, and he becometh unfruitful.

23 And he that was sown upon the good ground, this is he that heareth the word, and understandeth it: who verily beareth fruit, and bringeth forth, some a hundredfold, some sixty, some thirty.

Mark 4:3-25.

that are sown upon the rocky *places*, who, when they have heard the word, straightway receive it with joy; and they have no root in themselves, but endure for a while; then, when tribulation or persecution ariseth because of the word, straightway they stumble.

18 And others are they that are sown among the thorns; these are they that have heard the word, and the cares of the <sup>2</sup>world, and the deceitfulness of riches, and the lusts of other things entering in, choke the word, and it becometh unfruitful.

20 And those are they that were sown upon the good ground; such as hear the word, and accept it, and bear fruit, thirtyfold, and sixtyfold, and a hundredfold.

Luke 8:5-18.

13 And those on the rock *are* they which, when they have heard, receive the word with joy; and these have no root, which for a while believe, and in time of temptation fall away.

14 And that which fell among the thorns, these are they that have heard, and as they go on their way they are choked with cares and riches and pleasures of *this* life, and bring no fruit to perfection.

15 And that in the good ground, these are such as in an honest and good heart, having heard the word, hold it fast, and bring forth fruit with patience.

Mark 4:21-25.

21 And he said unto them, Is the lamp brought to be put under the bushel, or under the bed, and not to be put on the stand?

22 For there is nothing hid, save that it should be manifested; neither was *anything* made secret, but that it should come to light. If any man hath ears to hear, let him hear.

24 And he said unto them, Take heed what ye hear: with what measure ye mete it shall be measured unto you: and more

Luke 8:16-18.

16 And no man, when he hath lighted a lamp, covereth it with a vessel, or putteth it under a bed; but putteth it on a stand, that they which enter in may see the light. For nothing is hid, that shall not be made manifest; nor *anything* secret, that shall not be known and come to light.

18 Take heed therefore how ye hear:

Mark 4:21-25.

25 shall be given unto you. For he that hath, to him shall be given: and he that hath not, from him shall be taken away even that which he hath.

Luke 8:16-18.

for whosoever hath, to him shall be given, and whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken away even that which he <sup>3</sup>thinketh he hath.

1. Some ancient authorities add here, and in ver. 43, *to hear*: as in Mark 4:9; Luke 8:8. 2. Or, *age*. 3. Or, *seemeth to have*.

## (b) Parable of the Seed growing of itself.

Mark 4:26-29.

26 And he said, So is the kingdom of God, as if a man should cast seed  
27 upon the earth; and should sleep and rise night and day, and the seed  
28 should spring up and grow, he knoweth not how. The earth <sup>1</sup>beareth  
fruit of herself; first the blade, then the ear, then the full corn in the  
29 ear. But when the fruit <sup>2</sup>is ripe, straightway he <sup>3</sup>putteth forth the  
sickle, because the harvest is come.

1. Or, *yieldeth*. 2. Or, *alloweth*. 3. Or, *sendeth forth*.

## (c) Parable of the Tares.

Matt. 13:24-30.

24 Another parable set he before them, saying, The kingdom of hea-  
25 ven is likened unto a man that sowed good seed in his field: but while  
men slept, his enemy came and sowed <sup>1</sup>tares also among the wheat,  
26 and went away. But when the blade sprang up, and brought forth  
27 fruit, then appeared the tares also. And the <sup>2</sup>servants of the house-  
holder came and said unto him, Sir, didst thou not sow good seed in  
28 thy field? whence then hath it tares? And he said unto them, <sup>3</sup>An  
enemy hath done this. And the <sup>2</sup>servants say unto him, Wilt thou  
29 then that we go and gather them up? But he saith, Nay; lest haply  
30 while ye gather up the tares, ye root up the wheat with them. Let  
both grow together until the harvest: and in the time of the harvest  
I will say to the reapers, Gather up first the tares, and bind them in  
bundles to burn them: but gather the wheat into my barn.

1. Or, *darnel*. 2. Gr. *bondservants*. 3. Gr. *A man that is an enemy*.

## (d) Parables of the Mustard Seed and the Leaven. (Comp. § 88.)

Matt 13:31-35.

Mark 4:30-34.

31 Another parable set he before them, saying, The kingdom of  
heaven is like unto a grain of 30 And he said, How shall we liken  
the kingdom of God? or in what  
31 parable shall we set it forth? <sup>1</sup>It

Matt. 13:31-35.

mustard seed, which a man took,  
32 and sowed in his field: which indeed is less than all seeds: but when it is grown, it is greater than the herbs, and becometh a tree, so that the birds of the heaven come and lodge in the branches thereof.

33 Another parable spake he unto them; The kingdom of heaven is like unto leaven, which a woman took, and hid in three <sup>1</sup>measures of meal, till it was all leavened.

34 All these things spake Jesus in parables unto the multitudes; and without a parable spake he  
35 nothing unto them: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken <sup>2</sup>by the prophet, saying,

I will open my mouth in parables;

I will utter things hidden from the foundation <sup>3</sup>of the world.

1. The word in the Greek denotes the Hebrew seah, a measure containing nearly a peck and a half. 2. Or, *through*. 3. Many ancient authorities omit *of the world*.  
4. Gr. *As unto*.

(e) Parable of the Tares explained, and similar Parable of the Net added. Parables of the Hid Treasure, and the Pearl of Great Price.

Matt. 13:36-53.

36 Then he left the multitudes, and went into the house: and his disciples came unto him, saying, Explain unto us the parable of the tares  
37 of the field. And he answered and said, He that soweth the good seed  
38 is the Son of man; and the field is the world; and the good seed, these  
39 are the sons of the kingdom; and the tares are the sons of the evil one; and the enemy that sowed them is the devil: and the harvest is <sup>1</sup>the  
40 end of the world; and the reapers are angels. As therefore the tares are gathered up and burned with fire; so shall it be in the end of the  
41 world. The Son of man shall send forth his angels, and they shall gather out of his kingdom all things that cause stumbling, and them  
42 that do iniquity, and shall cast them into the furnace of fire: there  
43 shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth. Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father. He that hath ears, let him hear.

44 The kingdom of heaven is like unto a treasure hidden in the field; which a man found, and hid; and <sup>2</sup>in his joy he goeth and selleth all that he hath, and buyeth that field.

Mark 4:30-34.

is like a grain of mustard seed, which, when it is sown upon the earth, though it be less than all the seeds that are upon the earth,  
32 yet when it is sown, groweth up, and becometh greater than all the herbs, and putteth out great branches; so that the birds of the heaven can lodge under the shadow thereof.

33 And with many such parables spake he the word unto them, as  
34 they were able to hear it: and without a parable spake he not unto them: but privately to his disciples he expounded all things.

Matt. 13:36-53.

- 45 Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a man that is a merchant  
 46 seeking goodly pearls: and having found one pearl of great price, he  
 went and sold all that he had, and bought it.  
 47 Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a <sup>3</sup>net, that was cast into  
 48 the sea, and gathered of every kind: which, when it was filled, they  
 drew up on the beach; and they sat down, and gathered the good into  
 49 vessels, but the bad they cast away. So shall it be in <sup>1</sup>the end of the  
 world: the angels shall come forth, and sever the wicked from among  
 50 the righteous, and shall cast them into the furnace of fire: there shall  
 be the weeping and gnashing of teeth.  
 51 Have ye understood all these things? They say unto him, Yea.  
 52 And he said unto them, Therefore every scribe who hath been made  
 a disciple to the kingdom of heaven is like unto a man that is a house-  
 holder, which bringeth forth out of his treasure things new and old.  
 53 And it came to pass, when Jesus had finished these parables, he  
 departed thence.

1. Or, *the consummation of the age.* 2. Or, *for joy thereof.* 3. Gr. *drag-net.*

## § 52. IN CROSSING THE LAKE, JESUS STILLS THE TEMPEST.

Same day. Sea of Galilee.

Matt. 8:18,23-27.

Mark 4:35-41.

Luke 8:22-25.

- |   |  |   |
|---|--|---|
| <p>18 Now when Jesus<br/>         saw great multitudes<br/>         about him, he gave<br/>         commandment to de-<br/>         part unto the other<br/>         side.</p> <p>23 And when he was<br/>         entered into a boat,<br/>         his disciples follow-<br/>         ed him.</p> <p>24 And behold,<br/>         there arose a great<br/>         tempest in the sea,<br/>         insomuch that the<br/>         boat was covered<br/>         with the waves: but<br/>         he was asleep. And<br/>         they came to him,</p> | <p>35 And on that day,<br/>         when even was come,<br/>         he saith unto them,<br/>         Let us go over unto<br/>         the other side.</p> <p>36 And leaving the<br/>         multitude, they take<br/>         him with them, even<br/>         as he was, in the<br/>         boat. And other<br/>         boats were with him.</p> <p>37 And there ariseth<br/>         a great storm of<br/>         wind, and the waves<br/>         beat into the boat,<br/>         insomuch that the<br/>         boat was now filling.</p> <p>38 And he himself was<br/>         in the stern, asleep</p> | <p>22 Now it came to<br/>         pass on one of those<br/>         days, that he entered<br/>         into a boat, himself<br/>         and his disciples;<br/>         and he said unto<br/>         them, Let us go over<br/>         to the other side of<br/>         the lake: and they<br/>         23 launched forth. But<br/>         as they sailed he fell<br/>         asleep: and there<br/>         came down a storm<br/>         of wind on the lake:<br/>         and they were filling<br/> <i>with water</i>, and were<br/>         in jeopardy.</p> |
|---|--|---|



Matt. 8:18,23-27.

and awoke him, saying, Save, Lord; we perish.

26 And he saith unto them, Why are ye fearful, O ye of little faith? Then he arose, and rebuked the winds and the sea; and there was a great calm.

27 And the men marvelled, saying, What manner of man is this, that even the winds and the sea obey him?

Mark 4:35-41.

on the cushion: and they awake him, and say unto him, <sup>2</sup>Master, carest thou not that we perish? And he awoke, and rebuked the wind, and said unto the sea, Peace, be still. And the wind ceased, and there was a great calm. And he said unto them, Why are ye fearful? have ye not yet faith?

41 And they feared exceedingly, and said one to another, Who then is this, that even the wind and the sea obey him?

Luke 8:22-25.

24 And they came to him, and awoke him, saying, Master, master, we perish, And he awoke, and rebuked the wind and the raging of the water: and they ceased, and there was a calm.

25 And he said unto them, Where is your faith?

And being afraid they marvelled, saying one to another, Who then is this, that he commandeth even the winds and the water, and they obey him?

‡ 53. BEYOND THE LAKE, HE HEALS TWO GADARENE \*DEMONIACS.

Gerasa (Khersa).

Matt. 8:28-34.

28 And when he was come to the other side into the country of the Gadarenes, there met him two <sup>1</sup>possessed with devils, coming forth out of the tombs, exceeding fierce, so that no man could pass by that way.

Mark 5:1-20.

1 And they came to the other side of the sea, into the country of the Gerasenes. 2 And when he was come out of the boat, straightway there met him out of the tombs a man with an unclean spirit, who had his dwelling in the tombs: and no man

Luke 8:26-39.

26 And they arrived at the country of the <sup>4</sup>Gerasenes, which is over against Galilee. 27 And when he was come forth upon the land, there met him a certain man out of the city, who had <sup>2</sup>devils; and for a long time he had worn no clothes, and abode not in *any* house, but

\*The long famous instance of "discrepancy" as to the *place* in this narrative has been cleared up in recent years by the decision of textual critics that the correct text in Luke is Gerasenes, as well as in Mark, and by Dr. Thomson's discovery of a ruin on the lake shore, named Khersa (Gerasa). If this village was included (a very natural supposition) in the district belonging to the city of Gadara, some miles south-eastward, then the locality could be described as either in the country of the Gadarenes, or in the country of the Gerasenes. The narratives cannot be said to contradict each other and thus lack credibility, when the apparent contradiction can be explained by a thoroughly natural and reasonable supposition. We do not need to prove, in any such case, that the supposition is certainly true.—Matthew mentions two demoniacs, Mark and Luke describe one, who was probably the prominent and leading one. They do not say there was *only* one. So in ‡102.



Matt. 8:28-34.

29 And behold, they cried out, saying, What have we to do with thee, thou Son of God? art thou come hither to torment us before the time?

30 Now there was afar off from them a herd of many

Mark 5:1-20.

could any more bind him, no, not with a  
4 chain; because that he had been often bound with fetters and chains, and the chains had been rent asunder by him, and the fetters broken in pieces: and no man had strength to tame  
5 him. And always, night and day, in the tombs and in the mountains, he was crying out, and cutting himself with  
6 stones. And when he saw Jesus from afar, he ran and wor-  
7 shipped him; and crying out with a loud voice, he saith, What have I to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of the Most High God? I adjure thee by God, torment  
8 me not. For he said unto him, Come forth, thou unclean spirit, out of the man.

9 And he asked him, What is thy name? And he saith unto him, My name is Legion; for we are  
10 many. And he besought him much that he would not send them away out  
11 of the country. Now there was there on the mountain side a

Luke 8:26-39.  
in the tombs.

28 And when he saw Jesus, he cried out, and fell down before him, and with a loud voice said, What have I to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of the Most High God? I beseech thee, torment  
29 me not. For he commanded the unclean spirit to come out of the man. For oftentimes it had seized him: and he was kept under guard, and bound with chains and fetters; and breaking the bands asunder, he was driven of the  
30 devil into the deserts. And Jesus asked him, What is thy name? And he said, Legion; for many devils were entered into him.  
31 And they intreated him that he would not command them to depart into the  
32 abyss. Now there was there a herd of

Matt. 8:28-34.

31 swine feeding. And the <sup>2</sup>devils besought him, saying, If thou cast us out, send us away into the herd  
32 of swine. And he said unto them, Go. And they came out, and went into the swine: and behold, the whole herd rushed down the steep into the sea, and perished in the waters.

33 And they that fed them fled, and went away into the city, and told everything, and what was befallen to them that were <sup>1</sup>possessed with  
34 devils. And behold, all the city came out to meet Jesus:

and  
when they saw him, they besought him that he would depart from their borders.

Mark 5:1-20.

great herd of swine  
12 feeding. And they besought him, saying, Send us into the swine, that we may enter into them.  
13 And he gave them leave. And the unclean spirits came out, and entered into the swine: and the herd rushed down the steep into the sea, *in number* about two thousand; and they were choked in  
14 the sea. And they that fed them fled, and told it in the city, and in the country. And they came to see what it was that had come to  
15 pass. And they come to Jesus, and behold <sup>3</sup>him that was possessed with devils sitting, clothed and in his right mind, *even* he that had the legion: and they  
16 were afraid. And they that saw it declared unto them how it befell <sup>3</sup>him that was possessed with devils, and concerning the swine.  
17 And they began to beseech them to depart from their borders. And as he was entering into the boat, he that had been possessed with <sup>2</sup>devils besought him that he might be  
19 with him. And he suffered him not, but saith unto him, Go to thy house unto thy friends, and

Luke 8:26-39.

swine feeding on the mountain: and they intreated him that he would give them leave to enter into them. And he gave them leave.  
33 And the <sup>2</sup>devils came out from the man, and entered into the swine: and the herd rushed down the steep into the lake and were  
34 choked. And when they that fed them saw what had come to pass, they fled, and told it in the city and in the country.  
35 And they went out to see what had come to pass: and they came to Jesus, and found the man, from whom the <sup>2</sup>devils were gone out, sitting, clothed and in his right mind, at the feet of Jesus: and they were afraid.  
36 And they that saw it told them how he that was possessed with <sup>2</sup>devils was  
37 <sup>1</sup>made whole. And all the people of the country of the <sup>4</sup>Ger-senes round about asked him to depart from them; for they were holden with great fear: and he entered into a boat,  
38 and returned. But the man from whom the <sup>2</sup>devils were gone out prayed him that he might be with him: but he sent him  
39 away, saying, Return to thy house, and

Mark 5:1-20.

tell them how great things the Lord hath done for thee, and *how* he had mercy on thee. And he went his way, and began to publish in Decapolis how great things Jesus had done for him: and all men did marvel.

Luke 8:26-39.

declare how great things God hath done for thee. And he went his way, publishing throughout the whole city how great things Jesus had done for him.

1. Or, *demoniacs*. 2. Gr. *demons*. 3. Or, *the demoniac*. 4. Many ancient authorities read *Gergesenes*; others *Gadarenes*. 5. Or, *of a long time*. 6. Gr. *demon*. 7. Or, *saved*.

# § 54. RETURNING, HE VISITS NAZARETH,\* AND IS AGAIN REJECTED.

(Compare § 26.)

Matt. 9:1; 13:54-58.

Mark 5:21; 6:1-6.

Luke 8:40.

1 And he entered into a boat, and crossed over and came into his own city.

21 And when Jesus had crossed over again in the boat unto the other side, a great multitude was gathered unto him: and he was by the sea.

40 And as Jesus returned, the multitude welcomed him; for they were all waiting for him.

13:54-58.

6:1-6.

54 And coming into his own coun-

try he taught them in their synagogue, insomuch that they were astonished, and said, Whence hath this man this wisdom, and these mighty works?

1 And he went out from thence; and he cometh into his own country; and his disciples follow him. And when the sabbath was come, he began to teach in the synagogue: and many hearing him were astonished, saying, Whence hath this man these things? and, What is the wisdom that is given unto this man, and what mean such mighty works wrought by his hands? Is not this the carpenter, the son of Mary, and brother of James, and Joses, and Judas, and Simon? and are not his sisters here with

55 Is not this the carpenter's son? is not his mother called Mary? and his brethren, James, and Joseph,

\*There is no sufficient occasion to identify this visit to Nazareth with that described by Luke in § 26. That was at the very beginning of the great ministry in Galilee, and this is near its close. The details are quite different. It is perfectly natural that after a long interval he should give the Nazarenes another opportunity to hear his teaching, and to witness miracles, which he would not work for them when demanded (§ 26), but now voluntarily works in a few cases, so far as their now wonderful unbelief left it appropriate.

Matt. 13:54-58.

56 and Simon, and Judas? And his sisters, are they not all with us?  
57 Whence then hath this man all these things? And they were<sup>2</sup>offended in him. But Jesus said unto them, a prophet is not without honour, save in his own country, and in his own house.  
58 And he did not many <sup>1</sup>mighty works there because of their unbelief.

1. Gr. *powers*. 2. Gr. *caused to stumble*.  
4. Gr. *power*.

Mark 6:1-6.

us? And they were <sup>2</sup>offended in  
4 him. And Jesus said unto them, A prophet is not without honour, save in his own country, and among his own kin, and in  
5 his own house. And he could there do no <sup>4</sup>mighty work, save that he laid his hands upon a few  
6 sick folk, and healed them. And he marvelled because of their unbelief.

3. Some ancient authorities insert *the*.

‡ 55. JESUS YET AGAIN JOURNEYS ABOUT GALILEE (COMP. ‡ 30 AND 47), AND NOW SENDS THE TWELVE BEFORE HIM (COMP. ‡ 80), AFTER INSTRUCTING THEM.

Matt. 9:35 to 11:1.

35 And Jesus went about all the cities and the villages\* teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and healing all manner of disease  
36 and all manner of sickness. But when he saw the multitudes, he was moved with compassion for them, because they were distressed and scattered, as sheep not  
37 having a shepherd. Then saith he unto his disciples, the harvest truly is plenteous, but the  
38 labourers are few. Pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he send forth labourers into his harvest.

Mark 6:6-13.

6 And he went round about the villages teaching.

Matt. 10:1-42.

Mark 6:7-13.

Luke 9:1-6.

1 And he called unto him his twelve disciples, and gave them authority over unclean spirits, to cast them out, and to heal all manner of disease and all manner of sickness.

7 And he called unto him the twelve, and began to send them forth by two and two; and he gave them authority over the unclean spirits;  
8 and he charged them

1 And he called the twelve together, and gave them power and authority over all <sup>3</sup>devils, and to cure diseases.  
2 And he sent them forth to preach the kingdom of God, and

\* This is certainly a *second*, and probably a *third* journey about Galilee. See on ‡30. Dwell on Matt. 9:35 and 11:1 (end of this section), and try to realize the extent of the Saviour's work in teaching and healing. He "crowded into three short years actions and labours of love that might have adorned a century." (Ro. Hall).

Matt. 10:1-42.

2 Now the names of the twelve apostles are these: The first, Simon, who is called Peter, and Andrew his brother; James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother;  
 3 er; Philip, and Bartholomew; Thomas, and Matthew the publican; James the son of Alphæus, and  
 4 Thaddæus; Simon the <sup>1</sup>Cananæan, and Judas Iscariot, who also <sup>2</sup>betrayed him.  
 5 These twelve Jesus sent forth, and charged them, saying, Go not into *any* way of the Gentiles, and enter not into any city of the Samaritans: but go rather  
 6 to the lost sheep of the house of Israel.  
 7 And as ye go, preach, saying, The kingdom of heaven is at  
 8 hand. Heal the sick, raise the dead, cleanse the lepers, cast out <sup>3</sup>devils: freely ye received, freely  
 9 give. Get you no gold, nor silver, nor brass in your <sup>4</sup>purses;  
 10 no wallet for *your* journey, neither two coats, nor shoes, nor staff: for the labourer is worthy of his  
 11 food. And into whatsoever city or village ye shall enter, search out who in it is worthy; and  
 12 there abide till ye go forth. And as ye enter into the house,  
 13 salute it. And if

Mark 6:7-13.

that they should take nothing for *their* journey, save a staff only; no bread, no wallet, no <sup>17</sup>money in their  
 9 <sup>18</sup>purse; but *to go* shod with sandals: and, *said he*, put not on two coats.

10 And he said unto them, Where-soever ye enter into a house, there abide

Luke 9:1-6.

to heal <sup>19</sup>the sick.  
 3 And he said unto them,

Take nothing for your journey, neither staff, nor wallet, nor bread, nor money; neither have two coats.

4 And into whatsoever house ye enter, there abide, and thence depart. And as many



Matt. 10:1-42.

the house be worthy,  
let your peace come  
upon it; but if it be  
not worthy, let your  
peace return to you.

14 And whosoever shall  
not receive you, nor  
hear your words, as  
ye go forth out of  
that house or that  
city, shake off the  
dust of your feet.

15 Verily, I say unto  
you, It shall be more  
tolerable for the land  
of Sodom and Go-  
morrah in the day of  
judgement, than for  
that city.

16 Behold, I send you forth as sheep in the midst of wolves: be ye  
17 therefore wise as serpents, and <sup>6</sup>harmless as doves. But beware of  
men: for they will deliver you up to councils, and in their synagogues  
18 they will scourge you; yea and before governors and kings shall ye be  
brought for my sake, for a testimony to them and to the Gentiles.  
19 But when they deliver you up, be not anxious how or what ye shall  
speak: for it shall be given you in that hour what ye shall speak.  
20 For it is not ye that speak, but the Spirit of your Father that speak-  
21 eth in you. And brother shall deliver up brother to death, and the  
father his child: and children shall rise up against parents, and <sup>8</sup>cause  
22 them to be put to death. And ye shall be hated of all men for my  
name's sake: but he that endureth to the end, the same shall be saved.  
23 But when they persecute you in this city, flee into the next: for verily  
I say unto you, Ye shall not have gone through the cities of Israel,  
till the Son of man be come.

24 A disciple is not above his <sup>7</sup>master, nor a <sup>8</sup>servant above his lord.  
25 It is enough for the disciple that he be as his <sup>7</sup>master, and the <sup>8</sup>servant  
as his lord. If they have called the master of the house <sup>9</sup>Beelzebub,  
26 how much more shall they call them of his household! Fear them not  
therefore: for there is nothing covered, that shall not be revealed;  
27 and hid, that shall not be known. What I tell you in the darkness,  
speak ye in the light: and what ye hear in the ear, proclaim upon the  
28 housetops. And be not afraid of them which kill the body, but are  
not able to kill the soul: but rather fear him which is able to destroy  
29 both soul and body in <sup>10</sup>hell. Are not two sparrows sold for a farth-  
ing? and not one of them shall fall on the ground without your Father:  
30 but the very hairs of your head are all numbered. Fear not, there-  
31 fore; ye are of more value than many sparrows. Every one therefore  
32 who shall confess <sup>11</sup>me before men, <sup>12</sup>him will I also confess before my  
33 Father which is in heaven. But whosoever shall deny me before  
men, him will I also deny before my Father which is in heaven.

34 Think not that I came to <sup>13</sup>send peace on the earth: I came not to  
35 <sup>13</sup>send peace, but a sword. For I came to set a man at variance against

Mark 6:7-13.

till ye depart thence.  
11 And whatsoever  
place

shall not re-  
ceive you, and they  
hear you not, as ye  
go forth thence,  
shake off the dust  
that is under your  
feet for a testimony  
unto them.

Luke 9:1-6.

as receive you not,  
when ye depart from  
that city,  
shake off  
the dust from your  
feet for a testimony  
against them.

Matt. 10:1-42.

his father, and the daughter against her mother, and the daughter in law against her mother in law: and a man's foes *shall be* of his own household. He that loveth father or mother more than me is not worthy of me: and he that loveth son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me. And he that doth not take his cross and follow after me, is not worthy of me. He that <sup>14</sup>findeth his <sup>15</sup>life shall lose it; and he that <sup>16</sup>loseth his <sup>15</sup>life for my sake shall find it.

He that receiveth you receiveth me, and he that receiveth me receiveth him that sent me. He that receiveth a prophet in the name of a prophet shall receive a prophet's reward; and he that receiveth a righteous man in the name of a righteous man shall receive a righteous man's reward. And whosoever shall give to drink unto one of these little ones a cup of cold water only, in the name of a disciple, verily I say unto you, he shall in no wise lose his reward.

Matt. 11:1.

Mark 6:12,13.

Luke 9:6.

1 And it came to pass, when Jesus had made an end of commanding his twelve disciples, he departed thence to teach and preach in their cities.

2 And they went out, and preached that *men* should repent. And they cast out many <sup>3</sup>devils, and anointed with oil many that were sick, and healed them.

6 And they departed, and went throughout the villages, preaching the gospel, and healing everywhere.

1. Or, Zealot. See Luke 6:15; Acts 1:13. 2. Or, *delivered him up*, and so always. 3. Gr. *demons*. 4. Gr. *girdles*. 5. Or. *simple*. 6. Or, *put them to death*. 7. Or, *teacher*. 8. Gr. *bondservant*. 9. Gr. *Beelzebul*: and so elsewhere. 10. Gr. *Gehenna*. 11. Gr. *in me*. 12. Gr. *in him*. 13. Gr. *cast*. 14. Or, *found*. 15. Or, *soul*. 16. Or, *lost*. 17. Gr. *brass*. 18. Gr. *girdle*. 19. Some ancient authorities omit *the sick*.

§56. HEROD ANTIPAS SUPPOSES JESUS TO BE JOHN THE BAPTIST RISEN, WHOM HE HAD BEHEADED.

Matt. 14:1-12.

Mark 6:14-29.

Luke 9:7-9.

1 At that season Herod the tetrarch heard the report concerning Jesus, and said unto his servants, This is John the Baptist: he is risen from the dead; and therefore do these powers work in him.

4 And king Herod heard <sup>\*</sup>thereof; for his name had become known: and <sup>1</sup>he said, John <sup>2</sup>the Baptist is risen from the dead, and therefore do these powers work in him. But others said, It is Elijah. And others said, *It is a prophet, even as*

7 Now Herod the tetrarch heard of all that was done: and he was much perplexed, because that it was said by some, that John was risen from the dead; and by some, that Elijah had appeared; and by others, that one of the old prophets

\* Mark's connection shows that Herod Antipas was impressed by the account of miracles which the disciples had wrought, as well as by those of Jesus himself.

Matt. 14:1-12.

Mark 6:14-29.

Luke 9:7-9.

- one of the prophets.
- 16 But Herod, when he heard *thereof*, said, John, whom I beheaded, he is risen.
- 3 For Herod had laid hold on John, and bound him, and put him in prison for the sake of Herodias, his brother Philip's wife.
- 17 For Herod himself had sent forth and laid hold upon John, and bound him in prison for the sake of Herodias, his brother Philip's wife: for he had married her. For John said unto Herod, It is not lawful for thee to have her.
- 4 For John said unto him, It is not lawful for thee to have thy brother's wife. And Herodias set herself against him, and desired to kill him; and she could not; for Herod feared John, knowing that he was a righteous man and a holy, and kept him safe. And when he heard him, he <sup>was</sup> much perplexed; and he heard him gladly.
- 5 And when he would have put him to death, he feared the multitude, because they counted him as a prophet.
- 21 And when a convenient day was come, that Herod on his birthday made a supper to his lords, and the <sup>high</sup> captains, and the chief men of Galilee: and when <sup>the</sup> daughter of Herodias herself came in and danced, <sup>she</sup> pleased Herod and them that sat at meat with him; and the king said unto the damsel, Ask of me whatsoever thou wilt, and I will give it thee. And he swore unto her, Whatsoever thou shalt ask of me, I will give it thee, unto the half of my kingdom. And she went out, and said unto her mother, What shall I ask? And she said, The head of John the Baptist.
- 6 But when Herod's birthday came, the daughter of Herodias danced in the midst, and pleased Herod.
- 22 And she came in straightway with haste unto the king, and asked, saying, I will that thou forthwith give me in a charger the head of John the Baptist. And the king was exceeding sorry; but for the sake of his oaths, and of them that sat at meat, he would not reject her.
- 7 Whereupon he promised with an oath to give her whatsoever she should ask. And she, being put forward by her mother, saith, Give me here in a charger the head of John the Baptist.
- 23 And straightway the king sent forth a soldier of his guard, and commanded to bring his head: and he went and beheaded him in the prison, and brought his head in a charger, and gave it to the damsel; and the damsel gave it to her mother. And when his disciples heard *thereof*, they came and took up his corpse, and laid it in a tomb.
- 8 And she, being put forward by her mother, saith, Give me here in a charger the head of John the Baptist.
- 9 And the king was grieved: but for the sake of his oaths, and of them which sat at meat with him, he commanded it to be given: and he sent, and beheaded John in the prison. And his head was brought in a charger, and given to the damsel: and she brought it to her mother. And his disciples came, and took up the corpse, and buried him; and they went and told Jesus.

1. Some ancient authorities read *they*. 2 *Gr. the Baptizer*. 3. Many ancient authorities read *did many things*. 4. *Or. military tribunes*. *Gr. chiliarch*. 5. Some ancient authorities read *his daughter Herodias*. 6. *Or, it*.

## PART V.

SEASON OF RETIREMENT INTO DISTRICTS AROUND  
GALILEE.

Six months, beginning\* a year before the Crucifixion, and thus probably from spring to autumn of A.D. 29 (or 28).

*Four separate withdrawals from Galilee are given, in § 57, 61, 62, 63-67. Notice that in every case he keeps out of Herod's territory, and in every case he goes to the mountains.*

§ 57. THE TWELVE RETURN, AND JESUS RETIRES WITH THEM BEYOND  
THE LAKE TO REST. FEEDING OF THE FIVE THOUSAND.

Matt. 14:13-21.	Mark 6:30-44.	Luke 9:10-17.	John 6:1-14.
	30 And the apostles gather themselves together unto Jesus; and they told him all things, whatsoever they had done, and whatsoever they had taught.	10 And the apostles, when they were returned, declared unto him what things they had done.	
	31 And he saith unto them, Come ye yourselves apart into a desert place, and rest a while. For there were many coming and going, and they had no leisure so much as to eat. And they went away in the boat to a desert place apart.		1 After these things Jesus went away to the other side of the sea of Galilee, which is the sea of Tiberias.
13 Now when Jesus heard it, he withdrew from thence in a boat, to a desert place apart.	32 as to eat. And they went away in the boat to a desert place apart.	And he took them, and withdrew apart to a city called Bethsaida.†	

\*This period begins just before the Passover (John 6:4), and extends to the Feast of Tabernacles (§ 73). He withdraws from the jealousy of Herod Antipas (§ 56), from the fanaticism of would be followers in Galilee (John 6:15), and the hostility of the Jewish rulers (§ 60). Leaving the hot shores of the Lake of Galilee, he spent the summer in mountain districts around, resting, and instructing the Twelve.

†The Bethsaida of Luke 9:10 was evidently the eastern Bethsaida, which the Tetrarch Philip had named Bethsaida Julias, while that of Mark 6:45 was the western Bethsaida, near Capernaum. The territory belonging to Bethsaida Julias would naturally extend some distance down the lake.



Matt. 14:13-21.

13 And when the multitudes heard thereof, they followed him 'on foot from the cities.

14 And he came forth, and saw a great multitude, and he had compassion on them, and healed their sick.

Mark 6:30-44.

And the people saw them going, and many knew them, and they ran there together 'on foot from all the cities, and outwent them. And he came forth and saw a great multitude, and he had compassion on them, because they were as sheep not having a shepherd, and he began to teach them many things.

15 And when even was come, the disciples came to him, saying,

The place is desert, and the time is already past; send the multitudes away, that they may go into the villages, and buy themselves food.

16 But Jesus said unto them, They have no need to go away; give ye them to eat.

35 And when the day was now far spent, his disciples came unto him, and said, The place is desert, and the day is now far spent; send them away that they may go into the country and villages round about, and buy themselves somewhat to eat. But he answered and said unto them, Give ye them to eat. And they say unto him, Shall we go and buy two hundred pennyworth of bread, and give them to eat?

38 And he saith

Luke 9:10-17.

But the multitudes perceiving it followed him: and he welcomed them, and spake to them of the kingdom of God, and them that had need of healing he healed.

And the day began to wear away; and the twelve came and said unto him, Send the multitude away, that they may go into the villages and country round about, and lodge, and get victuals: for we are here in a desert place. But he said unto them, Give ye them to eat.

John 6:1-14.

2 And a great multitude followed him, because they beheld the signs which he did on them that were sick. And Jesus went up into the mountain, and there he sat with his disciples.

4 Now the pass-over, the feast of the Jews, was at hand. 5 Jesus therefore lifting up his eyes, and seeing that a great multitude cometh unto him, saith unto Philip, Whence are we to buy bread, that these may eat? 6 And this he said to prove him: for he himself knew what he would do. Philip answered him, Two hundred pennyworth of bread is not sufficient for them, that every one may take a little.



- Matt. 14:13-21. 17 And they say unto him, We have here but five loaves, and 18 two fishes. And he said, Bring them hither 19 to me. And 39 he commanded the multitudes to sit down on the grass;
- Mark 6:30-44. unto them, How many loaves have ye? go and see. And when they knew, they say, Five, and two fishes. And 14 he commanded them that all should sit down by companies upon the green grass. 15 And they sat down in ranks, by hundreds, 16 and by fifties. 41 And he took the five loaves and the two fishes, and looking up to heaven, he blessed, and brake the loaves; and he gave to the disciples to set before them; and the two fishes divided he among them all. 42 And they did all eat, and were filled. 43 And they took up broken pieces, twelve basketfuls, and also of the fishes. And they that ate 14 the loaves were five thousand men.
- Luke 9:10-17. And they said, We have no more than five loaves and two fishes; except we should go and buy food for all this people. And he said unto his disciples, Make 10 them sit down in companies, about fifty each. And they did so, and made them all sit down. And he took the five loaves and the two fishes, 11 and looking up to heaven, he blessed them, and gave to the disciples to set before the multitude. And they did eat, and were all filled: and there was 12 taken up that which remained over to them of broken pieces, twelve baskets.
- John 6:1-14. 8 One of his disciples, Andrew, Simon Peter's brother, saith unto him, 9 There is a lad here, which hath five barley loaves, and two fishes: but what are these among so many? Jesus said, Make the people sit down. Now there was much grass in the place. So the men sat down, in number about five thousand. Jesus therefore took the loaves: and having given thanks, distributed to them that were set down; likewise also of the fishes as much as they would. 12 And when they were filled, he saith unto his disciples, Gather up the broken pieces which remain over, that nothing be lost. So they gathered them up, and filled twelve baskets with broken pieces from the five barley loaves, which remained over unto them that had

John 6:1-14.

14 eaten. When therefore the people saw the sign which he did, they said, This is of a truth the prophet that cometh into the world.

1. Or, *by land*. 2. Gr. *recline*. 3. The word in the Greek denotes a coin worth about seventeen cents. 4. Gr. *loaves*. 5. Some ancient authorities read *signs*.

§ 58. THE TWELVE TRY TO ROW BACK, AND JESUS COMES WALKING ON THE WATER.

Matt. 14:22-36.

Mark 6:45-56.

John 6:15-21.

22 And straightway he constrained the disciples to enter into the boat, and to go before him unto the other side, till he should send the multitudes away.

23 And after he had sent the multitudes away, he went up into the mountain apart to pray:

and when even was come, he was there alone.

24 But the boat was now in the midst of the sea, distressed by the waves; for the wind was contrary.

25 And in the fourth watch of the night he came unto them, walking upon the sea.

26 And when the disciples saw him walking on the sea, they were troubled, saying, It is an appa-

45 And straightway he constrained his disciples to enter into the boat, and to go before him unto the other side to Bethsaida, while he himself sendeth the multitude away.

46 And after he had taken leave of them, he departed into the mountain to pray.

47 And when even was come, the boat was in the midst of the sea, and he alone on the land.

48 And seeing them distressed in rowing, for the wind was contrary unto them, about the fourth watch of the night he cometh unto them, walking on the sea; and he would have passed by them: but they,

49 when they saw him walking on the sea, supposed that it was an apparition, and

15 Jesus therefore perceiving that they were about to come and take him by force, to make him king, withdrew again into the mountain himself alone.

16 And when evening came, his disciples went down unto the sea; and they entered into a boat, and were going over the sea unto Capernaum. And it was now dark, and Jesus had not yet come to them.

18 And the sea was rising by reason of a great wind that blew. When therefore they had rowed about five and twenty or thirty furlongs, they behold Jesus walking on the sea,

Matt. 14:22-36.

rition; and they  
cried out for fear.

27 But straightway Je-  
sus spake unto them,  
saying, Be of good  
cheer; it is I; be not  
28 afraid. And Peter

answered him, and  
said, Lord, if it be  
thou, bid me come  
unto thee upon the

29 waters. And he  
said, Come. And  
Peter went down  
from the boat, and  
walked upon the  
waters, <sup>to</sup> come to

30 Jesus. But when he  
saw the wind<sup>s</sup>, he  
was afraid, and be-  
ginning to sink, he  
cried out, saying,

31 Lord, save me. And  
immediately Jesus  
stretched forth his  
hand, and took hold  
of him, and saith un-  
to him, O thou of lit-  
tle faith, wherefore  
didst thou doubt?

32 And when they were  
gone up into the  
boat, the wind ceased.

33 And they that were  
in the boat worship-  
ped him, saying, Of  
a truth thou art the  
Son of God.

34 And when they  
crossed over, they  
came to the land, un-  
to Gennesaret.

Mark 6:45-56.

50 cried out: for they  
all saw him, and  
were troubled. But  
he straightway  
spake with them,  
and saith unto them,  
Be of good cheer: it  
is I; be not afraid.

51 And he went up un-  
to them into the  
boat; and the wind  
ceased: and they  
were sore amazed in  
52 themselves; for they  
understood not con-  
cerning the loaves,  
but their heart was  
hardened.

53 And when they  
had <sup>4</sup>crossed over,  
they came to the  
land unto Gennesa-  
ret, and moored to  
54 the shore. And  
when they were  
come out of the boat,  
straightway *the peo-*  
55 *ple* knew him, and  
ran about that whole

John 6:15-21.

and drawing nigh  
unto the boat: and  
they were afraid.

20 But he saith unto  
them, It is I; be not  
afraid.

21 They were  
willing therefore to  
receive him into the  
boat:

and straightway  
the boat was at the  
land whither they  
were going.

Matt. 14:22-36.

Mark 6:45-56.

35

And

56

when the men of that place knew him, they sent unto all that region round about, and brought unto him all that were sick; and they besought him that they might only touch the border of his garment: and as many as touched were made whole.

region, and began to carry about on their beds those that were sick, where they heard he was. And whosoever he entered, into villages, or into cities, or into the country, they laid the sick in the marketplaces, and besought him that they might touch if it were but the border of his garment: and as many as touched him were made whole.

1. Some ancient authorities read *was many furlongs distant from the land*. 2. Some ancient authorities read *and came*. 3. Many ancient authorities add *strong*. 4. Or, *crossed over to the land, they came unto Gennesaret*. 5. Or, *it*.

§ 59. HE DISCOURSES IN THE CROWDED SYNAGOGUE AT CAPERNAUM, ON EATING SPIRITUAL FOOD, AND ON THE NECESSITY OF A DIVINE TEACHING AND DRAWING IN ORDER TO TRUE DISCIPLESHIP. (COMP. § 92.)

John 6:22-71.

22 On the morrow the multitude which stood on the other side of the sea saw that there was none other <sup>1</sup>boat there, save one, and that Jesus entered not with his disciples into the boat, but *that* his disciples went away alone (howbeit there came <sup>2</sup>boats from Tiberias nigh unto the place where they ate the bread after the Lord had given thanks): 23 when the multitude therefore saw that Jesus was not there, neither his disciples, they themselves got into the <sup>2</sup>boats, and came to Capernaum, seeking Jesus. And when they found him on the other side of the sea, they said unto him, Rabbi, when camest thou hither? Jesus answered them and said, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Ye seek me, not because ye saw signs, but because ye ate of the loaves and were 24 filled. Work not for the meat which perisheth, but for the meat which abideth unto eternal life, which the Son of man shall give unto 25 you: for him the Father, *even* God, hath sealed. They said therefore unto him, What must we do, that we may work the works of God? 26 Jesus answered and said unto them, This is the work of God, that ye believe on him whom <sup>3</sup>he hath sent. They said therefore unto him, What then doest thou for a sign, that we may see, and believe thee? 27 what workest thou? Our fathers ate the manna in the wilderness; as 28 it is written, He gave them bread out of heaven to eat. Jesus therefore said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, It was not Moses



John 6:22-71.

that gave you the bread out of heaven: but my Father giveth you the  
33 true bread out of heaven. For the bread of God is that which cometh  
34 down out of heaven, and giveth life unto the world. They said there-  
35 fore unto him, Lord, evermore give us this bread. Jesus said unto  
them, I am the bread of life: he that cometh to me shall not hunger;  
36 and he that believeth on me shall never thirst. But I said unto you,  
37 that ye have seen me, and yet believe not. All that which the  
Father giveth me shall come unto me; and him that cometh to me I will  
38 in no wise cast out. For I am come down from heaven, not to do  
39 mine own will, but the will of him that sent me. And this is the will  
of him that sent me, that of all that which he hath given me I should  
40 lose nothing, but should raise it up at the last day. For this is the  
will of my Father, that every one that beholdeth the Son, and be-  
lieveth on him, should have eternal life; and 'I will raise him up at  
the last day.

41 The Jews therefore murmured concerning him, because he said, I  
42 am the bread which came down out of heaven. And they said, Is not  
this Jesus, the son of Joseph, whose father and mother we know? how  
43 doth he now say, I am come down out of heaven? Jesus answered  
44 and said unto them, Murmur not among yourselves. No man can  
come to me, except the Father which sent me draw him: and I will  
45 raise him up in the last day. It is written in the prophets, And they  
shall all be taught of God. Every one that hath heard from the  
46 Father, and hath learned, cometh unto me. Not that any man hath  
seen the Father, save he which is from God, he hath seen the Father.  
47 Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth hath eternal life. I  
48 am the bread of life. Your fathers did eat the manna in the wilder-  
49 ness, and they died. This is the bread which cometh down out of  
50 heaven, that a man may eat thereof, and not die. I am the living  
51 bread which came down out of heaven: if any man eat of this bread,  
he shall live for ever: yea and the bread which I will give is my flesh,  
for the life of the world.

52 The Jews therefore strove one with another, saying, How can this  
53 man give us his flesh to eat? Jesus therefore said unto them, Verily,  
verily, I say unto you, Except ye eat the flesh of the Son of man and  
54 drink his blood, ye have not life in yourselves. He that eateth my  
55 flesh and drinketh my blood hath eternal life; and I will raise him up  
at the last day. For my flesh is 'meat indeed, and my blood is 'drink  
56 indeed. He that eateth my flesh and drinketh my blood abideth in  
57 me, and I in him. As the living Father sent me, and I live because  
of the Father; so he that eateth me, he also shall live because of me.  
58 This is the bread which came down out of heaven: not as the fathers  
59 did eat, and died: he that eateth this bread shall live for ever. These  
things said he in 'the synagogue, as he taught in Capernaum.

60 Many therefore of his disciples, when they heard *this*, said, This is  
61 a hard saying; who can hear 'it? But Jesus knowing in himself that  
his disciples murmured at this, said unto them, Doth this cause you  
62 to stumble? *What* then if ye should behold the Son of man ascending  
63 where he was before? It is the spirit that quickeneth; the flesh  
64 profiteth nothing: the words that I have spoken unto you are spirit,  
and are life. But there are some of you that believe not. For Jesus  
knew from the beginning who they were that believed not, and who it



John 6:22-71.

65 was that should betray him. And he said, For this cause have I said unto you, that no man can come unto me, except it be given unto him of the Father.

66 Upon this many of his disciples went back, and walked no more with  
67 him. Jesus said therefore unto the twelve, Would ye also go away?  
68 Simon Peter answered him, Lord, to whom shall we go? thou <sup>hast</sup>  
69 the words of eternal life. And we have believed and know that thou  
70 art the Holy One of God. Jesus answered them, Did not I choose you  
71 the twelve, and one of you is a devil? Now he spake of Judas *the son*  
of Simon Iscariot, for he it was that should betray him, *being* one of  
the twelve.

1. Gr. *little boat*. 2. Gr. *little boats*. 3. Or, *he sent*. 4. Or, *that I should raise him up*.  
5. Gr. *true meat*. 6. Gr. *true drink*. 7. Or, *a synagogue*. 8. Or, *him*. 9. Or, *hast words*.

### § 60. EMISSARIES FROM JERUSALEM REPROACH HIM FOR DISREGARDING TRADITION.

In Galilee, probably at Capernaum.

Matt. 15:1-20.

1 Then there come to Jesus from  
Jerusalem Pharisees and scribes,

Mark 7:1-23.

1 And there are gathered together unto him the Pharisees, and certain of the scribes, which had come from  
2 Jerusalem, and had seen that some of his disciples ate their bread with <sup>defiled</sup> that is un-  
3 washen, hands. For the Pharisees, and all the Jews, except they wash their hands <sup>diligently</sup>, eat not, holding the tra-  
4 dition of the elders: and *when they come* from the marketplace, except they <sup>wash</sup> themselves, they eat not: and many other things there be, which they have received to hold, <sup>washings</sup> of cups, and pots, and brasen  
5 vessels<sup>10</sup>. And the Pharisees and the scribes ask him, Why walk not thy disciples according to the tradition of the elders, but eat their bread with <sup>defiled</sup>

John 7:1.

1 And after these things Jesus walked in Galilee: for he would not walk in Judea, because the Jews sought to kill him.

2 saying, Why do thy disciples transgress the tradition of the elders? for they wash not their  
3 hands when they eat bread. And

And after these things Jesus walked in Galilee: for he would not walk in Judea, because the Jews sought to kill him.

Matt. 15:1-20.

he answered and said unto them,  
 7 Ye hypocrites, well did Isaiah  
 prophesy of you, saying,  
 8 This people honoureth me with  
 their lips;  
 But their heart is far from me.  
 But in vain do they worship me,  
 Teaching *as their* doctrines the  
 precepts of men.  
 3 Why do ye also transgress the  
 commandment of God, because  
 of your tradition?

4 For God  
 said, Honour thy father and thy  
 mother: and, He that speaketh  
 evil of father or mother, let him  
 5 <sup>1</sup>die the death. But ye say, Who-  
 soever shall say to his father or  
 his mother, That wherewith  
 thou mightest have been profited  
 6 by me is given *to God*; he shall  
 not honour his father<sup>2</sup>. And ye

have made void the <sup>3</sup>word of God  
 because of your tradition.

10 And he  
 called to him the multitude, and  
 said unto them, Hear, and under-  
 11 stand: Not that which entereth

into the mouth defileth the man,  
 but that which proceedeth out of  
 the mouth, this defileth the man.

12 Then came the disciples, and said  
 unto him, Knowest thou that the  
 Pharisees were <sup>4</sup>offended, when  
 13 they heard this saying? But he  
 answered and said, Every <sup>5</sup>plant  
 which my heavenly Father plant-  
 14 ed not, shall be rooted up. Let  
 them alone: they are blind guides.  
 And if the blind guide the blind,  
 15 both shall fall into a pit. And  
 Peter answered and said unto

Mark 7:1-23.

6 hands? And he said unto them,  
 Well did Isaiah prophesy of you  
 hypocrites, as it is written,  
 This people honoureth me with  
 their lips,  
 But their heart is far from me.  
 7 But in vain do they worship me,  
 Teaching *as their* doctrines the  
 precepts of men.  
 8 Ye leave the commandment of  
 God, and hold fast the tradition  
 9 of men. And he said unto them,  
 Full well do ye reject the  
 commandment of God, that ye  
 10 may keep your tradition. For  
 Moses said, Honour thy father  
 and thy mother; and, He that  
 speaketh evil of father or moth-  
 11 er, let him <sup>1</sup>die the death; but ye  
 say, If a man shall say to his  
 father or his mother, That  
 wherewith thou mightest have  
 been profited by me is Corban,  
 12 that is to say, Given *to God*; ye  
 no longer suffer him to do aught  
 for his father or his mother;  
 13 making void the word of God by  
 your tradition, which ye have de-  
 livered: and many such like  
 14 things ye do. And he called to  
 him the multitude again, and  
 said unto them, Hear me all of  
 15 you, and understand: there is  
 nothing from without the man,  
 that going into him can defile  
 him: but the things which pro-  
 ceed out of the man are those  
 17 that defile the man.<sup>11</sup> And when  
 he was entered into the house  
 from the multitude, his disciples  
 asked of him the parable.

Matt. 15:1-20.

him, Declare unto us the parable.  
 16 And he said, Are ye also even yet  
 17 without understanding? Per-  
 ceive ye not, that whatsoever  
 goeth into the mouth passeth in-  
 to the belly, and is cast out into  
 18 the draught? But the things  
 which proceed out of the mouth  
 come forth out of the heart; and  
 19 they defile the man. For out of  
 the heart come forth evil  
 thoughts, murders, adulteries,  
 fornications, thefts, false witness,  
 railings:

20 these are the things  
 which defile the man:  
 but to eat  
 with unwashen hands defileth  
 not the man.

1. Or, *surely die*. 2. Some ancient authorities add *or his mother*. 3. Some ancient authorities read *law*. 4. Gr. *caused to stumble*. 5. Gr. *planting*. 6. Or, *common*. 7. Or, *up to the elbow*. Gr. *with the fist*. 8. Gr. *baptize*. Some ancient authorities read *sprinkle themselves*. 9. Gr. *baptizings*. 10. Many ancient authorities add *and couches*. 11. Many ancient authorities insert ver. 16, *If any man hath ears to hear, let him hear*. 12. Gr. *thoughts that are evil*.

Mark 7:1-23.

18 And  
 he saith unto them, Are ye so  
 without understanding also?  
 Perceive ye not, that whatso-  
 ever from without goeth into the  
 19 man, *it* cannot defile him; be-  
 cause it goeth not into his heart,  
 but into his belly, and goeth out  
 into the draught? *This he said*,  
 20 making all meats clean. And he  
 said, That which proceedeth out  
 of the man, that defileth the  
 21 man. For from within, out of  
 the heart of men, <sup>12</sup>evil thoughts  
 22 proceed, fornications, thefts,  
 murders, adulteries, covetings,  
 wickednesses, deceit, lascivious-  
 ness, an evil eye, railing, pride,  
 23 foolishness: all these evil things  
 proceed from within, and defile  
 the man.

# § 61. HE RETIRES TO THE REGION OF TYRE AND SIDON, AND HEALS A PHOENICIAN WOMAN'S DAUGHTER.

Matt. 15:21-28.

21 And Jesus went out thence,  
 and withdrew into the parts of  
 Tyre and Sidon.\*  
 22 And behold, a  
 Canaanitish woman came out  
 from those borders, and cried,  
 saying, Have mercy on me, O  
 Lord, thou son of David, my  
 daughter is grievously vexed  
 23 with a 'devil. But he answered  
 her not a word. And his disci-  
 ples came and besought him, say-  
 ing, Send her away; for she  
 24 crieth after us. But he answered

Mark 7:24-30.

24 And from thence he arose, and  
 went away into the borders of  
 Tyre<sup>3</sup> and Sidon. And he enter-  
 ed into a house, and would have  
 no man know it: and he could  
 25 not be hid. But straightway a  
 woman, whose little daughter  
 had an unclean spirit, having  
 heard of him, came and fell down  
 at his feet. Now the woman was  
 a 'Greek, a Syrophœnician by  
 race. And she besought him  
 that he would cast forth the  
 'devil out of her daughter.

\*It used to be questioned whether he actually left the land of Israel. Matthew's expres-  
 sion ought to have settled the question, and the corrected text of Mark 7:31 (§62) leaves no  
 doubt.

Matt. 15:21-28.

Mark 7:24-30.

and said, I was not sent but unto the lost sheep of the house of Israel. But she came and worshipped him, saying, Lord, help me. And he answered and said, It is not meet to take the children's bread and cast it to the

27 dogs. But she said, Yea, Lord: for even the dogs eat of the crumbs which fall from their masters' 28 table. Then Jesus answered and said unto her, O woman, great is thy faith; be it done unto thee even as thou wilt.

And her daughter was healed from that hour.

27 And he said unto her, Let the children first be filled: for it is not meet to take the children's bread and cast it to the dogs. 28 But she answered and saith unto him, Yea, Lord: even the dogs under the table eat of the children's crumbs. And he said unto her, For this saying go thy way; the devil is gone out of thy 30 daughter. And she went away unto her house, and found the child laid upon the bed, and the devil gone out.

1. Gr. demon. 2. Or, loaf. 3. Some ancient authorities omit *and Sidon*. 4. Or, Gentile.

¶ 62. HE GOES FARTHER NORTH, AND THEN EAST AND SOUTH INTO DECAPOLIS\*—HEALS MULTITUDES, AND FEEDS THE FOUR THOUSAND.

Matt. 15:29-38.

Mark 7:31 to 8:9.

29 And Jesus departed thence, and came nigh unto the sea of Galilee; and he went up into the mountain, and sat there.

30 And there came unto him great multitudes, having with

31 And again he went out from the borders of Tyre, and came through Sidon unto the sea of Galilee, through the midst of the borders of Decapolis. And they bring unto him one that was deaf, and had an impediment in his speech; and they beseech him to lay 33 his hand upon him. And he took him aside from the multitude privately, and put his fingers into his ears, and he spat, and 34 touched his tongue; and looking up to heaven, he sighed, and saith unto him, Ephphatha, that is, Be opened. And his ears were opened, and the bond of his tongue was 36 loosed, and he spake plain. And he charged them that they should tell no man: but the more he charged them, so much the more a 37 great deal they published it. And they were beyond measure astonished, saying, He hath done all things well: he maketh even the

\*Observe how carefully he keeps away from the territory ruled by Herod Antipas. The tetrarch Philip, who governed the districts east of the Lake of Galilee and of the upper Jordan, was a better man than Antipas, and moreover had no cause to feel uneasy about Jesus.



Matt. 15:29-38.

them the lame, blind,  
dumb, maimed, and  
many others, and

31 they cast them down at his feet; and he healed them: insomuch that the multitude wondered, when they saw the dumb speaking, the maimed whole, and the lame walking, and the blind seeing: and they glorified the God of Israel.

Mark 7:31 to 8:9.

deaf to hear, and the dumb to speak.

32 And Jesus called unto him his disciples, and said, I have compassion on the multitude, because they continue with me now three days and have nothing to eat: and I would not send them away fasting, lest haply they faint in the way.

33 And the disciples say unto him, Whence should we have so many loaves in a desert place, as to fill so great a multitude? And Jesus saith unto them, How many loaves have ye? And they said, Seven, and a few small fishes. And he commanded the multitude to sit down on the ground: and he took the seven loaves and the fishes; and he gave thanks and brake, and gave to the disciples, and the disciples to the multitudes.

37 And they did all eat, and were filled: and they took up that which remained over of the broken pieces, 38 seven baskets full. And they that did eat were four thousand men, beside women and children.

1 In those days, when there was again a great multitude, and they had nothing to eat, he called unto him his disciples, and 2 saith unto them, I have compassion on the multitude, because they continue with me now three days, and have nothing to eat; 3 and if I send them away fasting to their home, they will faint in the way; and some of them are 4 come from far. And his disciples answered him, Whence shall one be able to fill these men with 'bread here in a desert 5 place? And he asked them, How many loaves have ye? And they 6 said, Seven. And he commanded the multitude to sit down on the ground: and he took the seven loaves, and having given thanks, he brake, and gave to his disciples, to set before them; and they set them before the 7 multitude. And they had a few small fishes: and having blessed them, he commanded to set these 8 also before them. And they did eat, and were filled: and they took up, of broken pieces that remained over, seven baskets. 9 And they were about four thousand: and he sent them away.

1. Gr. loaves.



‡ 63. AFTER CROSSING TO GALILEE, HE AGAIN RETIRES INTO THE  
TETRARCHY OF PHILIP. A BLIND MAN HEALED.

Magadan and Bethsaida.\*

Matt. 15:39 to 16:12.

Mark 8:10-26.

39 And he sent away the multitudes, and entered into the boat, and came into the borders of Magadan.

1 And the Pharisees and Sadducees came, and tempting him† asked him to shew them a sign

2 from heaven. But he answered and said unto them, <sup>1</sup>When it is evening, ye say, *It will be fair*

3 weather: for the heaven is red. And in the morning, *It will be foul* weather to-day: for the heaven is red and lowring. Ye know how

4 to discern the face of the heaven; but ye cannot *discern* the signs of the times. An evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign; and there shall no sign be given unto it, but the sign of Jonah. And he left them, and departed.

5 And the disciples came to the other side and forgot to take

6 <sup>2</sup>bread. And Jesus said unto them, Take heed and beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and

7 Sadducees. And they reasoned among themselves, saying, <sup>3</sup>We

8 took no <sup>2</sup>bread. And Jesus perceiving it said, O ye of little faith, why reason ye among yourselves because ye have no <sup>2</sup>bread?

9 Do ye not yet perceive, neither remember the five loaves of the five thousand, and how many

10 <sup>4</sup>baskets ye took up? Neither the seven loaves of the four thousand, and how many <sup>4</sup>baskets ye

11 took up? How is it that ye do not perceive that I spake not to

10 And straightway he entered into the boat with his disciples, and came into the parts of Dalmanutha.

11 And the Pharisees came forth, and began to question with him, seeking of him a sign from heaven, tempting him.

12 And he sighed deeply in his spirit, and saith, Why doth this generation seek a sign? verily I say unto you, There shall no sign be given unto this generation. And he left them, and again entering into *the boat* departed to the other side.

14 And they forgot to take bread; and they had not in the boat with them more than one loaf.

15 And he charged them, saying, Take heed, beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and the leaven

16 of Herod. And they reasoned one with another, <sup>6</sup>saying, <sup>6</sup>We

17 have no bread. And Jesus perceiving it saith unto them, Why reason ye, because ye have no bread? do ye not yet perceive, neither understand? have ye

18 your heart hardened? having eyes, see ye not? and having ears, hear ye not? and do ye not

19 remember? When I brake the five loaves among the five thousand, how many <sup>7</sup>baskets full of

\*This means the Bethsaida east of the Jordan (comp. on ‡57). The situation of Magadan was unknown to some early students or copyists, as it is to us, and so they changed it to the familiar Magdala, found in our common texts.

†The moment he returns to Galilee, the Jewish leaders begin again to attack him, as in ‡60. So he immediately withdraws again to the region of Caesarea Philippi, where no hostility had been aroused, and he could quietly instruct the Twelve. He probably remained in that vicinity several months, as this whole period of retirement lasted six months (see on ‡57).

Matt. 15:39 to 16:12.

you concerning <sup>2</sup>bread? But beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees. Then they understood how that he bade them not beware of the leaven of <sup>2</sup>bread, but of the teaching of the Pharisees and Sadducees.

Mark 8:10-26.

20 broken pieces took ye up? They say unto him, Twelve. And when the seven among the four thousand, how many <sup>7</sup>basketfuls of broken pieces took ye up? 21 And they say unto him, Seven. And he said unto them, Do ye not yet understand? 22 And they come unto Bethsaida. And they bring to him a blind man, and beseech him to touch 23 him. And he took hold of the blind man by the hand, and brought him out of the village; and when he had spit on his eyes, and laid his hands upon him, he asked him, Seest thou aught? 24 And he looked up, and said, I see men; for I behold *them* as trees, 25 walking. Then again he laid his hands upon his eyes; and he looked stedfastly, and was restored, and saw all things clearly. 26 ly. And he sent him away to his home, saying, Do not even enter into the village.

1. The following words, to the end of ver. 3, are omitted by some of the most ancient and other important authorities. 2. Gr *loaves*. 3. Or, It is *because we took no bread*. 4. *Basket* in ver. 9 and 10 represents different Greek words. 5. Some ancient authorities read *because they had no bread*. 6. Or, It is *because we have no bread*. 7. *Basket* in ver. 19 and 20 represents different Greek words.

§ 64. IN THE NEIGHBORHOOD OF CÆSAREA-PHILIPPI, THE TWELVE  
AVOW (THROUGH PETER) THEIR BELIEF THAT  
HE IS THE MESSIAH.

Matt. 16:13-20.

Mark 8:27-30.

Luke 9:18-21.

13 Now when Jesus 27 And Jesus went 18 And it came to pass, came into the parts forth, and his disciples, into the villages of Cæsarea Philippi: he asked his disciples, saying, Who do men say <sup>1</sup>that the 28 that I am? And they said, Some say John the Baptist; 28 and others, Elijah; and others, Jeremiah, or one of the prophets. 14 Son of man is? And they said, Some say John the Baptist; 28 that I am? And they told him, saying, John the Baptist: and others, Elijah: but others, One 19 And they answering said, John the Baptist; but others say, Elijah; and others, that one of the old prophets is risen a-

Matt. 16:13-20.

But who say ye that  
 16 I am? And Simon  
 Peter answered and  
 said, Thou art the  
 Christ,\* the Son of  
 17 the living God. And  
 Jesus answered and  
 said unto him, Bless-  
 ed art thou, Simon  
 Bar-Jonah: for flesh  
 and blood hath not  
 revealed it unto thee,  
 but my Father which  
 18 is in heaven. And I  
 also say unto thee,  
 that thou art <sup>2</sup>Peter,  
 and upon this <sup>3</sup>rock  
 I will build my  
 church; and the  
 gates of Hades shall  
 not prevail against  
 19 it. I will give unto  
 thee the keys of the  
 kingdom of heaven:  
 and whatsoever thou  
 shalt bind on earth  
 shall be bound in  
 heaven: and whatso-  
 ever thou shalt loose  
 on earth shall be  
 loosed in heaven.  
 20 Then charged he  
 the disciples that 30

Mark 8:27-30.

of the prophets. 29 And he asked them,  
 But who say ye that  
 I am? Peter an-  
 swereth and saith  
 unto him, Thou art  
 the Christ.

Luke 9:18-21.

gain. And he said  
 unto them, But who  
 say ye that I am?  
 And Peter answering  
 said, The Christ of  
 God.

And he 21  
 charged them that  
 they should tell no  
 man of him.

But he charged  
 them, and command-  
 ed *them* to tell this to  
 no man;

1. Many ancient authorities read that *I the Son of man am*. See Mark 8:27; Luke 9:18. 2. Gr. *Petros*. 3. Gr. *petra*.

\*Some understand ver. 16f. as showing that they had never before believed him to be the Messiah, and so hold that the other Gospels here utterly conflict with John, who represents the first disciples (§ 18) as believing Jesus to be the Messiah. But it is easy to suppose that their early faith in his Messiahship was shaken by his continued failure to gather armies and set up the expected temporal kingdom, and while still believing him to have a divine mission they had questioned whether he was the Messiah, as John the Baptist did in prison (§ 45). Compare on § 23, (c), and observe that in Matthew and Luke he long before this time distinctly implied that he was the Messiah, in response to the Forerunner's inquiries (§ 45).

§ 65. JESUS DISTINCTLY FORETELLS THAT HE, THE MESSIAH, WILL  
BE REJECTED AND KILLED, AND WILL RISE  
THE THIRD DAY.

Matt. 16:21-28.

Mark 8:31-38; 9:1.

Luke 9:22-27.

21 From that time began <sup>1</sup>Jesus to shew unto his disciples, how that he must go unto Jerusalem, and suffer many things of the elders and chief priests and scribes, and be killed, and the third day be raised up.

22 And Peter took him, and began to rebuke him, saying, <sup>2</sup>Be it far from thee, Lord: this shall never be unto thee. But he turned, and said unto Peter, Get thee behind me, Satan: thou art a stumbling-block unto me: for thou mindest not the things of God, but the things of men. Then said Jesus unto his disciples, If any man would come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me. 25 For whosoever would save his <sup>3</sup>life shall lose it: and whosoever shall lose his <sup>3</sup>life for my sake shall find it. For what shall a man be profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and forfeit his <sup>3</sup>life? or what shall a man give in exchange for his <sup>3</sup>life?

31 And he began to teach them, that the Son of man must suffer many things, and be rejected by the elders, and the chief priests, and the scribes, and be killed, and after three days rise again.

32 And he spake the saying openly. And Peter took him, and began to rebuke him.

33 But he turning about, and seeing his disciples, rebuked Peter, and saith, Get thee behind me, Satan: for thou mindest not the things of God, but the things of men.

34 And he called unto him the multitude with his disciples, and said unto them, If any man would come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me. For whosoever would save his <sup>3</sup>life shall lose it; and whosoever shall lose his <sup>3</sup>life for my sake and the gospel's shall save it. For what doth it profit a man, to gain the whole world, and forfeit his <sup>3</sup>life? For what should a man give in exchange for his <sup>3</sup>life?

22 saying, The Son of man must suffer many things, and be rejected of the elders and chief priests and scribes, and be killed, and the third day be raised up.

23 And he said unto all, If any man would come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross daily, and follow me. For whosoever would save his <sup>3</sup>life shall lose it; but whosoever shall lose his <sup>3</sup>life for my sake, the same shall save it. For what is a man profited, if he gain the whole world, and lose or forfeit his own self?



Matt. 16:21-28.

Mark 8:31-38; 9:1.

Luke 9:22-27.

27 For the Son of man shall come in the glory of his Father with his angels; and then shall he render unto every man according to his deeds. Verily I say unto you, There be some of them that stand here, which shall in no wise taste of death, till they see the Son of man coming in his kingdom.

38 For whosoever shall be ashamed of me and of my words in this adulterous and sinful generation, the Son of man also shall be ashamed of him, when he cometh in the glory of his Father with the holy angels.  
1 And he said unto them, Verily I say unto you, There be some here of them that stand *by*, which shall in no wise taste of death, till they see the kingdom of God come with power.

26 For whosoever shall be ashamed of me and of my words, of him shall the Son of man be ashamed, when he cometh in his own glory, and *the glory* of the Father, and of the holy angels. But I tell you of a truth, There be some of them that stand here, which shall in no wise taste of death, till they see the kingdom of God.

1. Some ancient authorities read *Jesus Christ*. 2. Or, *God have mercy on thee*. 3. Or, *soul*. 4. Gr. *doing*.

### § 66. THE TRANSFIGURATION, AND DISCOURSE IN DESCENDING.

On a mountain, in the region of Caesarea-Philippi.\*

Matt. 17:1-13.

Mark 9:2-13.

Luke 9:28-36.

1 And after six days Jesus taketh with him Peter, and James, and John his brother, and bringeth them up into a high mountain apart;  
2 and he was transfigured before them; and his face did shine as the sun, and his garments became white as the light.  
3 And behold, there appeared unto them Moses and Elijah talking with him.

2 And after six days Jesus taketh with him Peter, and James, and John, and bringeth them up into a high mountain apart by themselves: and he was transfigured before them: and his garments became glistering, exceeding white; so as no fuller on earth can whiten them. And there appeared unto them Elijah with Moses: and they were talking with Jesus.

28 And it came to pass, about eight days after these sayings, he took with him Peter and John and James, and went up into the mountain to pray.  
29 And as he was praying, the fashion of his countenance was altered, and his raiment became white and dazzling. And behold, there talked with him two men, which were Moses and Elijah; who appeared in glory, and spake of his *decease* which he was

\*The tradition which places the Transfiguration on Mount Tabor is beyond question false.



Matt. 17:1-13.

Mark 9:2-13.

Luke 9:28-36.

4 And Peter answered, and said unto Jesus, Lord, it is good for us to be here: if thou wilt, I will make here three 'tabernacles; one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elijah.

5 While he was yet speaking, behold, a bright cloud overshadowed them: and behold, a voice out of the cloud, saying, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased; hear ye him.

6 And when the disciples heard it, they fell on their face, and were sore afraid. And Jesus came and touched them and said, Arise, and be not afraid. And lifting up their eyes, they saw no one, save Jesus only.

9 And as they were coming down from the mountain, Jesus commanded them, saying, Tell the vision to no man, until the Son of man be risen from the dead.

5 And Peter answered and saith unto Jesus, Rabbi, it is good for us to be here: and let us make three 'tabernacles; one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elijah.

6 For he wist not what to answer; for they became sore afraid.

7 And there came a cloud overshadowing them: and there came a voice out of the cloud, This is my beloved Son: hear ye him.

8 And suddenly looking round about, they saw no one any more, save Jesus only with themselves.

9 And as they were coming down from the mountain, he charged them that they should tell no man what things they had seen, save when the Son of man should have risen again from

10 the dead. And they kept the saying, questioning among themselves what the rising again

about to accomplish at Jerusalem. Now Peter and they that were with him, were heavy with sleep: but when they were fully awake, they saw his glory, and the two men that stood with him. And it came to pass, as they were parting from him, Peter said unto Jesus, Master, it is good for us to be here: and let us make three 'tabernacles; one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elijah: not knowing what he said. And while he said these things, there came a cloud, and overshadowed them: and they feared as they entered into the cloud. And a voice came out of the cloud, saying, This is 'my Son, my chosen: hear ye him.

36 And when the voice came, Jesus was found alone.

And they held their peace, and told no man in those days any of the things which they had seen.

Matt. 17:1-13.

10 And his disciples asked him, saying, Why then say the scribes that Elijah must first come?  
 11 And he answered and said, Elijah indeed cometh, and shall restore all things: but I say unto you, that Elijah is come already, and they knew him not, but did unto him whatsoever they listed. Even so shall the Son of man also suffer of them.  
 13 Then understood the disciples that he spake unto them of John the Baptist.

Mark 9:2-13.

from the dead should mean. And they asked him, saying, "The scribes say that Elijah must first come. And he said unto them, Elijah indeed cometh first, and restoreth all things: and how is it written of the Son of man, that he should suffer many things and be set at naught? But I say unto you, that Elijah is come, and they have also done unto him whatsoever they listed, even as it is written of him.

1. Or, booths. 2. Or, How is it that the scribes say...come! 3. Or, departure. 4. Or, having remained awake. 5. Many ancient authorities read *my beloved Son*. See Matt. 17:5; Mark 9:7. 6. Or, was past.

### §67. THE DEMONIAK BOY, WHOM THE DISCIPLES COULD NOT HEAL.

In the region of Cæsarea Philippi.

Matt. 17:14-20.

Mark 9:14-29.

Luke 9:37-43.

14 And when they came to the multitude, there came to him a man, kneeling to him, and saying,  
 15 Lord, have mercy on

14 And when they came to the disciples, they saw a great multitude about them, and scribes questioning with them. And straightway all the multitude, when they saw him, were greatly amazed, and running to him saluted him. And he asked them, What question ye with them? And one of the multitude answered him, "Mas-

37 And it came to pass, on the next day, when they were come down from the mountain, a great multitude met him.

38 And behold, a man from the multitude cried, saying, "Mas-

Matt. 17:14-20.

my son: for he is epileptic, and suffereth grievously: for oft-times he falleth into the fire, and oft-times into the water.  
 16 And I brought him to thy disciples, and they could not cure him.

17 And Jesus answered and said, O faithless and perverse generation, how long shall I bear with you? bring him hither to me.

Mark 9:14-29.

ter, I brought unto thee my son, which hath a dumb spirit;  
 18 and wheresoever it taketh him, it <sup>dasheth</sup> him down: and he foameth, and grindeth his teeth, and pineth away: and I spake to thy disciples that they should cast it out; and they were not able. And he answereth them and saith, O faithless generation, how long shall I be with you? how long shall I bear with you? bring him unto me.  
 20 And they brought him unto him: and when he saw him, straightway the spirit <sup>tare</sup> him grievously; and he fell on the ground, and wallowed foaming.  
 21 And he asked his father, How long time is it since this hath come unto him? And he said,  
 22 From a child. And oft-times it hath cast him both into the fire and into the waters, to destroy him: but if thou canst do anything, have compassion on  
 23 us, and help us. And Jesus said unto him, If thou canst! All things are possible to him that believeth.  
 24 Straightway the father of the child cried out, and said<sup>e</sup>, I believe; help thou mine unbelief.

Luke 9:37-43.

ter, I beseech thee to look upon my son; for he is mine only child: and behold, a spirit taketh him, and he suddenly crieth out; and it <sup>teareth</sup> him that he foameth, and it hardly departeth from him, bruising him sorely. And I besought thy disciples to cast it out; and they could not. And Jesus answered and said, O faithless and perverse generation, how long shall I be with you, and bear with you? bring hither thy son. And as he was yet a coming, the <sup>devil</sup> <sup>dash-</sup>ed him down, and <sup>tare</sup> him grievously.

Matt. 17:14-20.

18 And Jesus rebuked him; and the 'devil went out from him: and the boy was cured from that hour.

19 Then came the disciples to Jesus apart, and said, Why could not we cast it out?  
20 And he said unto them, Because of your little faith: for verily I say unto you, If ye have faith as a grain of mustard seed, ye shall say unto this mountain, Remove hence to yonder place; and it shall remove; and nothing shall be impossible unto you<sup>2</sup>.

Mark 9:14-29.

25 And when Jesus saw that a multitude came running together, he rebuked the unclean spirit, saying unto him, Thou dumb and deaf spirit, I command thee, come out of him, and enter no more into him. And having cried out, and 'torn him much, he came out: and *the child* became as one dead; insomuch that the more part said, He  
27 is dead. But Jesus took him by the hand, and raised him up; and he  
28 arose. And when he was come into the house, his disciples asked him privately, 'saying, We could not cast it out.  
29 And he said unto them, This kind can come out by nothing, save by prayer<sup>3</sup>.

Luke 9:37-43.

But Jesus rebuked the unclean spirit, and healed the boy, and gave him back  
43 to his father. And they were all astonished at the majesty of God.

1. Gr. *demon*. 2. Many authorities, some ancient, insert ver. 21 *But this kind goeth not out save by prayer and fasting*. See Mark 9:29. 3. Or, *Teacher*. 4. Or, *rendeth him*. 5. Or, *convulsed*. 6. Many ancient authorities add *with tears*. 7. Or, *How is it that we could not cast it out?* 8. Many ancient authorities add *and fasting*. 9. Or, *convulseth*. 10. Or, *rent him*.

‡ 68. RETURNING PRIVATELY THROUGH GALILEE, HE AGAIN FORE-  
TELLS HIS DEATH AND RESURRECTION.

(Comp. ‡ 65 and 66, and 101).

Matt. 17:22,23.

Mark 9:30-32.

Luke 9:43-45.

- 22 And while they <sup>1</sup>abode in Galilee, Jesus said unto them, The Son of man shall be delivered up into the hands of men; 23 and they shall kill him, and the third day he shall be raised up. And they were exceeding sorry.
- 30 And they went forth from thence, and passed through Galilee; and he would not that any man should know it. 31 For he taught his disciples, and said unto them, The Son of man is delivered up into the hands of men, and they shall kill him; and when he is killed, after three days he shall rise again. But they understood not the saying, and were afraid to ask him.
- 43 But while all were marvelling at all the things which he did, he said unto his disciples, Let these words sink into your ears: for the Son of man shall be delivered up into the hands of men.
- 45 But they understood not this saying, and it was concealed from them, that they should not perceive it: and they were afraid to ask him about this saying.

1. Some ancient authorities read *were gathering themselves together*.

*The season of retirement from Galilee is now ended (‡ 57-68). The remaining events at this time (‡ 69-74) probably occupied only a few days.*

‡ 69. JESUS, THE MESSIAH, PAYS THE HALF-SHEKEL FOR  
THE TEMPLE.

Capernaum.

Matt. 17:24-27.

- 24 And when they were come to Capernaum, they that received the <sup>1</sup>half-shekel came to Peter, and said, Doth not your <sup>2</sup>master pay the <sup>3</sup>half-shekel? He saith, Yea. And when he came into the house, Jesus spake first to him, saying, What thinkest thou, Simon? the kings of the earth, from whom do they receive toll or tribute? from 26 their sons, or from strangers? And when he said, From strangers 27 Jesus said unto him, Therefore the sons are free. But, lest we cause them to stumble, go thou to the sea and cast a hook, and take up the fish that first cometh up; and when thou hast opened his mouth, thou shalt find a <sup>4</sup>shekel: that take, and give unto them for me and thee.

1. Gr. *didrachma*. 2. Or, *teacher*. 3. Gr. *stater*.



‡ 70. THE TWELVE CONTEND AS TO WHO SHALL BE THE GREATEST UNDER THE MESSIAH'S REIGN. HIS SUBJECTS MUST BE CHILDLIKE. (Compare ‡ 99 and 101.)

Capernaum.

Matt. 18:1-14.

1 In that hour came the disciples unto Jesus, saying, who then is <sup>1</sup>greatest in the kingdom of heaven?

2 And he called to him a little child, and set him in the midst of them, and said, Verily I say unto you, Except ye turn, and become as little children, ye shall in no wise enter into the kingdom of heaven.

4 Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child, the same is the <sup>1</sup>greatest in the kingdom of heaven.

5 And whoso shall receive one such little child in my name receiveth me:

Mark 9:33-50.

33 And they came to Capernaum: and when he was in the house he asked them, What were ye reasoning in the way? But they held their peace: for they had disputed one with another in the way, who *was* the

35 <sup>1</sup>greatest. And he sat down, and called the twelve; and he saith unto them, If any man would be first, he shall be last of all, and minister of all. And he took a little child, and set him in the midst of them: and taking him in his arms, he said unto them,

37 Whosoever shall receive one of such little children in my name, receiveth me: and whosoever receiveth me, receiveth not me, but him that sent me.

38 John said unto him, 'Master, we saw one casting out <sup>s</sup>devils in thy name: and we forbade him, because he followed not us.

39 But Jesus said, Forbid him not: for there is no man

Luke 9:46-50.

46 And there arose a reasoning among them, which of them should be <sup>1</sup>greatest.

47 But when Jesus saw the reasoning of their heart, he took a little child, and set him by his side, and said unto them,

48 Whosoever shall receive this little child in my name receiveth me: and whosoever shall receive me receiveth him that sent me: for he that is <sup>15</sup>least among you all, the same is great.

49 And John answered and said, Master, we saw one casting out <sup>s</sup>devils in thy name; and we forbade him, because he followeth not with us. But Jesus said unto him, Forbid

Matt. 18:1-14.

Mark 9:33-50.

Luke 9:46-50.

*him* not: for he that  
is not against you is  
for you.

which shall do a  
mighty work in my  
name, and be able  
quickly to speak  
40 evil of me. For he  
that is not against  
41 us is for us. For  
whosoever shall  
give you a cup of  
water to drink <sup>10</sup>be-  
cause ye are Christ's,  
verily I say unto  
you, he shall in no  
wise lose his reward.

6 but whoso  
shall cause one of  
these little ones  
which believe on me  
to stumble, it is profi-  
table for him that  
<sup>a</sup>a great millstone  
should be hanged  
about his neck, and  
that he should be  
sunk in the depth of

42 And whosoever  
shall cause one of  
these little ones that  
believe <sup>11</sup>on me to  
stumble, it were bet-  
ter for him if <sup>a</sup>a  
great millstone were  
hanged about his  
neck, and he were  
cast into the sea.

7 the sea. Woe unto  
the world because of  
occasions of stumb-  
ling! for it must  
needs be that the oc-  
casions come; but  
woe to that man  
through whom the  
occasion cometh!

8 And if thy hand or  
thy foot causeth thee  
to stumble, cut it off,  
and cast it from thee:  
it is good for thee to  
enter into life maim-  
ed or halt, rather  
than having two  
hands or two feet to  
be cast into the eter-  
nal fire.

43 And if  
thy hand cause thee  
to stumble, cut it  
off: it is good for  
thee to enter into  
life maimed, rather  
than having thy  
two hands to go in-  
to <sup>12</sup>hell, into the  
unquenchable fire<sup>13</sup>.

45 And if thy foot  
cause thee to stum-  
ble, cut it off: it is  
good for thee to en-  
ter into life halt,  
rather than having  
thy two feet to be

9 And if thine 47 cast into <sup>12</sup>hell. And

Matt. 18:1-14.

eye causeth thee to stumble, pluck it out, and cast it from thee: it is good for thee to enter into life with one eye, rather than having two eyes to be cast into the <sup>3</sup>hell of fire.

10 See that ye despise not one of these little ones; for I say unto you, that in heaven their angels do always behold the face of my Father which

12 is in heaven<sup>4</sup>. How think ye? if any man have a hundred sheep, and one of them be gone astray, doth he not leave the ninety and nine, and go unto the mountains, and seek that

13 which goeth astray? And if so be that he find it, verily I say unto you, he rejoiceth over it more than over the ninety and nine which

14 have not gone astray. Even so it is not <sup>6</sup>the will of <sup>6</sup>your Father which is in heaven, that one of these little ones should perish.

1. Gr. *greater*. 2. Gr. *a millstone turned by an ass*. 3. Gr. *Gehenna of fire*. 4. Many authorities, some ancient, insert ver. 11 *For the Son of man came to save that which was lost*. See Luke 19:10. 5. Gr. *a thing willed before your father*. 6. Some ancient authorities read *my*. 7. Or, *teacher*. 8. Gr. *demons*. 9. Gr. *power*. 10. Gr. *in name that ye are*. 11. Many ancient authorities omit *on me*. 12. Gr. *Gehenna*. 13. Ver. 44 and 46 (which are identical with ver. 48) are omitted by the best ancient authorities. 14. Many ancient authorities add *and every sacrifice shall be salted with salt*. See Lev. 2:13. 15. Gr. *lesser*.

Mark 9:33-50.

if thine eye cause thee to stumble, cast it out: it is good for thee to enter into the kingdom of God with one eye, rather than having two eyes to be cast into <sup>12</sup>hell;

48 where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.

49 For every one shall be salted with fire<sup>14</sup>.

50 Salt is good: but if the salt have lost its saltness, wherewith will ye season it? Have salt in yourselves, and be at peace one with another.

## § 71. RIGHT TREATMENT OF A BROTHER WHO HAS SINNED AGAINST ONE, AND DUTY OF PATIENTLY FORGIVING A BROTHER.

Matt. 18:15-35.

15 And if thy brother sin <sup>1</sup>against thee, go, shew him his fault between

16 thee and him alone: if he hear thee, thou hast gained thy brother.

But if he hear *thee* not, take with thee one or two more, that at the

17 mouth of two witnesses or three every word may be established. And if he refuse to hear them, tell it unto the <sup>2</sup>church: and if he refuse to hear the <sup>2</sup>church also, let him be unto thee as the Gentile and the

18 publican. Verily I say unto you, What things soever ye shall bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and what things soever ye shall loose

19 on earth shall be loosed in heaven. Again I say unto you, that if two

Matt. 18:15-35.

of you shall agree on earth as touching anything that they shall ask, it shall be done for them of my Father which is in heaven. For where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them.

Then came Peter, and said to him, Lord, how oft shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him? until seven times? Jesus saith unto him, I say not unto thee, Until seven times; but, Until <sup>seventy</sup> times seven. Therefore is the kingdom of heaven likened unto a certain king, which would make a reckoning with his <sup>servants</sup>. And when he had begun to reckon, one was brought unto him, which owed him ten thousand <sup>talents</sup>. But forasmuch as he had not *wherewith* to pay, his lord commanded him to be sold, and his wife, and children, and all that he had, and payment to be made. The <sup>servant</sup> therefore fell down and worshipped him, saying, Lord, have patience with me, and I will pay thee all. And the lord of that <sup>servant</sup>, being moved with compassion, released him, and forgave him the debt. But that <sup>servant</sup> went out, and found one of his fellow-servants, which owed him a hundred <sup>pence</sup>: and he laid hold on him, and took *him* by the throat, saying, Pay what thou owest. So his fellow-servant fell down and besought him, saying, Have patience with me, and I will pay thee. And he would not: but went and cast him into prison, till he should pay that which was due. So when his fellow-servants saw what was done, they were exceeding sorry, and came and told unto their lord all that was done. Then his lord called him unto him, and saith unto him, Thou wicked <sup>servant</sup>, I forgave thee all that debt,<sup>1</sup> because thou besoughtest me: shouldest not thou also have had mercy on thy fellow-servant, even as I had mercy on thee?<sup>2</sup> And his lord was wroth, and delivered him to the tormentors, till he should pay all that was due. So shall also my heavenly Father do unto you, if ye forgive not every one his brother from your hearts.

1. Some ancient authorities omit *against thee*. 2. Or, *congregation*. 3. Or, *seventy times and seven*. 4. Gr. *bond-servants*. 5. This talent was probably worth about \$1200. 6. Gr. *bond-servant*. 7. Or, *loan*. 8. The word in the Greek denotes a coin worth about seventeen cents.

## § 72. THE MESSIAH'S FOLLOWERS MUST GIVE UP EVERYTHING FOR HIS SERVICE.

Matt. 8:19-22.

And there came <sup>a</sup> scribe, and said unto him, <sup>Master</sup>, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest. And Jesus saith unto him, the foxes have holes, and the birds of the heaven *have* <sup>nests</sup>; but the Son of man hath not where to lay his head. And another of the disciples saith unto

Luke 9:57-62.

And as they went in the way, a certain man said unto him, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest. And Jesus said unto him, the foxes have holes, and the birds of the heaven *have* <sup>nests</sup>; but the Son of man hath not where to lay his head. And he said unto another, Follow me.

\*The king forgave the servant \$1,200,000; the servant refused to forgive \$17. We might say in round numbers, a million, and ten dollars.

Matt. 8:19-22.

him, Lord, suffer me first to go  
22 and bury my father. But Jesus  
saith unto him, Follow me; and  
leave the dead to bury their own  
dead.

Luke 9:57-62.

But he said, Lord, suffer me first  
60 to go and bury my father. But  
he said unto him, Leave the  
dead to bury their own dead; but  
go thou and publish abroad the  
61 kingdom of God. And another  
also said, I will follow thee,  
Lord; but first suffer me to bid  
farewell to them that are at my  
62 house. But Jesus said unto him,  
No man, having put his hand to  
the plough, and looking back, is  
fit for the kingdom of God.

1. Gr. *one scribe*. 2. Or, *Teacher*. 3. Gr. *lodging-places*.

§ 73. THE UNBELIEVING BROTHERS OF JESUS COUNSEL HIM TO  
EXHIBIT HIMSELF IN JUDEA, AND HE REJECTS THE ADVICE.

John 7:2-9.

2 Now the feast of the Jews, the feast of tabernacles, was at hand.  
3 His brethren therefore said unto him, Depart hence, and go into Ju-  
dea, that thy disciples also may behold thy works which thou doest.  
4 For no man doeth anything in secret, <sup>1</sup>and himself seeketh to be  
5 known openly. If thou doest these things, manifest thyself to the  
6 world. For even his brethren did not believe on him. Jesus there-  
fore saith unto them, My time is not yet come; but your time is <sup>2</sup>alway  
7 ready. The world cannot hate you; but me it hateth, because I testify  
8 of it, that its works are evil. Go ye up unto the feast: I go not up <sup>3</sup>yet  
9 unto this feast; because my time is not yet fulfilled. And having  
said these things unto them, he abode *still* in Galilee.

1. Some ancient authorities read *and seeketh it to be known openly*. 2. Many ancient  
authorities omit *yet*.

§ 74. HE GOES PRIVATELY TO JERUSALEM THROUGH SAMARIA.

Luke 9:51-56.

51 And it came to pass, when the  
days <sup>1</sup>were well-nigh come that  
he should be received up, he  
stedfastly set his face to go to Je-  
52 rusalem, and sent messengers be-  
fore his face: and they went, and  
entered into a village of the Sa-  
maritans, to make ready for him.  
53 And they did not receive him,  
because his face was as *though* he

John 7:10.

10 But when his brethren were  
gone up unto the feast, then  
went he also up, not publicly,  
but as it were in secret.



Luke 9:51-56.

54 *were* going to Jerusalem. And  
when his disciples James and  
John saw *this*, they said, Lord,  
wilt thou that we bid fire to come  
down from heaven, and consume  
55 them?<sup>2</sup> But he turned, and re-  
56 buked them.<sup>3</sup> And they went to  
another village.

1. Gr. *were being fulfilled*. 2. Many ancient authorities add, *even as Elijah did*.  
3. Some ancient authorities add *and said, Ye know not what manner of spirit ye are of*.  
Some, but fewer, add also *For the Son of man came not to destroy men's lives, but to save*  
them.

## PART VI.

## CLOSING MINISTRY, IN ALL PARTS OF THE HOLY LAND. SIX MONTHS PRECEDING THE CRUCIFIXION (NOT INCLUDING THE LAST WEEK).\*

Time probably from autumn of A. D. 29 to spring of A. D. 30 (or a year earlier.)

*This comprises §§75-103, of which §§75-79 contain discourses at the Feast of Tabernacles, given by John only.*

§75. AT THE FEAST OF TABERNACLES JESUS TEACHES IN THE TEMPLE, AND PEOPLE WONDER WHETHER HE IS THE MESSIAH. ATTEMPT OF THE RULERS TO ARREST HIM.

John 7:11-52.

- 11 The Jews therefore sought him at the feast, and said, Where is he?  
 12 And there was much murmuring among the multitudes concerning him. Some said, He is a good man; others said, Nay, but he leads the multitude astray. Yet no one spoke openly concerning him, for fear of the Jews.  
 13 But when it was now the midst of the feast Jesus went up into the temple, and taught. The Jews therefore marvelled, saying, How  
 14 knoweth this man letters, having never learned? Jesus therefore answered them, and said, My teaching is not mine, but his that sent me. If any man willeth to do his will, he shall know of the teaching,  
 15 whether it be of God, or *whether* I speak from myself. He that speaketh from himself seeketh his own glory: but he that seeketh the glory of him that sent him, the same is true, and no unrighteousness is in  
 16 him. Did not Moses give you the law, and yet none of you doeth the law? Why seek ye to kill me? The multitude answered, Thou hast a  
 17 devil: who seeketh to kill thee? Jesus answered and said unto them,  
 18 I did one work, and ye all <sup>2</sup>marvel. For this cause hath Moses given you circumcision (not that it is of Moses, but of the fathers); and on  
 19 the sabbath ye circumcise a man. If a man receiveth circumcision on the sabbath, that the law of Moses may not be broken; are ye wroth with me, because I made a man every whit whole on the sabbath?  
 20 Judge not according to appearance, but judge righteous judgement.  
 21 Some therefore of them of Jerusalem said, Is not this he whom they  
 22 seek to kill? And lo, he speaketh openly, and they say nothing unto him. Can it be that the rulers indeed know that this is the Christ?  
 23 Howbeit we know this man whence he is: but when the Christ cometh, no one knoweth whence he is. Jesus therefore cried in the temple, teaching and saying, Ye both know me, and know whence I am; and I am not come of myself, but he that sent me is true, whom ye  
 24 know not. I know him; because I am from him, and he sent me.  
 25 They sought therefore to take him: and no man laid his hands on him, because his hour was not yet come. But of the multitude many believed on him; and they said, When the Christ shall come, will he do  
 26 more signs than those, which this man hath done? The Pharisees

\*The Feast of Tabernacles was six months before the Passover, and this period of six months was divided into two nearly equal parts by the Feast of the Dedication (§ 89).—As to the combination of Luke and John for this portion of the history, see the end of this volume, Note on § 75.

John 7:14-52.

heard the multitude murmuring these things concerning him; and  
 33 the chief priests and the Pharisees sent officers to take him. Jesus  
 therefore said, Yet a little while am I with you, and I go unto him  
 34 that sent me. Ye shall seek me, and shall not find me: and where I  
 35 am, ye cannot come. The Jews therefore said among themselves,  
 Whither will this man go that we shall not find him? will he go unto  
 36 the Dispersion <sup>among</sup> the Greeks, and teach the Greeks? What is  
 this word that he said, Ye shall seek me, and shall not find me: and  
 where I am, ye cannot come?

37 Now on the last day, the great *day* of the feast, Jesus stood and  
 cried, saying, If any man thirst, let him come unto me, and drink.  
 38 He that believeth on me, as the scripture hath said, out of his belly  
 39 shall flow rivers of living water. But this spake he of the Spirit,  
 which they that believed on him were to receive: <sup>for</sup> the Spirit was  
 40 not yet *given*; because Jesus was not yet glorified. *Some* of the multi-  
 tude therefore, when they heard these words, said, This is of a truth  
 41 the prophet. Others said, This is the Christ. But some said, What,  
 42 doth the Christ come out of Galilee? Hath not the scripture said  
 that the Christ cometh of the seed of David, and from Bethlehem, the  
 43 village where David was? So there arose a division in the multitude  
 44 because of him. And some of them would have taken him; but no  
 man laid hands on him.

45 The officers therefore came to the chief priests and Pharisees; and  
 46 they said unto them, Why did ye not bring him? The officers an-  
 47 swered, Never man so spake. The Pharisees therefore answered  
 48 them, Are ye also led astray? Hath any of the rulers believed on  
 49 him, or of the Pharisees? But this multitude which knoweth not the  
 50 law are accursed. Nicodemus saith unto them (he that came to him  
 51 before, being one of them), Doth our law judge a man, except it first  
 52 hear from himself and know what he doeth? They answered and said  
 unto him, Art thou also of Galilee? Search, and <sup>see</sup> that out of Galile-  
 lee ariseth no prophet.

1. Gr. *demon*. 2. Or, *marvel because of this*. *Moses hath given you circumcision*.  
 3. Gr. *of*. 4. Some ancient authorities read *for the Holy Spirit was not yet given*.  
 5. Or, *see: for out of Galilee, etc.*

## [§ 76. STORY OF AN ADULTERESS BROUGHT TO JESUS FOR JUDGMENT.

John 7:53 to 8:11.]\*

53, 1 [And they went every man unto his own house: but Jesus went unto  
 2 the mount of Olives. And early in the morning he came again into  
 the temple, and all the people came unto him; and he sat down, and  
 3 taught them. And the scribes and the Pharisees bring a woman  
 4 taken in adultery; and having set her in the midst, they say unto him,  
<sup>Master</sup> Master, this woman hath been taken in adultery, in the very act.  
 5 Now in the law Moses commanded us to stone such: what then sayest  
 6 thou of her? And this they said, <sup>tempting</sup> tempting him, that they might

\*This paragraph can no longer be considered a part of the Gospel of John, but it is in all probability a true story of Jesus, very likely drawn by early students from the collection of Papias, published about A. D. 140. See Hovey on John (American Comm. on N. T.). Observe that without it § 77 goes right on after § 75.

John 7:53 to 8:11.

have *whereof* to accuse him. But Jesus stooped down, and with his  
 7 finger wrote on the ground. But when they continued asking him,  
 he lifted up himself, and said unto them, He that is without sin  
 8 among you, let him first cast a stone at her. And again he stooped  
 9 down, and with his finger wrote on the ground. And they, when they  
 heard it, went out one by one, beginning from the eldest, *even* unto  
 the last: and Jesus was left alone, and the woman, where she was, in  
 10 the midst. And Jesus lifted up himself, and said unto her, Woman,  
 11 where are they? did no man condemn thee? And she said, No man,  
 Lord. And Jesus said, Neither do I condemn thee: go thy way; from  
 henceforth sin no more.]

1. Most of the ancient authorities omit John 7:53-8:11. Those which contain it vary much from each other. 2. Or, *Teacher*. 3. Or, *trying*.

§ 77. JESUS CLAIMS TO BE THE SON OF GOD, AND TO HAVE EXISTED  
 BEFORE ABRAHAM. ATTEMPT OF THE PEOPLE  
 TO STONE HIM.

Jerusalem.

John 8:12-59.

12 Again therefore Jesus spake unto them, saying, I am the light of  
 the world: he that followeth me shall not walk in the darkness, but  
 13 shall have the light of life. The Pharisees therefore said unto him,  
 14 Thou bearest witness of thyself; thy witness is not true. Jesus answered  
 and said unto them, Even if I bear witness of myself, my wit-  
 ness is true; for I know whence I came, and whither I go; but ye  
 15 know not whence I come, or whither I go. Ye judge after the flesh;  
 16 I judge no man. Yea and if I judge, my judgement is true; for I am  
 17 not alone, but I and the Father that sent me. Yea and in your law it  
 18 is written, that the witness of two men is true. I am he that beareth  
 witness of myself, and the Father that sent me beareth witness of me.  
 19 They said therefore unto him, Where is thy Father? Jesus answered,  
 Ye know neither me, nor my Father: if ye knew me, ye would know  
 20 my Father also. These words spake he in the treasury, as he taught  
 in the temple: and no man took him; because his hour was not yet  
 come.  
 21 He said therefore again unto them, I go away, and ye shall seek  
 22 me, and shall die in your sin: whither I go, ye cannot come. The  
 Jews therefore said, Will he kill himself, that he saith, Whither I  
 23 go, ye cannot come? And he said unto them, Ye are from beneath; I  
 24 am from above: ye are of this world; I am not of this world. I said  
 therefore unto you, that ye shall die in your sins: for except ye be-  
 25 lieve that <sup>1</sup>I am *he*, ye shall die in your sins. They said therefore unto  
 him, Who art thou? Jesus said unto them, <sup>2</sup>Even that which I have  
 26 also spoken unto you from the beginning. I have many things to  
 speak and to judge concerning you: howbeit he that sent me is true;  
 and the things which I heard from him, these speak I <sup>3</sup>unto the  
 27 world. They perceived not that he spake to them of the Father.



## John 8:12-59.

28 Jesus therefore said, When ye have lifted up the Son of man, then shall ye know that *I am he*, and *that* I do nothing of myself, but as the  
29 Father taught me, I speak these things. And he that sent me is with me: he hath not left me alone; for I do always the things that are  
30 pleasing to him. As he spake these things, many believed on him.  
31 Jesus therefore said to those Jews which had believed him, If ye  
32 abide in my word, *then* are ye truly my disciples; and ye shall know  
33 the truth, and the truth shall make you free. They answered unto him, We be Abraham's seed, and have never yet been in bondage to  
34 any man: how sayest thou, Ye shall be made free? Jesus answered them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Every one that committeth sin  
35 is the bondservant of sin. And the bondservant abideth not in the  
36 house for ever: the son abideth for ever. If therefore the Son shall  
37 make you free, ye shall be free indeed. I know that ye are Abraham's seed; yet ye seek to kill me, because my word <sup>hath</sup> not free  
38 course in you. I speak the things which I have seen with <sup>my</sup> Father; and ye also do the things which ye heard from *your* father. They answered and said unto him, Our Father is Abraham. Jesus saith unto them, If ye <sup>were</sup> Abraham's children, <sup>ye</sup> would do the works of  
40 Abraham. But now ye seek to kill me, a man that hath told you the  
41 truth, which I heard from God; this did not Abraham. Ye do the works of your father. They said unto him, We were not born of fornication; we have one Father, *even* God. Jesus said unto them, If God were your Father, ye would love me: for I came forth and am come from God; for neither have I come of myself, but he sent me.  
43 Why do ye not <sup>understand</sup> my speech? *Even* because ye cannot hear  
44 my word. Ye are of *your* father, the devil, and the lusts of your father it is your will to do. He was a murderer from the beginning,  
45 <sup>and</sup> stood not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. <sup>When</sup> he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the  
46 father thereof. But because I say the truth, ye believe me not.  
47 Which of you convicteth me of sin? If I say truth, why do ye not believe me? He that is of God heareth the words of God: for this  
48 cause ye hear *them* not, because ye are not of God. The Jews answered and said unto him, Say we not well that thou art a Samaritan, and  
49 hast a <sup>devil</sup>? Jesus answered, I have not a <sup>devil</sup>; but I honour my  
50 Father, and ye dishonour me. But I seek not mine own glory: there  
51 is one that seeketh and judgeth. Verily, verily, I say unto you, If a  
52 man keep my word, he shall never see death. The Jews said unto him, Now we know that thou hast a <sup>devil</sup>. Abraham is dead, and the prophets; and thou sayest, If a man keep my word, he shall never  
53 taste of death. Art thou greater than our father Abraham, which is  
54 dead? and the prophets are dead: whom makest thou thyself? Jesus answered, If I glorify myself, my glory is nothing: it is my Father  
55 that glorifieth me; of whom ye say, that he is your God; and ye have not known him: but I know him; and if I should say, I know him not, I shall be like unto you, a liar: but I know him, and keep his word.  
56 Your father Abraham rejoiced <sup>to</sup> see my day; and he saw it, and was  
57 glad. The Jews therefore said unto him, Thou art not yet fifty years old, and hast thou seen Abraham? Jesus said unto them, Verily,  
58 verily, I say unto you, Before Abraham <sup>was</sup>, I am. They took up



John 8:12-59.

stones therefore to cast at him: but Jesus <sup>15</sup>hid himself, and went out of the temple<sup>16</sup>.

1. Or, I am. 2. Or, How is it that I even speak to you at all? 3. Gr. into. 4. Or. I am Or, I am he: and I do. 5. Or, hath no place in you. 6. Or, the Father: do ye also therefore the things which ye heard from the Father. 7. Gr. are. 8. Some ancient authorities read ye do the works of Abraham. 9. Or, know. 10. Some ancient authorities read standeth. 11. Or, When one speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own; for his father also is a liar. 12. Gr. demon 13. Or, that he should see. 14. Gr. was born. 15. Or, was hidden, and went, etc. 16. Many ancient authorities add and going through the midst of them went his way, and so passed by.

§78. JESUS HEALS A MAN BORN BLIND. THE RULERS FORBID HIS BEING RECOGNIZED AS THE MESSIAH.

Jerusalem.

John 9:1-41.

1, 2 And as he passed by, he saw a man blind from his birth. And his disciples asked him, saying, Rabbi, who did sin, this man, or his  
3 parents, that he should be born blind? Jesus answered, Neither did this man sin, nor his parents: but that the works of God should be  
4 made manifest in him. We must work the works of him that sent  
5 me, while it is day: the night cometh, when no man can work. When  
6 I am in the world, I am the light of the world. When he had thus  
spoken, he spat on the ground, and made clay of the spittle, and  
7 anointed his eyes with the clay, and said unto him, Go, wash in the  
8 pool of Siloam (which is by interpretation, Sent). He went away  
therefore, and washed, and came seeing. The neighbours therefore,  
and they which saw him aforetime, that he was a beggar, said, Is not  
9 this he that sat and begged? Others said, It is he: others said, No,  
10 but he is like him. He said, I am *he*. They said therefore unto him,  
11 How then were thine eyes opened? He answered, the man that is  
called Jesus made clay, and anointed mine eyes, and said unto me, Go  
to Siloam, and wash: so I went away and washed, and I received sight.  
12 And they said unto him, Where is he? He saith, I know not.  
13, 14 They bring to the Pharisees him that aforetime was blind. Now  
it was the sabbath on the day when Jesus made the clay, and opened  
15 his eyes. Again therefore the Pharisees also asked him how he  
received his sight. And he said unto them, He put clay upon mine  
16 eyes, and I washed, and do see. Some therefore of the Pharisees said,  
This man is not from God, because he keepeth not the sabbath. But  
17 others said, How can a man that is a sinner do such signs? And there  
was a division among them. They say therefore unto the blind man  
again, What sayest thou of him, in that he opened thine eyes? And  
18 he said, He is a prophet. The Jews therefore did not believe concern-  
ing him, that he had been blind, and had received his sight, until  
they called the parents of him that had received his sight, and asked  
19 them, saying, Is this your son, who ye say was born blind? how then  
20 doth he now see? His parents answered and said, We know that this  
21 is our son, and that he was born blind: but how he now seeth, we  
know not; or who opened his eyes, we know not: ask him; he is of age;

## John 9:1-41.

22 he shall speak for himself. These things said his parents, because they feared the Jews: for the Jews had agreed already, that if any man should confess him *to be* Christ, he should be put out of the  
 23 synagogue. Therefore said his parents, He is of age; ask him.  
 24 So they called the second time the man that was blind, and said unto  
 25 him, Give glory to God: we know that this man is a sinner. He therefore answered, Whether he be a sinner, I know not: one thing I know,  
 26 that, whereas I was blind, now I see. They said therefore unto him,  
 27 What did he to thee? how opened he thine eyes? He answered them, I told you even now, and ye did not hear: wherefore would ye hear it  
 28 again? would ye also become his disciples? And they reviled him,  
 29 and said, Thou art his disciple, but we are disciples of Moses. We know that God hath spoken unto Moses: but as for this man, we know  
 30 not whence he is. The man answered and said unto them, Why, herein is the marvel, that ye know not whence he is, and *yet* he opened  
 31 mine eyes. We know that God heareth not sinners: but if any man  
 32 be a worshipper of God, and do his will, him he heareth. Since the world began it was never heard that any one opened the eyes of a man  
 33 born blind. If this man were not from God, he could do nothing.  
 34 They answered and said unto him, Thou wast altogether born in sins, and dost thou teach us? And they cast him out.  
 35 Jesus heard that they had cast him out; and finding him, he said,  
 36 Dost thou believe on <sup>2</sup>the Son of God? He answered and said, And  
 37 who is he, Lord, that I may believe on him? Jesus said unto him,  
 38 Thou hast both seen him, and he it is that speaketh with thee. And  
 39 he said, Lord, I believe. And he worshipped him. And Jesus said,  
 40 For judgement came I into this world, that they which see not may  
 41 also blind? Jesus said unto them, If ye were blind, ye would have no sin: but now ye say, We see: your sin remaineth.

1. Or, *and with the clay thereof anointed his eyes.* 2. Many ancient authorities read *the Son of man.*

§ 79. JESUS INTIMATES THAT HE IS GOING TO DIE FOR HIS FLOCK,  
AND COME TO LIFE AGAIN.

Jerusalem.

## John 10:1-21.

1 Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that entereth not by the door into the fold of the sheep, but climbeth up some other way, the same is a  
 2 thief and a robber. But he that entereth in by the door is <sup>1</sup>the shepherd of the sheep. To him the porter openeth; and the sheep hear  
 3 his voice: and he calleth his own sheep by name, and leadeth them  
 4 out. When he hath put forth all his own, he goeth before them, and  
 5 the sheep follow him: for they know his voice. And a stranger will  
 6 not follow, but will flee from him: for they know not the voice of  
 7 strangers. This <sup>2</sup>parable spake Jesus unto them: but they understood  
 8 not what things they were which he spake unto them.

John 10:1-21.

7 Jesus therefore said unto them again, Verily, verily, I say unto you,  
 8 I am the door of the sheep. All that came before me are thieves and  
 9 robbers: but the sheep did not hear them. I am the door: by me if  
 10 any man enter in, he shall be saved, and shall go in and go out, and  
 11 shall find pasture. The thief cometh not, but that he may steal, and  
 12 kill, and destroy: I came that they may have life, and may <sup>3</sup>have it  
 13 abundantly. I am the good shepherd: the good shepherd layeth  
 14 down his life for the sheep. He that is a hireling, and not a shep-  
 15 herd, whose own the sheep are not, beholdeth the wolf coming, and  
 16 leaveth the sheep, and fleeth, and the wolf snatcheth them, and scat-  
 17 tereth *them*: *he fleeth* because he is a hireling, and careth not for the  
 18 sheep. I am the good shepherd; and I know mine own, and mine own  
 19 know me, even as the Father knoweth me, and I know the Father;  
 20 and I lay down my life for the sheep. And other sheep I have, which  
 21 are not of this fold: them also I must <sup>4</sup>bring, and they shall hear my  
 voice; and <sup>5</sup>they shall become one flock, one shepherd. Therefore  
 doth the Father love me, because I lay down my life, that I may take  
 it again. No one <sup>6</sup>taketh it away from me, but I lay it down of my-  
 self. I have <sup>7</sup>power to lay it down, and I have <sup>8</sup>power to take it again.  
 This commandment received I from my Father.  
 19 There arose a division again among the Jews because of these  
 20 words. And many of them said, He hath a <sup>9</sup>devil, and is mad; why  
 21 hear ye him? Others said, These are not the sayings of one possessed  
 with a <sup>10</sup>devil. Can a <sup>11</sup>devil open the eyes of the blind?

1. Or, a shepherd. 2. Or, proverb. 3. Or, have abundance. 4. Or, lead. 5. Or, there shall be one flock. 6. Some ancient authorities read took it away. 7. Or, right. 8. Gr. demon.

*In § 80-88 we have matters given by Luke only, which probably occurred in Judea. Several of them are similar to events and discourses of the ministry in Galilee, given by Matthew and Mark.\**

## § 80. MISSION OF THE SEVENTY, AND THEIR RETURN.

(Compare Mission of the Twelve in § 55.)

Probably in Judea.

Luke 10:1-24.

1 Now after these things the Lord appointed seventy<sup>1</sup> others, and  
 sent them two and two before his face into every city and place,  
 2 whither he himself was about to come. And he said unto them, The  
 harvest is plenteous, but the labourers are few: pray ye therefore the  
 Lord of the harvest, that he send forth labourers into his harvest.  
 3 Go your ways: behold, I send you forth as lambs in the midst of  
 4 wolves. Carry no purse, no wallet, no shoes; and salute no man on  
 5 the way. And into whatsoever house ye shall <sup>2</sup>enter, first say, Peace

\*These sections are all we have for about three months; from the Tabernacles to the Dedication (see on § 75). Observe that here, as in previous portions of the history, we possess only a few specimens from what must have been the great mass of our Lord's doings and sayings.

## Luke 10:1-24.

6 *be* to this house. And if a son of peace *be* there, your peace shall rest  
 7 upon <sup>3</sup>him: but if not, it shall turn to you again. And in that same  
 house remain, eating and drinking such things as they give: for the  
 8 labourer is worthy of his hire. Go not from house to house. And  
 into whatsoever city ye enter, and they receive you, eat such things  
 9 as are set before you: and heal the sick that are therein, and say unto  
 10 them, The kingdom of God is come nigh unto you. But into whatso-  
 ever city ye shall enter, and they receive you not, go out into the  
 11 streets thereof and say, Even the dust from your city, that cleaveth  
 12 to our feet, we do wipe off against you: howbeit know this, that the  
 12 kingdom of God is come nigh. I say unto you, It shall be more toler-  
 13 able in that day for Sodom, than for that city. Woe unto thee,  
 Chorazin! woe unto thee, Bethsaida! for if the <sup>4</sup>mighty works had been  
 done in Tyre and Sidon, which were done in you, they would have  
 14 repented long ago, sitting in sackcloth and ashes. Howbeit it shall  
 be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon in the judgement, than for you.  
 15 And thou, Capernaum, shalt thou be exalted unto heaven? thou shalt  
 16 be brought down unto Hades. He that heareth you heareth me; and  
 he that rejecteth you rejecteth me; and he that rejecteth me rejecteth  
 him that sent me.

17 And the seventy returned with joy, saying, Lord, even the <sup>5</sup>devils  
 18 are subject unto us in thy name. And he said unto them, I beheld  
 19 Satan fallen as lightning from heaven. Behold, I have given you  
 authority to tread upon serpents and scorpions, and over all the power  
 20 of the enemy: and nothing shall in any wise hurt you. Howbeit in  
 this rejoice not, that the spirits are subject unto you; but rejoice that  
 your names are written in heaven.

21 In that same hour he rejoiced <sup>6</sup>in the Holy Spirit, and said, I <sup>7</sup>thank  
 thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that thou didst hide these  
 things from the wise and understanding, and didst reveal them unto  
 22 babes: yea, Father; <sup>8</sup>for so it was well-pleasing in thy sight. All  
 things have been delivered unto me of my Father: and no one knoweth  
 who the Son is, save the Father; and who the Father is, save the Son,  
 23 and he to whomsoever the Son willeth to reveal *him*. And turning to  
 the disciples, he said privately, Blessed are the eyes which see the  
 24 things that ye see: for I say unto you, that many prophets and kings  
 desired to see the things which ye see, and saw them not: and to hear  
 the things which ye hear, and heard them not.

1. Many ancient authorities add *and two*: and so in verse 17. 2. Or, *enter first, say*.  
 3. Or, *it*. 4. Gr. *powers*. 5. Gr. *demons*. 6. Or, *by*. 7. Or, *praise*. 8. Or, *that*.

§ 81. JESUS ANSWERS A LAWYER'S QUESTION AS TO ETERNAL LIFE,  
 GIVING THE PARABLE OF THE GOOD SAMARITAN.

Probably in Judea.

## Luke 10:25-37.

25 And behold, a certain lawyer stood up and tempted him, saying,  
 26 <sup>1</sup>Master, what shall I do to inherit eternal life? And he said unto  
 27 him, What is written in the law? how readest thou? And he answer-



Luke 10:25-37.

ing said, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God <sup>2</sup>with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy strength, and with all thy mind; 28 and thy neighbour as thyself. And he said unto him, Thou hast 29 answered right: do this, and thou shalt live. But he, desiring to 30 justify himself, said unto Jesus, And who is my neighbour? Jesus made answer and said, A certain man was going down from Jerusalem to Jericho; and he fell among robbers, which both stripped him and 31 beat him, and departed, leaving him half dead. And by chance a certain priest was going down that way: and when he saw him, he 32 passed by on the other side. And in like manner a Levite also, when 33 he came to the place, and saw him, passed by on the other side. But a certain Samaritan, as he journeyed, came where he was: and when 34 he saw him, he was moved with compassion, and came to him, and bound up his wounds, pouring on *them* oil and wine; and he set him on his own beast, and brought him to an inn, and took care of him. 35 And on the morrow he took out two <sup>3</sup>pence, and gave them to the host, and said, Take care of him; and whatsoever thou spendest more, I, 36 when I come back again, will repay thee. Which of these three, thinkest thou, proved neighbour to him that fell among the robbers? 37 And he said, He that shewed mercy on him. And Jesus said unto him, Go, and do thou likewise.

1. Or, *Teacher*. 2. Gr. *from*. 3. The word in the Greek denotes a coin worth about seventeen cents.

## § 82. JESUS THE GUEST OF MARTHA AND MARY.

Bethany, near Jerusalem.\*

Luke 10:38-42.

38 Now as they went on their way, he entered into a certain village: and a certain woman named Martha received him into her house. 39 And she had a sister called Mary, which also sat at the Lord's feet, 40 and heard his word. But Martha was <sup>1</sup>cumbered about much serving; and she came up to him, and said, Lord, dost thou not care that my sister did leave me to serve alone? bid her therefore that she help me. 41 But the Lord answered and said unto her, <sup>2</sup>Martha, Martha, thou art 42 anxious and troubled about many things: <sup>3</sup>but one thing is needful: for Mary hath chosen the good part, which shall not be taken away from her.

1. Gr. *distracted*. 2. A few ancient authorities read, *Martha, Martha, thou art troubled; Mary hath chosen, etc.* 3. Many ancient authorities read *but few things are needful, or one*.

## § 83. JESUS AGAIN GIVES A MODEL OF PRAYER (COMP. §42,D), AND ENCOURAGES HIS DISCIPLES TO PRAY.

Probably in Judea.

Luke 11:1-13.

1 And it came to pass, as he was praying in a certain place, that when he ceased, one of his disciples said unto him, Lord, teach us to pray,

\*There was another Bethany beyond Jordan (§17, 18, 89). The present Bethany, near Jerusalem, we shall visit again in §94, 104, and 117.



## Luke 11:1-13.

2 even as John also taught his disciples. And he said unto them, When  
 3 ye pray, say, 'Father, Hallowed be thy Name. Thy kingdom come.'<sup>2</sup>  
 4 Give us day by day <sup>3</sup>our daily bread. And forgive us our sins; for we  
 ourselves also forgive every one that is indebted to us. And bring us  
 not into temptation<sup>4</sup>.<sup>\*</sup>  
 5 And he said unto them, Which of you shall have a friend, and shall  
 go unto him at midnight, and say to him, Friend, lend me three  
 6 loaves; for a friend of mine is come to me from a journey, and I have  
 7 nothing to set before him; and he from within shall answer and say,  
 Trouble me not: the door is now shut, and my children are with me  
 8 in bed; I cannot rise and give thee? I say unto you, Though he will  
 not rise and give him, because he is his friend, yet because of his im-  
 9 portunity he will arise and give him <sup>6</sup>as many as he needeth. And I  
 say unto you, Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find;  
 10 knock, and it shall be opened unto you. For every one that asketh  
 receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it  
 11 shall be opened. And of which of you that is a father shall his son  
 ask a <sup>9</sup>loaf, and he give him a stone? or a fish, and he for a fish give  
 12 him a serpent? Or if he shall ask an egg, will he give him a scorpion?  
 13 If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children,  
 how much more shall *your* heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to  
 them that ask him?

1. Many ancient authorities read *Our Father, which art in heaven*. See Matt. 6:9.  
 2. Many ancient authorities add *Thy will be done, as in heaven, so on earth*. See Matt.  
 6:10. 3. *Gr. our bread for the coming day*. 4. Many ancient authorities add *but deliver*  
*us from the evil one* (or, *from evil*). See Matt. 6:13. 5. Or, *whatsoever things*. 6. Some  
 ancient authorities omit *a loaf*, and *he gave him a stone? or*.

## § 84. BLASPHEMOUS ACCUSATION OF LEAGUE WITH BEELZEBUB.

(Compare § 48.)†

Probably in Judea.

## Luke 11:14-36.

14 And he was casting out a <sup>1</sup>devil which was dumb. And it came to  
 pass, when the <sup>1</sup>devil was gone out, the dumb man spake; and the  
 15 multitudes marvelled. But some of them said, <sup>2</sup>By beelzebub the  
 16 prince of the <sup>3</sup>devils casteth he out devils. And others, tempting  
 17 him, sought of him a sign from heaven. But he, knowing their  
 thoughts, said unto them, Every kingdom divided against itself is

<sup>\*</sup>Observe that while the phraseology is here quite different from that of the prayer as given  
 in § 42, d, the ideas are the same.

†It is perfectly natural that the blasphemous accusation made in Galilee (§ 48), and proba-  
 bly more than once (§ 36, Matt. 9:34), should be repeated a year or so afterward in Judea or  
 Perea, and that Jesus should make substantially the same argument in reply. This sort of  
 thing occurs to every travelling religious teacher. Our Lord does not here give the solemn  
 warning that such an accusation is really blaspheming against the Holy Spirit, and is un-  
 pardonable. (See § 36, Luke 12:10.) And the subsequent occurrences are quite different in  
 the two cases. In § 48 ff. he afterwards goes out by the lake-side and gives the great group of  
 parables, presently explaining some of them to the disciples in a house, and then crosses the  
 lake to Gerasa, etc. Here in § 84, he breakfasts with a Pharisee, and utters such solemn woes  
 against the Pharisees as are found only in the closing months of his ministry, and then  
 gives to vast multitudes a series of instructions wholly unlike the great group of parables.  
 So it is quite unsuitable to identify this occurrence with that of § 48.

Luke 11:14-36.

brought to desolation; <sup>4</sup>and a house divided against a house falleth. 18 And if Satan also is divided against himself, how shall his kingdom 19 stand? because ye say that I cast out <sup>3</sup>devils <sup>2</sup>by Beelzebub. And if I <sup>2</sup>by Beelzebub cast out <sup>3</sup>devils, by whom do your sons cast them out? 20 therefore shall they be your judges. But if I by the finger of God 21 cast out <sup>3</sup>devils, then is the kingdom of God come upon you. When the strong *man* fully armed guardeth his own court, his goods are in 22 peace: but when a stronger than he shall come upon him, and overcome him, he taketh from him his whole armour wherein he trusted, 23 and divideth his spoils. He that is not with me is against me; and 24 he that gathereth not with me scattereth. The unclean spirit when <sup>5</sup>he is gone out of the man, passeth through waterless places, seeking rest; and finding none, <sup>5</sup>he saith, I will turn back unto my house 25 whence I came out. And when he is come, <sup>5</sup>he findeth it swept and 26 garnished. Then goeth <sup>5</sup>he, and taketh *to him* seven other spirits more evil than <sup>6</sup>himself; and they enter in and dwell there: and the last state of that man cometh worse than the first. 27 And it came to pass, as he said these things, a certain woman out of the multitude lifted up her voice, and said unto him, Blessed is the 28 womb that bare thee, and the breasts which thou didst suck. But he said, Yea rather, blessed are they that hear the word of God, and keep it. 29 And when the multitudes were gathering together unto him, he began to say, This generation is an evil generation: it seeketh after a sign; and there shall no sign be given to it but the sign of Jonah. 30 For even as Jonah became a sign unto the Ninevites, so shall also the 31 Son of man be to this generation. The queen of the south shall rise up in the judgement with the men of this generation, and shall condemn them: for she came from the ends of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon; and behold, <sup>7</sup>a greater than Solomon is here. The men of Nineveh shall stand up in the judgement with this generation and shall condemn it: for they repented at the preaching of Jonah; and behold, <sup>7</sup>a greater than Jonah is here. 33 No man, when he hath lighted a lamp, putteth it in a cellar, neither under the bushel, but on the stand, that they which enter in may see 34 the light. The lamp of thy body is thine eye: when thine eye is single, thy whole body also is full of light; but when it is evil, thy body 35 also is full of darkness. Look therefore whether the light that is in 36 thee be not darkness. If therefore thy whole body be full of light, having no part dark, it shall be wholly full of light, as when the lamp with its bright shining doth give the light.

1. Gr. *demon*. 2. Or, *in*. 3. Gr. *demons*. 4. Or, *and house falleth upon house*. 5. Or, *it*. 6. Or, *itself*. 7. Gr. *more than*.

§ 85. WHILE BREAKFASTING WITH A PHARISEE, JESUS SEVERELY  
DENOUNCES THE PHARISEES AND LAWYERS, AND  
EXCITES THEIR ENMITY.

Probably in Judea.

Luke 11:37-54.

37 Now as he spake, a Pharisee asketh him to <sup>1</sup>dine with him: and he

## Luke 11:37-54.

38 went in, and sat down to meat. And when the Pharisee saw it, he  
 39 marvelled that he had not washed before <sup>1</sup>dinner. And the Lord said  
 unto him, Now do ye Pharisees cleanse the outside of the cup and of  
 the platter; but your inward part is full of extortion and wickedness.  
 40 Ye foolish ones, did not he that made the outside make the inside  
 41 also? Howbeit give for alms those things which <sup>2</sup>are within; and be-  
 hold, all things are clean unto you.  
 42 But woe unto you Pharisees! for ye tithe mint and rue and every  
 herb, and pass over judgement and the love of God: but these ought  
 43 ye to have done, and not to leave the other undone. Woe unto you  
 Pharisees! for ye love the chief seats in the synagogues, and the salu-  
 44 tations in the marketplaces. Woe unto you! for ye are as the tombs  
 which appear not, and the men that walk over *them* know it not.  
 45 And one of the lawyers answering saith unto him, <sup>3</sup>Master, in say-  
 46 ing this thou reproachest us also. And he said, Woe unto you law-  
 47 yers also! for ye lade men with burdens grievous to be borne, and ye  
 yourselves touch not the burdens with one of your fingers. Woe unto  
 48 you! for ye build the tombs of the prophets, and your fathers killed  
 49 them. So ye are witnesses and consent unto the works of your fathers:  
 50 for they killed them, and ye build *their tombs*. Therefore also said  
 the wisdom of God, I will send unto them prophets and apostles; and  
 51 *some* of them they shall kill and persecute; that the blood of all the  
 prophets, which was shed from the foundation of the world, may be  
 52 required of this generation; from the blood of Abel unto the blood of  
 Zachariah, who perished between the altar and the <sup>4</sup>sanctuary: yea, I  
 53 say unto you, it shall be required of this generation. Woe unto you  
 lawyers! for ye took away the key of knowledge: ye entered not in  
 yourselves, and them that were entering in ye hindered.  
 54 And when he was come out from thence, the scribes and the Phari-  
 sees began to <sup>5</sup>press upon *him* vehemently, and to provoke him to  
 speak of <sup>6</sup>many things; laying wait for him, to catch something out of  
 his mouth.

1. Gr. *breakfast*. 2. Or, *ye can*. 3. Or, *Teacher*. 4. Gr. *house*. 5. Or, *set themselves*  
*vehemently against him*. 6. Or, *more*.

§ 86. HE SPEAKS TO HIS DISCIPLES AND A VAST THROG, ABOUT  
 HYPOCRISY, WORLDLY ANXIETIES (COMP. §42, E), WATCHFUL-  
 NESS, AND HIS OWN APPROACHING PASSION.

Probably in Judea.

## Luke 12.

1 In the mean time, when <sup>1</sup>the many thousands of the multitude were  
 gathered together, insomuch that they trode one upon another, he  
 began to <sup>2</sup>say unto his disciples first of all, Beware ye of the leaven of  
 the Pharisees, which is hypocrisy. But there is nothing covered up;  
 3 that shall not be revealed: and hid, that shall not be known. Where-  
 fore whatsoever ye have said in the darkness shall be heard in the  
 light; and what ye have spoken in the ear in the inner chambers shall

## Luke 12.

4 be proclaimed upon the housetops. And I say unto you my friends, Be not afraid of them which kill the body, and after that have no  
5 more that they can do. But I will warn you whom ye shall fear: Fear him, which after he hath killed hath <sup>2</sup>power to cast into <sup>3</sup>hell; yea, I  
6 say unto you, Fear him. Are not five sparrows sold for two farthings?  
7 and not one of them is forgotten in the sight of God. But the very hairs of your head are all numbered. Fear not: ye are of more value  
8 than many sparrows. And I say unto you, Every one who shall confess <sup>4</sup>me before men, <sup>5</sup>him shall the Son of man also confess before the  
9 angels of God: but he that denieth me in the presence of men shall be  
10 denied in the presence of the angels of God. And every one who shall speak a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but  
11 unto him that blasphemeth against the Holy Spirit it shall not be forgiven. And when they bring you before the synagogues, and the  
12 rulers, and the authorities, be not anxious how or what ye shall answer, or what ye shall say: for the Holy Spirit shall teach you in that  
13 very hour what ye ought to say.  
14 And one out of the multitude said unto him, <sup>1</sup>Master, bid my brother divide the inheritance with me. But he said unto him, Man, who  
15 made me a judge or a divider over you? And he said unto them, Take heed, and keep yourselves from all covetousness: <sup>6</sup>for a man's  
16 life consisteth not in the abundance of the things which he possesseth.  
17 And he spake a parable unto them, saying, The ground of a certain rich man brought forth plentifully: and he reasoned within himself, saying, What shall I do, because I have not where to bestow my  
18 fruits? And he said, This will I do: I will pull down my barns, and build greater; and there will I bestow all my corn and my goods.  
19 And I will say to my <sup>7</sup>soul, <sup>8</sup>Soul, thou hast much goods laid up for many years; take thine ease, eat, drink, be merry. But God said  
20 unto him, Thou foolish one, this night <sup>9</sup>is thy <sup>10</sup>soul required of thee; and the things which thou hast prepared, whose shall they be? So  
21 is he that layeth up treasure for himself, and is not rich toward God.  
22 And he said unto his disciples, Therefore I say unto you, Be not anxious for *your* <sup>11</sup>life, what ye shall eat; nor yet for your body, what ye shall put  
23 on. For the <sup>12</sup>life is more than the food, and the body than the raiment. Consider the ravens, that they sow not, neither reap; which  
24 have no store-chamber nor barn; and God feedeth them: of how much more value are ye than the birds! And which of you by being anxious can add a cubit unto his <sup>13</sup>stature? If then ye are not able to do  
25 even that which is least, why are ye anxious concerning the rest?  
26 Consider the lilies, how they grow: they toil not, neither do they spin; yet I say unto you, Even Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these. But if God doth so clothe the grass in the field, which to-day is, and to-morrow is cast into the oven; how much more  
27 shall *he* clothe you, O ye of little faith? And seek not ye what ye shall eat, and what ye shall drink, neither be ye of doubtful mind. For all these things do the nations of the world seek after: but your Father  
28 knoweth that ye have need of these things. Howbeit seek ye <sup>14</sup>his kingdom, and these things shall be added unto you. Fear not, little flock; for it is your Father's good pleasure to give you the kingdom.  
29 Sell that ye have, and give alms; make for yourselves purses which wax not old, a treasure in the heavens that faileth not, where no thief



## Luke 12.

34 draweth near, neither moth destroyeth. For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also.

35, 36 Let your loins be girded about, and your lamps burning; and be ye yourselves like unto men looking for their lord, when he shall return from the marriage feast; that, when he cometh and knocketh, they may straightway open unto him. Blessed are those <sup>14</sup>servants, whom the lord when he cometh shall find watching: verily I say unto you, that he shall gird himself, and make them sit down to meat, and shall come and serve them. And if he shall come in the second watch, and if in the third, and find *them* so, blessed are those *servants*. 39 <sup>15</sup>But know this, that if the master of the house had known in what hour the thief was coming, he would have watched, and not have left his house to be <sup>16</sup>broken through. Be ye also ready: for in an hour that ye think not the Son of man cometh.

41 And Peter said, Lord, speakest thou this parable unto us, or even unto all? And the Lord said, Who then is <sup>17</sup>the faithful and wise steward, whom his lord shall set over his household, to give them their portion of food in due season? Blessed is that <sup>18</sup>servant, whom his lord when he cometh shall find so doing. Of a truth I say unto you, that he will set him over all that he hath. But if that <sup>18</sup>servant shall say in his heart, My lord delayeth his coming; and shall begin to beat the menservants and the maidservants, and to eat and drink, and to be drunken; the lord of that <sup>18</sup>servant shall come in a day when he expecteth not, and in an hour when he knoweth not, and shall cut him asunder, and appoint his portion with the unfaithful. And that <sup>18</sup>servant, which knew his lord's will, and made not ready, nor did according to his will, shall be beaten with many stripes; but he that knew not, and did things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few stripes. And to whomsoever much is given, of him shall much be required: and to whom they commit much, of him will they ask the more.

49 I came to cast fire upon the earth; and what will I, if it is already kindled? But I have a baptism to be baptized with; and how am I straitened till it be accomplished! Think ye that I am come to give peace in the earth? I tell you, Nay; but rather division: for there shall be from henceforth five in one house divided, three against two, and two against three. They shall be divided, father against son, and son against father; mother against daughter, and daughter against her mother; mother in law against her daughter in law, and daughter in law against her mother in law.

54 And he said to the multitudes also, When ye see a cloud rising in the west, straightway ye say, There cometh a shower; and so it cometh to pass. And when ye see a south wind blowing, ye say, There will be a <sup>20</sup>scorching heat; and it cometh to pass. Ye hypocrites, ye know how to <sup>21</sup>interpret the face of the earth and the heaven; but how is it that ye know not how to <sup>21</sup>interpret this time? And why even of yourselves judge ye not what is right? For as thou art going with thine adversary before the magistrate, on the way give diligence to be quit of him; lest haply he hale thee unto the judge, and the judge shall deliver thee to the <sup>22</sup>officer, and the <sup>22</sup>officer shall cast thee into



## Luke 12.

59 prison. I say unto thee, Thou shalt by no means come out thence, till thou have paid the very last mite.

1. Gr. *the myriads of*. 2. Or, *say unto his disciples, First of all beware ye*. 3. Or, *authority*. 4. Gr. *Gehenna*. 5. Gr. *in me*. 6. Gr. *in him*. 7. Or, *Teacher*. 8. Gr. *for not in a man's abundance consisteth his life, from the things which he possesseth*. 9. Or, *life*. 10. Gr. *they require thy soul*. 11. Or, *soul*. 12. Or, *age*. 13. Many ancient authorities read *the kingdom of God*. 14. Gr. *bond-servants*. 15. Or, *But this ye know*. 16. Or, *digged through*. 17. Or, *the faithful steward, the wise man whom, etc*. 18. Gr. *bond-servant*. 19. Or, *severely scourge him*. 20. Or, *hot wind*. 21. Gr. *prove*. 22. Gr. *exactor*.

§ 87. ALL MUST REPENT OR PERISH; PARABLE OF THE BARREN FIG TREE.

Probably in Judea.

## Luke 13: 1-9.

1 Now there were some present at that very season which told him of the Galileans, whose blood Pilate had mingled with their sacrifices.  
2 And he answered and said unto them, Think ye that these Galileans were sinners above all the Galileans, because they have suffered these 3 things? I tell you, Nay: but, except ye repent, ye shall all in like 4 manner perish. Or those eighteen, upon whom the tower in Siloam fell, and killed them, think ye that they were 'offenders above all the 5 men that dwell in Jerusalem? I tell you, Nay: but, except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish.  
6 And he spake this parable; A certain man had a fig tree planted in his vineyard; and he came seeking fruit thereon, and found none.  
7 And he said unto the vinedresser, Behold, these three years I come seeking fruit on this fig tree, and find none: cut it down; why doth it 8 also cumber the ground? And he answering saith unto him, Lord, 9 let it alone this year also, till I shall dig about it, and dung it: and if it bear fruit thenceforth, *well*; but if not, thou shalt cut it down.

1. Gr. *debtors*.

§ 88. JESUS HEALS ON THE SABBATH, AND DEFENDS HIMSELF (COMP. § 37-39 AND § 91). PARABLES OF THE MUSTARD SEED AND THE LEAVEN (COMP. § 51 D).

Probably in Judea.

## Luke 13:10-21.

10 And he was teaching in one of the synagogues on the sabbath day.  
11 And behold, a woman which had a spirit of infirmity eighteen years;  
12 and she was bowed together, and could in no wise lift herself up. And when Jesus saw her, he called her, and said to her, Woman, thou art 13 loosed from thine infirmity. And he laid his hands upon her: and 14 immediately she was made straight, and glorified God. And the ruler of the synagogue, being moved with indignation because Jesus had healed on the sabbath, answered and said to the multitude, There

## Luke 13:10-21.

are six days in which men ought to work: in them therefore come and  
 15 be healed, and not on the day of the sabbath. But the Lord answered  
 him, and said, Ye hypocrites, doth not each one of you on the sabbath  
 loose his ox or his ass from the stall, and lead him away to watering?  
 16 And ought not this woman, being a daughter of Abraham, whom  
 Satan had bound, lo, *these* eighteen years, to have been loosed from  
 17 this bond on the day of the sabbath? And as he said these things,  
 all his adversaries were put to shame: and all the multitude rejoiced  
 for all the glorious things that were done by him.  
 18 He said therefore, Unto what is the kingdom of God like? and  
 19 whereunto shall I liken it? It is like unto a grain of mustard seed,  
 which a man took, and cast into his own garden; and it grew, and be-  
 came a tree; and the birds of the heaven lodged in the branches  
 20 thereof. And again he said, Whereunto shall I liken the kingdom of  
 21 God? It is like unto leaven, which a woman took and hid in three  
 measures of meal, till it was all leavened.

1. Gr. *manger*. 2. The word in the Gr. denotes the Hebrew seah, a measure containing nearly a peck and a half (cf. on Matt. 13:33).

*Here again the Gospel of John takes us up, and carries us to Jerusalem, and then to Perea.*

§ 89. AT THE FEAST OF DEDICATION, JESUS WILL NOT YET OPENLY  
 SAY THAT HE IS THE MESSIAH. THEY TRY TO STONE  
 HIM, AND HE RETIRES TO PEREA.

Jerusalem, and Bethany beyond the Jordan.

## John 10:22-42.

22 And it was the feast of the dedication at Jerusalem: it was win-  
 23 ter; and Jesus was walking in the temple in Solomon's porch.  
 24 The Jews therefore came round about him, and said unto him, How  
 25 long dost thou hold us in suspense? If thou art the Christ, tell us  
 plainly. Jesus answered them, I told you, and ye believe not: the  
 26 works that I do in my Father's name, these bear witness of me. But  
 27 ye believe not, because ye are not of my sheep. My sheep hear my  
 28 voice, and I know them, and they follow me: and I give unto them  
 eternal life; and they shall never perish, and no one shall snatch them  
 29 out of my hand. My Father, which hath given *them* unto me, is  
 greater than all; and no one is able to snatch *them* out of the Father's  
 30, 31 hand. I and the Father are one. The Jews took up stones again  
 32 to stone him. Jesus answered them, Many good works have I shewed  
 33 you from the Father; for which of those works do ye stone me? The  
 Jews answered him, For a good work we stone thee not, but for blas-  
 phemy; and because that thou, being a man, makest thyself God.  
 34 Jesus answered them, Is it not written in your law, I said, ye are gods?  
 35 If he called them gods, unto whom the word of God came (and the  
 36 scripture cannot be broken), say ye of him, whom the Father sancti-  
 fied and sent into the world, Thou blasphemest; because I said, I am

John 10:22-42.

37 *the Son of God?* If I do not the works of my Father, believe me not.  
38 But if I do them, though you believe not me, believe the works: that  
ye may know and understand that the Father is in me, and I in the

39 Father. They sought again to take him: and he went forth out of  
their hand.  
40 And he went away again beyond Jordan into the place where John  
41 was at the first baptizing; and there he abode. And many came unto  
him; and they said, John indeed did no sign: but all things whatsoever  
42 John spake of this man were true. And many believed on him there.

1. Some ancient authorities read *At that time was the feast.* 2. Some ancient authorities read *That which my Father hath given unto me.* 3. Or, aught. 4. Or, consecrated.

*Notice that §90-93 are from Luke alone, and the matters seem to have occurred in Perea.*

§ 90. TEACHING IN PEREA, ON A JOURNEY TOWARD JERUSALEM.  
WARNED AGAINST HEROD ANTIPAS.

Luke 13:22-35.

22 And he went on his way through cities and villages, teaching, and  
23 journeying on unto Jerusalem.\* And one said unto him, Lord, are  
24 they few that be saved? And he said unto them, Strive to enter in  
by the narrow door: for many, I say unto you, shall seek to enter in, and  
25 shall not be able. When once the master of the house is risen up,  
and hath shut to the door, and ye begin to stand without, and to  
knock at the door, saying, Lord, open to us; and he shall answer and  
26 say to you, I know you not whence ye are; then shall ye begin to say,  
We did eat and drink in thy presence, and thou didst teach in our  
27 streets; and he shall say, I tell you, I know not whence ye are; depart  
28 from me, all ye workers of iniquity. There shall be weeping and  
gnashing of teeth, when ye shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob,  
and all the prophets, in the kingdom of God, and yourselves cast forth  
29 without. And they shall come from the east and west, and from  
the north and south, and shall sit down in the kingdom of God.  
30 And behold, there are last which shall be first, and there are first  
which shall be last.

31 In that very hour there came certain Pharisees, saying to him, Get  
32 thee out, and go hence: for Herod would fain kill thee. And he said  
unto them, Go and say to that fox, Behold, I cast out devils and per-  
form cures to-day and to-morrow, and the third day I am perfected.  
33 Howbeit I must go on my way to-day and to-morrow and the day fol-  
34 lowing: for it cannot be that a prophet perish out of Jerusalem. O  
Jerusalem, Jerusalem, which killeth the prophets, and stoneth them  
that are sent unto her! how often would I have gathered thy children  
together, even as a hen gathereth her own brood under her wings, and

\*The period of three to four months from the Dedication to the final Passover is divided by another visit to Jerusalem (§ 94). We cannot tell how many weeks preceded this event. All along here we have only a few specimens of the Saviour's teaching and works.

35 ye would not! Behold, your house is left unto you *desolate*: and I say unto you, Ye shall not see me, until ye shall say, Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord.

1. Or, *able, when once*. 2. Gr. *recline*. 3. Gr. *demons*.

§ 91. WHILE DINING (BREAKFASTING) WITH A CHIEF PHARISEE, HE AGAIN HEALS ON THE SABBATH, AND DEFENDS HIMSELF (COMP. § 88, AND § 37-39). THREE LESSONS SUGGESTED BY THE OCCASION.

Probably in Perea.

Luke 14:1-24.

1 And it came to pass, when he went into the house of one of the rulers of the Pharisees on a sabbath to eat bread, that they were 2 watching him. And behold, there was before him a certain man 3 which had the dropsy. And Jesus answering spake unto the lawyers and Pharisees, saying, Is it lawful to heal on the sabbath, or not? 4 But they held their peace. And he took him, and healed him, and 5 let him go. And he said unto them, Which of you shall have 'an ass or an ox fallen into a well, and will not straightway draw him up on a 6 sabbath day? And they could not answer again unto these things. 7 And he spake a parable unto those which were bidden, when he 8 marked how they chose out the chief seats; saying unto them, When thou art bidden of any man to a marriage feast, <sup>2</sup>sit not down in the chief seat; lest haply a more honourable man than thou be bidden of 9 him, and he that bade thee and him shall come and say to thee, Give this man place; and then thou shalt begin with shame to take the 10 lowest place. But when thou art bidden, go and sit down in the lowest place; that when he that hath bidden thee cometh, he may say to thee, Friend, go up higher: then shalt thou have glory in the pres- 11 ence of all that sit at meat with thee. For every one that exalteth himself shall be humbled; and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted. 12 And he said to him also that had bidden him, When thou makest a dinner or a supper,\* call not thy friends, nor thy brethren, nor thy kinsmen, nor rich neighbours; lest haply they also bid thee again, 13 and a recompense be made thee. But when thou makest a feast, bid the poor, the maimed, the lame, the blind: and thou shalt be blessed; 14 because they have not *wherewith* to recompense thee: for thou shalt be recompensed in the resurrection of the just. 15 And when one of them that sat at meat with him heard these things, he said unto him, Blessed is he that shall eat bread in the 16 kingdom of God. But he said unto him, A certain man made a great 17 supper; and he bade many: and he sent forth his <sup>2</sup>servant at supper

\*More exactly, "a breakfast or a dinner" (comp. § 85 and § 140). The two principal meals of the Jews answered to the present English breakfast (in the forenoon and often near noon), and dinner (at or after dark); and so in our cities. In the time of King James, as in many of our country homes now, the meal towards noon answered to dinner, and the night meal to supper. Hence a certain confusion in the older and more recent English versions.—In ver. 16, 17 the right word would be dinner, according to city usage, and so elsewhere.



Luke 14:1-24.

time to say to them that were bidden, Come, for *all* things are now ready. And they all with one *consent* began to make excuse. The first said unto him, I have bought a field, and I must needs go out and see it: I pray thee have me excused. And another said, I have bought five yoke of oxen, and I go to prove them: I pray thee have me excused. And another said, I have married a wife, and therefore I cannot come. And the <sup>s</sup>servant came, and told his lord these things. Then the master of the house being angry said to his <sup>s</sup>servant, Go out quickly into the streets and lanes of the city, and bring in hither the poor and maimed and blind and lame. And the <sup>s</sup>servant said, Lord, what thou didst command is done, and yet there is room. And the Lord said unto the <sup>s</sup>servant, Go out into the highways and hedges, and constrain *them* to come in, that my house may be filled. For I say unto you, that none of those men which were bidden shall taste of my supper.

1. Many ancient authorities read *a son*. See ch. 13:15. 2. Gr. *recline not*. 3. Gr. *bond-servant*.

§ 92. GREAT CROWDS FOLLOW HIM, AND HE WARNS THEM TO COUNT THE COST OF DISCIPLESHIP TO HIM (COMP. §59).

Probably in Perea.

Luke 14:25-35.

Now there went with him great multitudes: and he turned, and said unto them, If any man cometh unto me, and hateth not his own father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters, yea, and his own life also, he cannot be my disciple. Whosoever doth not bear his own cross, and come after me, cannot be my disciple. For which of you, desiring to build a tower, doth not first sit down and count the cost, whether he have *wherewith* to complete it? Lest haply, when he hath laid a foundation, and is not able to finish, all that behold begin to mock him, saying, This man began to build, and was not able to finish. Or what king, as he goeth to encounter another king in war, will not sit down first and take counsel whether he is able with ten thousand to meet him that cometh against him with twenty thousand? Or else, while the other is yet a great way off, he sendeth an embassy, and asketh conditions of peace. So therefore whosoever he be of you that renounceth not all that he hath, he cannot be my disciple. Salt therefore is good; but if even the salt have lost its savour, wherewith shall it be seasoned? It is fit neither for the land nor for the dunghill: *men* cast it out. He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.



§ 93. FIVE GREAT PARABLES—THE LOST SHEEP, THE LOST COIN, THE LOST SON—THE UNRIGHTEOUS STEWARD—THE RICH MAN AND LAZARUS. SOME OTHER BRIEF LESSONS.

Probably in Perea.

Luke 15:1 to 17:10.

- 1 Now all the publicans and sinners were drawing near unto him for  
2 to hear him. And both the Pharisees and the scribes murmured,  
saying, This man receiveth sinners, and eateth with them.
- 3, 4 And he spake unto them this parable, saying, What man of you,  
having a hundred sheep, and having lost one of them, doth not leave  
the ninety and nine in the wilderness, and go after that which is lost,  
5 until he find it? And when he hath found it, he layeth it on his  
6 shoulders, rejoicing. And when he cometh home, he calleth together  
his friends and his neighbours, saying unto them, Rejoice with me,  
7 for I have found my sheep which was lost. I say unto you, that even  
so there shall be joy in heaven over one sinner that repenteth, *more*  
than over ninety and nine righteous persons, which need no repent-  
ance.
- 8 Or what woman having ten pieces of silver, if she lose one piece,  
doth not light a lamp, and sweep the house, and seek diligently until  
9 she find it? And when she hath found it, she calleth together her  
friends and neighbours, saying, Rejoice with me, for I have found the  
10 piece which I had lost. Even so, I say unto you, there is joy in the  
presence of the angels of God over one sinner that repenteth.
- 11, 12 And he said, A certain man had two sons: and the younger of  
them said to his father, Father, give me the portion of *thy* substance  
13 that falleth to me. And he divided unto them his living. And not  
many days after the younger son gathered all together, and took his  
journey into a far country; and there he wasted his substance with  
14 riotous living. And when he had spent all, there arose a mighty  
15 famine in that country; and he began to be in want. And he went  
and joined himself to one of the citizens of that country; and he sent  
16 him into his fields to feed swine. And he would fain have been filled  
with *the* husks that the swine did eat: and no man gave unto him.
- 17 But when he came to himself he said, How many hired servants of  
my father's have bread enough and to spare, and I perish here with  
18 hunger! I will arise and go to my father, and will say unto him,  
19 Father, I have sinned against heaven, and in thy sight: I am no more  
worthy to be called thy son: make me as one of thy hired servants.
- 20 And he arose, and came to his father. But while he was yet afar off,  
his father saw him, and was moved with compassion, and ran, and fell  
21 on his neck, and *kissed* him. And the son said unto him, Father, I  
have sinned against heaven, and in thy sight; I am no more worthy  
22 to be called thy son.<sup>5</sup> But the father said to his *servants*, Bring  
forth quickly the best robe, and put it on him; and put a ring on his  
23 hand, and shoes on his feet: and bring the fatted calf, *and* kill it, and  
24 let us eat, and make merry: for this my son was dead, and is alive  
25 again; he was lost, and is found. And they began to be merry. Now  
his elder son was in the field: and as he came and drew nigh to the  
26 house, he heard music and dancing. And he called to him one of the

Luke 15:1 to 17:10.

- 27 <sup>6</sup>servants, and inquired what these things might be. And he said<sup>\*</sup> unto him, Thy brother is come; and thy father hath killed the fatted  
28 calf, because he hath received him safe and sound. But he was angry, and would not go in: and his father came out, and entreated him.  
29 But he answered and said to his father, Lo, these many years do I serve thee, and I never transgressed a commandment of thine: and yet thou never gavest me a kid, that I might make merry with my  
30 friends: but when this thy son came, which hath devoured thy living  
31 with harlots, thou killedst for him the fatted calf. And he said unto  
32 him, 'Son, thou art ever with me, and all that is mine is thine. But it was meet to make merry and be glad: for this thy brother was dead, and is alive *again*; and *was* lost, and is found.
- 16 And he said unto the disciples, There was a certain rich man, which had a steward; and the same was accused unto him that he was wasting his goods. And he called him, and said unto him, What is this that I hear of thee? render the account of thy stewardship; for thou  
3 canst be no longer steward. And the steward said within himself, What shall I do, seeing that my lord taketh away the stewardship  
4 from me? I have not strength to dig; to beg I am ashamed. I am resolved what to do, that, when I am put out of the stewardship, they  
5 may receive me into their houses. And calling to him each one of his lord's debtors, he said to the first, How much owest thou unto my  
6 lord? And he said, A hundred <sup>9</sup>measures of oil. And he said unto  
7 him, Take thy <sup>9</sup>bond, and sit down quickly and write fifty. Then said he to another, And how much owest thou? And he said, A hundred  
8 <sup>10</sup>measures of wheat. He saith unto him, Take thy <sup>9</sup>bond, and  
8 write fourscore. And his lord commended <sup>11</sup>the unrighteous steward because he had done wisely: for the sons of this <sup>12</sup>world are for their  
9 own generation wiser than the sons of the light. And I say unto you, make to yourselves friends <sup>13</sup>by means of the mammon of unrighteousness; that, when it shall fail, they may receive you into the eternal  
10 tabernacles. He that is faithful in a very little is faithful also in  
11 much. If therefore ye have not been faithful in the unrighteous  
12 mammon, who will commit to your trust the true *riches*?. And if ye have not been faithful in that which is another's, who will give you  
13 that which is <sup>14</sup>your own? No <sup>15</sup>servant can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon.
- 14 And the Pharisees, who were lovers of money, heard all these  
15 things; and they scoffed at him. And he said unto them, Ye are they that justify yourselves in the sight of men; but God knoweth your hearts: for that which is exalted among men is an abomination in the  
16 sight of God. The law and the prophets *were* until John: from that time the gospel of the kingdom of God is preached, and every man  
17 entereth violently into it. But it is easier for heaven and earth to  
18 pass away, than for one tittle of the law to fall. Every one that putteth away his wife, and marrieth another, committeth adultery: and he that marrieth one that is put away from a husband committeth adultery.
- 19 Now there was a certain rich man, and he was clothed in purple and  
20 fine linen, <sup>16</sup>faring sumptuously every day: and a certain beggar named  
21 Lazarus was laid at his gate, full of sores, and desiring to be fed with

Luke 15:1 to 17:10.

the *crumbs* that fell from the rich man's table; yea, even the dogs  
 22 came and licked his sores. And it came to pass, that the beggar  
 died, and that he was carried away by the angels into Abraham's  
 23 bosom: and the rich man also died, and was buried. And in Hades  
 he lifted up his eyes, being in torments, and seeth Abraham afar off,  
 24 and Lazarus in his bosom. And he cried and said, Father Abraham,  
 have mercy on me, and send Lazarus, that he may dip the tip of his  
 finger in water, and cool my tongue; for I am in anguish in this flame.  
 25 But Abraham said, <sup>17</sup>Son, remember that thou in thy lifetime receiv-  
 edst thy good things, and Lazarus in like manner evil things: but now  
 26 here he is comforted, and thou art in anguish. And <sup>18</sup>beside all this,  
 between us and you there is a great gulf fixed, that they which would  
 pass from hence to you may not be able, and that none may cross over  
 27 from thence to us. And he said, I pray thee therefore, father, that  
 28 thou wouldest send him to my father's house: for I have five brethren;  
 that he may testify unto them; lest they also come into this place of  
 29 torment. But Abraham saith, They have Moses and the prophets;  
 30 let them hear them. And he said, Nay, father Abraham: but if one  
 31 go to them from the dead, they will repent. And he said unto him,  
 If they hear not Moses and the prophets, neither will they be per-  
 suaded, if one rise from the dead.

17 And he said unto his disciples, It is impossible but that occasions of  
 stumbling should come: but woe unto him, through whom they come!  
 2 It were well for him if a millstone were hanged about his neck, and  
 he were thrown into the sea, rather than that he should cause one of  
 3 these little ones to stumble. Take heed to yourselves: if thy brother  
 4 sin, rebuke him; and if he repent, forgive him. And if he sin against  
 thee seven times in the day, and seven times turn again to thee, say-  
 ing, I repent; thou shalt forgive him.

5, 6 And the apostles said unto the Lord, Increase our faith. And the  
 Lord said, If ye have faith as a grain of mustard seed, ye would say  
 unto this sycamine tree, Be thou rooted up, and be thou planted in  
 7 the sea; and it would have obeyed you. But who is there of you, hav-  
 ing a <sup>19</sup>servant plowing or keeping sheep, that will say unto him, when  
 he is come in from the field, Come straightway and sit down to meat;  
 8 and will not rather say unto him, Make ready wherewith I may sup, and  
 gird thyself, and serve me, till I have eaten and drunken; and after-  
 9 ward thou shalt eat and drink? Doth he thank the <sup>19</sup>servant because  
 10 he did the things that were commanded? Even so ye also, when ye  
 shall have done all the things that are commanded you, say, We are  
 unprofitable <sup>20</sup>servants; we have done that which it was our duty to  
 do.

1. Gr. *drachma*, a coin worth about sixteen cents. 2. Gr. *the*. 3. Gr. *the pods of the carob-tree*. 4. Gr. *kissed him much*. 5. Some ancient authorities add *make me as one of thy hired servants*. See ver. 19. 6. Gr. *bond-servants*. 7. Gr. *Child*. 8. Gr. *baths*, the bath being a Hebrew measure. See Ezek. 45:10, 11, 14. 9. Gr. *writings*. 10. Gr. *cors*, the cor being a Hebrew measure. See Ezek. 45:14. 11. Gr. *the steward of unrighteousness*. 12. Or, *age*. 13. Gr. *out of*. 14. Some ancient authorities read, *our own*. 15. Gr. *household-servant*. 16. Or, *living in mirth and splendor every day*. 17. Gr. *Child*. 18. Or, *in all these things*. 19. Gr. *bond-servant*. 20. Gr. *bond-servants*.



## § 94. JESUS RAISES LAZARUS FROM THE DEAD.

From Perea\* to Bethany near Jerusalem.

John 11:1-46.

1 Now a certain man was sick, Lazarus of Bethany, of the village of  
 2 Mary and her sister Martha. And it was that Mary, which anointed  
 the Lord with ointment, and wiped his feet with her hair, whose  
 3 brother Lazarus was sick. The sisters therefore sent unto him, say-  
 4 ing, Lord, behold, he whom thou lovest is sick. But when Jesus  
 heard it, he said, this sickness is not unto death, but for the glory of  
 5 God, that the Son of God may be glorified thereby. Now Jesus loved  
 6 Martha, and her sister, and Lazarus. When therefore he heard that  
 he was sick, he abode at that time two days in the place where he was.  
 7 Then after this he saith to the disciples, Let us go into Judea again.  
 8 The disciples say unto him, Rabbi, the Jews were but now seeking to  
 9 stone thee; and goest thou thither again? Jesus answered, Are there  
 not twelve hours in the day? If a man walk in the day, he stumbleth  
 10 not, because he seeth the light of this world. But if a man walk in  
 11 the night, he stumbleth, because the light is not in him. These things  
 spake he: and after this he saith unto them, Our friend Lazarus is  
 12 fallen asleep; but I go, that I may awake him out of sleep. The dis-  
 ciples therefore said unto him, Lord, if he is fallen asleep, he will  
 13 recover. Now Jesus had spoken of his death: but they thought that  
 14 he spake of taking rest in sleep. Then Jesus therefore said unto  
 15 them plainly, Lazarus is dead. And I am glad for your sakes that I  
 was not there, to the intent ye may believe; nevertheless let us go  
 16 unto him. Thomas therefore, who is called <sup>2</sup>Didymus, said unto his  
 fellow-disciples, Let us also go, that we may die with him.  
 17 So when Jesus came, he found that he had been in the tomb four  
 18 days already. Now Bethany was nigh unto Jerusalem, about fifteen  
 furlongs off; and many of the Jews had come to Martha and Mary, to  
 20 console them concerning their brother. Martha therefore, when she  
 heard that Jesus was coming, went and met him: but Mary still sat in  
 21 the house. Martha therefore said unto Jesus, Lord, if thou hadst  
 22 been here, my brother had not died. And even now I know that  
 23 whatsoever thou shalt ask of God, God will give thee. Jesus saith  
 24 unto her, Thy brother shall rise again. Martha saith unto him, I  
 know that he shall rise again in the resurrection at the last day.  
 25 Jesus said unto her, I am the resurrection, and the life: he that be-  
 26 lieveth on me, though he die, yet shall he live: and whosoever liveth  
 27 and believeth on me shall never die. Believest thou this? She saith  
 unto him, Yea, Lord: I have believed that thou art the Christ, the  
 28 Son of God, *even* he that cometh into the world. And when she  
 had said this, she went away, and called Mary <sup>3</sup>her sister secretly,  
 29 saying, The <sup>4</sup>Master is here, and calleth thee. And she, when she  
 30 heard it, arose quickly, and went unto him. (Now Jesus was not yet  
 come into the village, but was still in the place where Martha met  
 31 him.) The Jews then which were with her in the house, and were  
 comforting her, when they saw Mary, that she rose up quickly and  
 went out, followed her, supposing that she was going unto the tomb

\*Our Lord was apparently at a distance of two or three days' journey (ver. 6, 17) from Bethany; and by comparing § 89, 90 we see that he was probably in Perea. This visit to Bethany, a suburb of Jerusalem, may be that to which Luke pointed in 13:22 (§ 90).

John 11:1-46.

32 to weep there. Mary therefore, when she came where Jesus was,  
 and saw him, fell down at his feet, saying unto him, Lord, if thou  
 33 hadst been here, my brother had not died. When Jesus therefore  
 saw her weeping, and the Jews also weeping which came with her, he  
 34 groaned in the spirit, and was troubled, and said, Where have  
 35 ye laid him? They say unto him, Lord, come and see. Jesus wept.  
 36, 37 The Jews therefore said, Behold how he loved him! But some of  
 them said, Could not this man, which opened the eyes of him that  
 38 was blind, have caused that this man also should not die? Jesus  
 therefore again groaning in himself cometh to the tomb. Now it was  
 39 a cave, and a stone lay against it. Jesus saith, Take ye away the  
 stone. Martha, the sister of him that was dead, saith unto him,  
 Lord, by this time he stinketh: for he hath been dead four days.  
 40 Jesus saith unto her, Said I not unto thee, that, if thou believedst,  
 41 thou shouldest see the glory of God? So they took away the stone.  
 And Jesus lifted up his eyes, and said, Father, I thank thee that thou  
 42 heardest me. And I knew that thou hearest me always: but because  
 of the multitude which standeth around I said it, that they may be-  
 43 lieve that thou didst send me. And when he had thus spoken, he  
 44 cried with a loud voice, Lazarus, come forth. He that was dead came  
 forth, bound hand and foot with grave-clothes; and his face was  
 bound about with a napkin. Jesus saith unto them, Loose him, and  
 let him go.

45 Many therefore of the Jews, which came to Mary and beheld that  
 46 which he did, believed on him. But some of them went away to the  
 Pharisees, and told them the thing which Jesus had done.

1. Gr. *be saved*. 2. That is, *Twin*. 3. Or, *her sister, saying secretly*. 4. Or, *Teacher*.  
 5. Gr. *wail*. 6. Gr. *wailing*. 7. Or, *was moved with indignation in the spirit*. 8. Gr.  
*troubled himself*. 9. Or, *being moved with indignation in himself*. 10. Or, *upon*. 11. Or,  
*grave-bands*. 12. Many ancient authorities read *the things which he did*.

## § 95. THE SANHEDRIN PLOT HIS DEATH, AND HE RETIRES AGAIN.

Jerusalem, and Ephraim in Judea.

John 11:47-54.

47 The chief priests therefore and the Pharisees gathered a council,  
 48 and said, What do we? for this man doeth many signs. If we let him  
 thus alone, all men will believe on him: and the Romans will come  
 49 and take away both our place and our nation. But a certain one of  
 them, Caiaphas, being high priest that year, said unto them, Ye  
 50 know nothing at all, nor do ye take account that it is expedient for  
 you that one man should die for the people, and that the whole nation  
 51 perish not. Now this he said not of himself: but being high priest  
 52 that year, he prophesied that Jesus should die for the nation; and not  
 for the nation only, but that he might also gather together into one  
 53 the children of God that are scattered abroad. So from that day  
 forth they took counsel that they might put him to death.  
 54 Jesus therefore walked no more openly among the Jews, but de-  
 parted thence into the country near to the wilderness, into a city  
 called Ephraim; and there he tarried with the disciples.



§ 96. JOURNEYING THROUGH SAMARIA AND GALILEE TOWARD JERUSALEM, HE TEACHES THAT THE MESSIANIC REIGN  
WILL COME UNEXPECTEDLY.

In Samaria or Galilee.

Luke 17:11-37.

11 And it came to pass, 'as they were on the way to Jerusalem, that he  
12 was passing <sup>2</sup>through the midst of Samaria and Galilee.\* And as he  
entered into a certain village, there met him ten men that were  
13 lepers, which stood afar off: and they lifted up their voices, saying,  
14 Jesus, Master, have mercy on us. And when he saw them, he said  
unto them, Go and shew yourselves unto the priests. And it came to  
15 pass, as they went, they were cleansed. And one of them, when he  
saw that he was healed, turned back, with a loud voice glorifying  
16 God; and he fell upon his face at his feet, giving him thanks: and he  
17 was a Samaritan. And Jesus answering said, Were not the ten  
18 cleansed? but where are the nine? <sup>3</sup>Were there none found that re-  
19 turned to give glory to God, save this 'stranger? And he said unto  
him, Arise, and go thy way: thy faith hath <sup>4</sup>made thee whole.  
20 And being asked by the Pharisees, when the kingdom of God cometh, he answered them and said, the kingdom of God cometh not with  
21 observation: neither shall they say, Lo, here! or, There! for lo, the  
kingdom of God is <sup>5</sup>within you.  
22 And he said unto the disciples, The days will come, when ye shall  
desire to see one of the days of the Son of man, and ye shall not see  
23 it. And they shall say to you, Lo, there! Lo, here! go not away, nor  
24 follow after *them*: for as the lightning, when it lighteneth out of the  
one part under the heaven, shineth unto the other part under heaven;  
25 so shall the Son of man be <sup>6</sup>in his day. But first must he suffer many  
26 things and be rejected of this generation. And as it came to pass in  
the days of Noah, even so shall it be also in the days of the Son of  
27 man. They ate, they drank, they married, they were given in mar-  
riage, until the day that Noah entered the ark, and the flood came,  
28 and destroyed them all. Likewise even as it came to pass in the days  
of Lot; they ate, they drank, they bought, they sold, they planted,  
29 they builded: but in the day that Lot went out from Sodom it rained  
30 fire and brimstone from heaven, and destroyed them all: after the  
same manner shall it be in the day that the Son of man is revealed.  
31 In that day, he which shall be on the housetop, and his goods in the  
house, let him not go down to take them away: and let him that is in  
32, 33 the field likewise not return back. Remember Lot's wife. Who-  
soever shall seek to gain his <sup>7</sup>life shall lose it: but whosoever shall  
34 lose *his life* shall <sup>8</sup>preserve it. I say unto you, In that night there  
shall be two men on one bed; the one shall be taken and the other  
35 shall be left. There shall be two women grinding together; the one

\*As Ephraim (§ 95) was pretty certainly in the northern part of Judea, it has been reasonably supposed (Wieseler, Clark, and others) that, when the Passover was approaching, Jesus went from that region northward through Samaria into the southern or southeastern part of Galilee, so as to fall in with the pilgrims going from Galilee through Perea to Jerusalem. We thus again combine Luke's account with that of John in easy agreement. And this explains Luke's mention of Samaria first, which would be strange in describing a journey from Galilee through Samaria to Jerusalem, while the marginal translation, "between Samaria and Galilee," would be obscure and hard to account for.—From this point he is making his final journey to Jerusalem, for the Passover of the crucifixion.

Luke 17:11-37.

37 shall be taken, and the other shall be left<sup>10</sup>. And they answering say unto him, Where, Lord? And he said unto them, Where the body is, thither will the <sup>11</sup>eagles also be gathered together.

1. Or, as he was. 2. Or, between. 3. Or, There were none found. save this stranger. 4. Or, alien. 5. Or, saved thee. 6. Or, in the midst of you. 7. Some ancient authorities omit in his day. 8. Or, soul. 9. Or, save it alive. 10. Some ancient authorities add ver. 36 There shall be two men in the field; the one shall be taken, and the other shall be left. 11. Or, vultures.

#### §97. PARABLES OF THE IMPORTUNATE WIDOW, AND OF THE PHARISEE AND THE PUBLICAN.

Luke 18:1-14.

1 And he spake a parable unto them to the end that they ought always  
2 to pray, and not to faint; saying, There was in a city a judge, which  
3 feared not God, and regarded not man: and there was a widow in that  
4 city; and she came oft unto him, saying, <sup>1</sup>Avenge me of mine adver-  
5 sary. And he would not for a while: but afterward he said within  
6 himself, Though I fear not God, nor regard man; yet because this  
7 widow troubleth me, I will avenge her, lest she <sup>2</sup>wear me out by her con-  
8 tinual coming. And the Lord said, Hear what <sup>3</sup>the unrighteous judge  
9 saith. And shall not God avenge his elect, which cry to him day and  
10 night, and he is longsuffering over them? I say unto you, that he  
11 will avenge them speedily. Howbeit when the Son of man cometh,  
12 shall he find <sup>4</sup>faith on the earth?

9 And he spake also this parable unto certain which trusted in them-  
10 selves that they were righteous, and set <sup>5</sup>all others at nought: Two  
11 men went up into the temple to pray; the one a Pharisee, and the other  
12 a publican. The Pharisee stood and prayed thus with himself, God,  
13 I thank thee, that I am not as the rest of men, extortioners, unjust,  
14 adulterers, or even as this publican. I fast twice in the week; I give  
15 tithes of all that I get. But the publican, standing afar off, would not  
16 lift up so much as his eyes unto heaven, but smote his breast, saying,  
17 God, <sup>6</sup>be merciful to me <sup>7</sup>a sinner. I say unto you, This man went  
18 down to his house justified rather than the other: for every one that  
19 exalteth himself shall be humbled; but he that humbleth himself shall  
20 be exalted.

1. Or, Do me justice of: and so in ver. 5, 7, 8. 2. Gr. brutise. 3. Gr. the judge of unrighteousness. 4. Or, the faith. 5. Gr. the rest. 6. Or, be propitiated. 7. Or, the sinner.

#### §98. GOING FROM GALILEE THROUGH PEREA,\* HE TEACHES CONCERNING DIVORCE.

Perea.

Matt. 19:1-12.

Mark 10:1-12.

1 And it came to pass, when Jesus 1 And he arose from thence, and

\*Matthew expressly states that he went from Galilee through Perea, and soon afterwards carries him forward to Jericho and Jerusalem. (Comp. Mark also.) Yet he says that Jesus did this when he had finished the parable of the unforgiving servant, which we have placed nearly 6 months earlier (§71). Luke here presently agrees with Matthew and Mark, and they go on together to the end, while heretofore Matthew and Mark have given us nothing since Jesus went to the Feast of Tabernacles. In one way or another we must suppose quite a break in their narrative. See the author's commentary on Matthew 19:1, and compare note on §75.

Matt. 19:1-12.

had finished these words, he departed from Galilee, and came into the borders of Judea beyond 2 Jordan; and great multitudes followed him; and he healed them there.

3 And there came unto him Pharisees, tempting him, and saying, Is it lawful *for a man* to put away his wife for every 4 cause? And he answered and said,

Have ye not read, that he which <sup>2</sup>made *them* from the beginning 5 made them male and female, and said, For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and shall cleave to his wife; and the twain shall become one flesh? 6 So that they are no more twain, but one flesh. What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put asunder.

7 They say unto him, Why then did Moses command to give a bill of divorce- 8 ment, and to put *her* away? He saith unto them, Moses for your hardness of heart suffered you to put away your wives: but from the beginning it hath not been 9 so. And I say unto you, Whosoever shall put away his wife, <sup>3</sup>except for fornication, and shall marry another, committeth adultery: <sup>4</sup>and he that marrieth her when she is put away committeth 10 adultery. The disciples say unto him, If the case of the man is so with his wife, it is not expedient 11 to marry. But he said unto them, All men cannot receive this saying, but they to whom 12 it is given. For there are eunuchs which were so born from their mother's womb: and there are eunuchs, which were made eunuchs by men: and there are

Mark 10:1-12.

cometh into the borders of Judea and beyond Jordan: and multitudes come together unto him again; and, as he was wont, he taught them again.

2 And there came unto him Pharisees, and asked him, Is it lawful for a man to put away *his* 3 wife? tempting him. And he answered and said unto them, What did Moses command you? 4 And they said, Moses suffered to write a bill of divorcement, and 5 to put her away. But Jesus said unto them, For your hardness of heart he wrote you this com- 6 mandment. But from the beginning of the creation, Male and 7 female made he them. For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, <sup>6</sup>and shall cleave to 8 his wife; and the twain shall become one flesh: so that they are no more twain, but one flesh. 9 What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put asunder. 10 And in the house the disciples asked him again of this matter.

11 And he saith unto them, Whosoever shall put away his wife, and marry another, committeth 12 adultery against her: and if she herself shall put away her husband, and marry another, she committeth adultery.

Matt. 19:1-12.

eunuchs, which made themselves eunuchs for the kingdom of heaven's sake. He that is able to receive it, let him receive it.

1. Many authorities, some ancient, insert *the*. 2. Some ancient authorities read *created*. 3. Some ancient authorities read *saving for the cause of fornication, maketh her an adulteress*: as in ch. 5:32, §43. 4. The following words, to the end of the verse, are omitted by some ancient authorities. 5. Some ancient authorities omit *and shall cleave to his wife*.

§ 99. HE BLESSES SOME INFANT CHILDREN, AND TEACHES THAT  
SUBJECTS OF THE MESSIANIC REIGN MUST BE  
CHILDLIKE. (COMP. § 70.)

Perea.

Matt. 19:13-15.

Mark 10:13-16.

Luke 18:15-17.\*

13 Then were there brought unto him little children, that he should lay his hands on them, and pray: and the disciples rebuked them.

13 And they brought unto him little children, that he should touch them: and the disciples rebuked them. 14 them. But when Jesus saw it, he was moved with indignation, and said unto them, Suffer the little children to come unto me; forbid them not: for of such is the kingdom

15 And they brought unto him also their babes, that he should touch them: but when the disciples saw it, they rebuked them.

14 But Jesus said, Suffer the little children, and forbid them not, to come unto me: for of such is the kingdom of heaven.

15 of God. Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child, he shall in no wise enter therein. And he took them in his arms, and blessed them, laying his hands upon them.

16 But Jesus called them unto him, saying, Suffer the little children to come unto me, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdom of God.

15 And he laid his hands on them, and departed thence.

17 Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child, he shall in no wise enter therein.

17 Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child, he shall in no wise enter therein.

\*From this point Matthew, Mark and Luke will be parallel more frequently than they were even during the great ministry in Galilee.



§100. THE RICH YOUNG RULER, AND THE PERILS OF RICHES. THE  
REWARDS OF FORSAKING ALL TO FOLLOW THE MESSIAH  
(COMP. §72) WILL BE GREAT, BUT WILL BE SOVEREIGN.  
(PARABLE OF THE LABORERS IN THE VINEYARD.)

In Perea.

Matt. 19:16 to 20:16.

Mark 10:17-31.

Luke 18:18-30.

- 16 And behold, one came to him and said, 'Master<sup>2</sup>, what good thing shall I do that I may have eternal
- 17 life? And he said unto him, 'Why ask- est thou me concern- ing that which is good? One there is who is good: but if thou wouldst enter into life, keep the
- 18 commandments. He saith unto him, Which? And Jesus said, Thou shalt not kill, Thou shalt not commit adultery, Thou shalt not steal, Thou shalt not bear
- 19 false witness, Honour thy father and thy mother: and, Thou shalt love thy neigh- bour as thyself. The
- 20 young man saith unto him, All these things have I observed: what lack I
- 21 yet? Jesus said unto him, If thou wouldst be perfect, go, sell that thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have treas- ure in heaven: and come, follow me.
- 22 But when the young man
- 17 And as he was go- ing forth <sup>8</sup>into the way, there ran one to him, and kneeled to him, and asked him, Good <sup>2</sup>Master, what shall I do that I may inherit eter- nal life? And Jesus said unto him, Why callest thou me good? none is good save one, *even* God.
- 18 Thou knowest the commandments,
- Do not kill, Do not com- mit adultery,
- Do not steal, Do not bear false witness, Do not defraud, Hon- our thy father and mother.
- 20 And he said unto him, 'Mas- ter, all these things have I observed
- 21 from my youth. And Jesus looking upon him loved him, and said unto him, One thing thou lackest: go, sell whatsoever thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and come, follow me. But his countenance fell at
- 18 And a certain rul- er asked him, say- ing, Good <sup>2</sup>Master, what shall I do to inherit eternal life?
- 19 And Jesus said unto him, Why callest thou me good? none is good save one, *even* God.
- 20 Thou knowest the commandments,
- Do not commit adul- tery, Do not kill,
- Do not steal, Do not bear false witness, Honour thy father and mother.
- 21 And he said, All these things have I observed from my youth up. And when Jesus heard it, he said unto him, One thing thou lackest yet: sell all that thou hast, and distribute unto the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and come, follow me.
- 23 But when he heard these things, he be-

Matt. 19:16 to 20:16.

heard the saying, he went away sorrowful: for he was one that had great possessions.

23 And Jesus said unto his disciples, Verily I say unto you, It is hard for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of heaven.

24 And again I say unto you, It is easier for a camel to go through a needle's eye, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom

25 of God. And when the disciples heard it, they were astonished exceedingly, saying, Who then

26 can be saved? And Jesus looking upon them said to them, With men this is impossible; but with God all things are

27 possible. Then answered Peter and said unto him, Lo, we have left all, and followed thee; what then shall

28 we have? And Jesus said unto them, Verily I say unto you; that ye which have followed me, in the regeneration when the Son of man shall sit on the throne of

Mark 10:17-31.

the saying, and he went away sorrowful: for he was one that had great possessions.

23 And Jesus looked round about, and saith unto his disciples, How hardly shall they that have riches enter into the kingdom of God!

24 And the disciples were amazed at his words. But Jesus answered again, and saith unto them, Children, how hard is it <sup>9</sup>for them that trust in riches to enter into the kingdom

25 of God! It is easier for a camel to go through a needle's eye, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.

26 And they were astonished exceedingly, saying <sup>10</sup>unto him, Then who can

27 be saved? Jesus looking upon them saith, With men it is impossible, but not with God: for all things are possible with God.

28 Peter began to say unto him, Lo, we have left all, and followed thee.

29 Jesus said, Verily I say unto you,

Luke 18:18-30.

came exceeding sorrowful; for he was very rich.

24 And Jesus seeing him said, How hardly shall they that have riches enter into the kingdom of God!

25 For it is easier for a camel to enter in through a needle's eye, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.

26 And they that heard it said, Then who can be saved?

27 But he said, The things that are impossible with men are possible with God. And Peter said, Lo, we have left <sup>12</sup>our own, and followed thee.

29 And he said unto them, Verily I say unto you,

Matt. 19:16 to 20:16.

his glory, ye also shall sit upon twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel.

29 el. And every one that hath left houses, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother,<sup>4</sup> or children, or lands, for my name's sake, shall receive <sup>a</sup> hundred fold,

and shall inherit eternal life.

30 But many shall be last *that are first*; and first *that are last*.

Mark 10:17-31.

There is no man that hath left house, or brethren, or sisters, or mother, or father, or children, or lands, for my sake, and for the gospel's

30 sake, but he shall receive a hundred-fold now in this time, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with persecutions; and in the <sup>11</sup>world to come eternal life.

31 But many *that are first* shall be last; and the last first.

Luke 17:18-30.

There is no man that hath left house, or wife, or brethren, or parents, or children, for the kingdom of God's sake,

30 who shall not receive manifold more in this time,

and in the <sup>11</sup>world to come eternal life.

20 For the kingdom of heaven is like unto a man that is a householder, which went out early in the morning to hire labourers into his vineyard. And when he had agreed with the labourers for a <sup>6</sup>penny a day, he sent them into his vineyard. And he went out about the third hour and saw others standing in the marketplace idle; and to them he said, Go ye also into the vineyard, and whatsoever is right I will give you. And they went their way. Again he went out about the sixth and the ninth hour, and did likewise. And about the eleventh *hour* he went out, and found others standing; and he saith unto them, Why stand ye here all the day idle? They say unto him, Because no man hath hired us. He saith unto them, Go ye also into the vineyard. And when even was come, the lord of the vineyard saith unto his steward, Call the labourers, and pay them their hire, beginning from the last unto the first. And when they came *that were hired* about the eleventh hour, they received every man a <sup>6</sup>penny. And when the first came, they supposed that they would receive more; and 11 they likewise received every man a <sup>6</sup>penny. And when they received 12 it, they murmured against the householder, saying, These last have spent *but* one hour, and thou hast made them equal unto us, which 13 have borne the burden of the day and the <sup>7</sup>scorching heat. But he answered and said to one of them, Friend, I do thee no wrong: didst 14 not thou agree with me for a <sup>6</sup>penny? Take up that which is thine, and go thy way; it is my will to give unto this last, even as unto thee. 15 Is it not lawful for me to do what I will with mine own? or is thine

Matt. 20:16.

16 eye evil, because I am good? So the last shall be first, and the first last.

1. Some ancient authorities read *Good Master*. See Mark 10:17; Luke 18:18. 2. Or, *Teacher*. 3. Some ancient authorities read *Why callest thou me good? None is good save one, even God*. See Mark 10:18; Luke 18:19. 4. Many ancient authorities add *or wife*: as in Luke 18:29. 5. Some ancient authorities read *manifold*. 6. The Roman denarius, about seventeen cents of our money. 7. Or, *hot wind*. 8. Or, *on his way*. 9. Some ancient authorities omit *for them that trust in riches*. 10. Many ancient authorities read *among themselves*. 11. Or, *age*. 12. Or, *our own homes*.

§101. JESUS FORETELLS TO THE DISCIPLES HIS DEATH AND RESURRECTION (COMP. §65, 66, 68), AND REBUKES THE SELFISH AMBITION OF JAMES AND JOHN.

Probably in Perea.

Matt. 20:17-28.

Mark 10:32-45.

Luke 18:31-34.

17 And as Jesus was going up to Jerusalem,

32 And they were in the way, going up to Jerusalem\*; and Jesus was going before them: and they were amazed; and they that followed were afraid. And he took again the twelve, and began to tell them the things that were to happen unto him, *saying*,

31 And he took unto him the twelve, and said unto them, Behold, we go up to Jerusalem, and all the things that are written<sup>a</sup> by the prophets shall be accomplished unto the Son of man.

he took the twelve disciples apart, and in the way he said unto them,

18 Behold, we go up to Jerusalem; and the Son of man shall be delivered unto the chief priests and scribes; and they shall condemn him to death, and shall deliver him unto the Gentiles to mock,

33 Behold, we go up to Jerusalem; and the Son of man shall be delivered unto the chief priests and the scribes; and they shall condemn him to death, and shall deliver him unto the Gentiles: and they shall mock him,

32 For he shall be delivered up unto the Gentiles, and shall be mocked, and shamefully entreated, and spit upon: 33 and they shall scourge and kill him: and the third day he shall rise a-

and to scourge, and to crucify; and the third day he shall

and shall spit upon him, and shall scourge him, and shall kill him; and after three days he

\* He left Galilee in §96, crossing the Jordan into Perea, probably in company with many Jews from Galilee (who regularly went this way to Jerusalem), and will now soon cross the river again and reach Jericho (§102).



Matt. 20:17-28.  
be raised up.

Mark 10:32-45.  
shall rise again.

Luke 18:31-34.  
34 gain. And they understood none of these things; and this saying was hid from them, and they perceived not the things that were said.

20 Then came to him the mother of the sons of Zebedee with her sons, worshipping *him*, and asking a certain thing of him.

21 And he said unto her, What wouldest thou? She said unto him, Command that these my two sons may sit, one on thy right hand, and one on thy left hand, in thy kingdom. 22 But Jesus answered and said, Ye know not what ye ask. Are ye able to drink the cup that I am about to drink?

They say unto him, We are able. 23 He saith unto them, My cup indeed ye shall drink:

but to sit on my right hand, and on *my* left hand, is not mine to give, but *it is for them* for whom it hath been prepared of 24 my Father. And when the ten heard it, they were moved with indignation concerning the two 25 brethren. But Jesus called them unto him, and said, Ye know that the rulers of the Gentiles lord it over them, and their great ones exercise authority over them. 26 Not so shall it be among you; but whosoever would become great among you shall be your 'minister; and whosoever would be first among you shall be your 'servant: even as the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many.

35 And there come near unto him James and John, the sons of Zebedee, saying unto him, 'Master, we would that thou shouldest do for us whatsoever we shall ask of thee. And he said unto them, What would ye that I should do 37 for you? And they said unto him, Grant unto us that we may sit, one on thy right hand, and one on *thy* left hand, in thy glory. 38 But Jesus said unto them, Ye know not what ye ask. Are ye able to drink the cup that I drink? or to be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with? 39 And they said unto him, We are able. And Jesus said unto them, The cup that I drink ye shall drink; and with the baptism that I am baptized withal shall ye be 40 baptized: but to sit on my right hand or on *my* left hand is not mine to give: but *it is for them* for whom it hath been prepared. 41 And when the ten heard it, they began to be moved with indignation concerning James and John. 42 And Jesus called them to him, and saith unto them, Ye know that they which are accounted to rule over the Gentiles lord it over them: and their great ones exercise authority over them. But it is not so among you: but whosoever would become great among 44 you, shall be your 'minister: and whosoever would be first among 45 you, shall be 'servant of all. For verily the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many.

1. Or, servant. 2. Gr. bond-servant. 3. Or, but some as they followed were afraid.  
4. Or, Teacher. 5. Or, through.

## §102. BLIND BARTIMÆUS AND HIS COMPANION HEALED.

At Jericho.

Matt. 20:29-34.

Mark 10:46-52.

Luke 18:35-43.

29 And as they went out from Jericho, a great multitude followed him.

46 And they come to Jericho: and as he went out from Jericho, with his disciples and a great multitude, the son of Timæus, Bartimæus, a blind beggar, was sitting by the way side.

35 And it came to pass, as he drew nigh unto Jericho,

30 And behold, two \*blind men sitting by the way side,

when they heard that Jesus was passing by, cried out, saying, Lord, have mercy on us, thou Son of David. And the multitude rebuked them, that they should hold their peace: but they cried out the more, saying, Lord, have mercy on us, thou son of David. And Jesus stood still, and called them,

32 son of David. And Jesus stood still, and called them,

and said,  
What will ye that I should do unto you?  
33 They say unto him,

47 And when he heard that it was Jesus of Nazareth, he began to cry out, and say, Jesus, thou son of David, have mercy on me. And many rebuked him, that he should hold his peace: but he cried out the more a great deal, Thou son of David, have mercy on me.  
49 And Jesus stood still, and said, call ye him. And they call the blind man, saying unto him, Be of good cheer: rise, he calleth thee. And he, casting away his garment, sprang up, and came to Jesus.  
51 And Jesus answered him, and said, What wilt thou that I should do unto thee? And the blind man

a certain blind man sat by the way side begging: and hearing a multitude going by, he inquired what this meant. And they told him, that Jesus of Nazareth passeth by. And he cried, saying, Jesus, thou son of David, have mercy on me.  
39 And they that went before rebuked him, that he should hold his peace: but he cried out the more a great deal, Thou son of David, have mercy on me. And Jesus stood, and commanded him to be brought unto him:

and when he was come near, he asked him, What wilt thou that I should do unto thee? And he said, Lord,

\*Matthew mentions two blind men, while Mark and Luke describe one, probably the more conspicuous one, comp. on §53.—The discrepancy as to place, "as he went out from Jericho," "as he drew nigh unto Jericho," is best explained by the recent suggestion that the healing occurred after he left the old Jericho, and as he was approaching the new Jericho which Herod the Great had built at some distance away. An older, and also possible explanation was that the blind men made application when he was approaching the city, but were not then healed, and only when he had left the city were they healed. (Comp. Matt. 15:23 ff., §61, and Mark 8:22 f., §63.)

Matt. 20:29-34.

Lord, that our eyes  
34 may be opened. And  
Jesus being moved  
with compassion,  
touched their eyes:  
and straightway they  
received their sight,  
and followed him.

Mark 10:46-52.

said unto him, 'Rab-  
boni, that I may re-  
52 ceive my sight. And  
Jesus said unto him,  
Go thy way; thy  
faith hath <sup>2</sup>made  
thee whole. And  
straightway he re-  
ceived his sight, and  
followed him in the  
way.

Luke 18:35-43.

that I may receive  
42 my sight. And Je-  
sus said unto him,  
Receive thy sight:  
thy faith hath <sup>2</sup>made  
43 thee whole. And im-  
mediately he receiv-  
ed his sight, and fol-  
lowed him, glorify-  
ing God: and all the  
people, when they  
saw it, gave praise  
unto God.

1. See John 20:16. 2. Or, *saved thee*.

§103. JESUS VISITS ZACCHÆUS, AND SPEAKS THE PARABLE OF THE  
POUNDS,\* AND SETS OUT FOR JERUSALEM.

Jericho.

Luke 19:1-28.

1, 2 And he entered and was passing through Jericho. And behold, a  
man called by name Zacchæus; and he was a chief publican, and he  
3 was rich. And he sought to see Jesus who he was; and could not for  
4 the crowd, because he was little of stature. And he ran on before,  
and climbed up into a sycomore tree to see him: for he was to pass  
5 that way. And when Jesus came to the place, he looked up, and said  
unto him, Zacchæus, make haste, and come down; for to-day I must  
6 abide at thy house. And he made haste, and came down, and received  
7 him joyfully. And when they saw it, they all murmured, saying, He  
8 is gone in to lodge with a man that is a sinner. And Zacchæus stood,  
and said unto the Lord, Behold, Lord, the half of my goods I give to  
the poor; and if I have wrongfully exacted aught of any man, I restore  
9 fourfold. And Jesus said unto him, To-day is salvation come to this  
10 house, forasmuch as he also is a son of Abraham. For the Son of man  
came to seek and to save that which was lost.  
11 And as they heard these things, he added and spake a parable, be-  
cause he was nigh to Jerusalem, and *because* they supposed that the  
12 kingdom of God was immediately to appear. He said therefore, A  
certain nobleman went into a far country, to receive for himself a  
13 kingdom, and to return. And he called ten <sup>1</sup>servants of his, and gave  
them ten <sup>2</sup>pounds, and said unto them, Trade ye *herewith* till I come.  
14 But his citizens hated him, and sent an ambassage after him, saying,  
15 We will not that this man reign over us. And it came to pass, when  
he was come back again, having received the kingdom, that he com-  
manded these <sup>1</sup>servants, unto whom he had given the money, to be  
called to him, that he might know what they had gained by trading.  
16 And the first came before him, saying, Lord, thy pound hath made

\*The similar parable of the Talents was given several days later. See §116. On this first occasion the illustration has a specific design (ver. 11 f.), which will not appear on the second.

Luke 19:1-28.

17 ten pounds more. And he said unto him, Well done, thou good <sup>3</sup>servant: because thou wast found faithful in a very little, have thou authority over ten cities. And the second came, saying, Thy pound, 19 Lord, hath made five pounds. And he said unto him also, Be thou 20 also over five cities. And <sup>4</sup>another came, saying, Lord, behold, *here* 21 is thy pound, which I kept laid up in a napkin: for I feared thee, because thou art an austere man: thou takest up that thou layedst not 22 down, and reapest that thou didst not sow. He saith unto him, Out of thine own mouth will I judge thee, thou wicked <sup>3</sup>servant. Thou knewest that I am an austere man, taking up that I laid not down, 23 and reaping that I did not sow; then wherefore gavest thou not my money into the bank, and <sup>5</sup>I at my coming should have required it 24 with interest? And he said unto them that stood by, Take away from 25 him the pound, and give it unto him that hath the ten pounds. And 26 they said unto him, Lord, he hath ten pounds. I say unto you, that unto every one that hath shall be given; but from him that hath not, 27 even that which he hath shall be taken away from him. Howbeit these mine enemies, which would not that I should reign over them, bring hither, and slay them before me.

28 And when he had thus spoken, he went on before, going up to Jerusalem.

1. Gr. *bond-servants*. 2. *Mina*, here translated a pound, is equal to one hundred drachmas. See ch. 15:8, §103. 3. Gr. *bond-servant*. 4. Gr. *the other*. 5. Or, *I should have gone and required*.



## PART VII.

## LAST WEEK OF OUR LORD'S MINISTRY, AND HIS CRUCIFIXION.

Spring of A.D. 30 (or A.D. 29).\*

## §104. JESUS ARRIVES AT BETHANY,† NEAR JERUSALEM.

Friday afternoon.

John 11:55 to 12:1, and 12:9-11.

55 Now the passover of the Jews was at hand: and many went up to  
 56 Jerusalem out of the country before the passover, to purify them-  
 selves. They sought therefore for Jesus, and spake one with another,  
 as they stood in the temple, What think ye? That he will not come  
 57 to the feast? Now the chief priests and the Pharisees had given  
 commandment, that, if any man knew where he was, he should shew  
 it, that they might take him.

1 Jesus therefore six days before the passover came to Bethany,  
 where Lazarus was, whom Jesus raised from the dead.

9 The common people therefore of the Jews learned that he was there:  
 and they came, not for Jesus' sake only, but that they might see Laz-  
 10 arus also, whom he raised from the dead. But the chief priests took  
 11 counsel that they might put Lazarus also to death; because that by  
 reason of him many of the Jews went away, and believed on Jesus.

*In §105-116 we have the Saviour's movements and teachings on Sunday, Monday and Tuesday—the close of his public ministry, except the little that he said during the Jewish and Roman trial. All of his teaching thereafter will be given to his disciples.*

## §105. HIS TRIUMPHAL ENTRY INTO JERUSALEM AS THE MESSIAH.

From Bethany to Jerusalem and back (Sunday).

Matt. 21:1-11 and Mark 11:1-11. Luke 19:29-44. John 12:12-19.  
 14-17.

1 And when they drew nigh unto Jerusa- lem, and came unto Beth-	1 And when they draw nigh unto Jerusa- lem, unto Beth- phage and	29 And it came to pass, when he drew nigh unto Beth- phage and
---	--	--

\*If the feast of John 5:1 was a Passover, and so his ministry lasted over three years, then his death was pretty certainly in A.D. 30; otherwise in A.D. 29. (Comp. on §7.)

†Compare former visits to this Bethany, §82, 94, and see also below, §117.

Matt. 21:1-11 and  
14-17.

phage, unto  
the mount of  
Olives, then  
Jesus sent two  
2 disciples, say-  
ing unto them,  
Go into the  
village that is  
over against  
you, and  
straightway ye  
shall find an  
ass tied, and a  
colt with her:  
loose *them*, and  
bring *them* un-  
to me.

3 And if  
any one say  
aught unto you,  
ye shall say,  
The Lord hath  
need of them;  
and straight-  
way he will  
send them.

6 And the disci-  
ples went, and  
did even as Je-  
sus appointed  
them,

7 and  
brought the  
ass and the  
colt, and put  
on them their

Mark 11:1-11.

Bethany, at the  
mount of Ol-  
ives, he send-  
eth two of his  
2 disciples, and  
saith unto  
them, Go your  
way into the  
village that is  
over against  
you, and  
straightway as  
ye enter into  
it, ye shall find  
a colt tied,  
whereon no  
man ever yet  
sat; loose him,  
and bring him.

3 And if any one  
say unto you,  
Why do ye  
this? say ye,  
The Lord hath  
need of him;  
and straight-  
way <sup>2</sup>he will  
send him <sup>3</sup>back

4 hither. And  
they went a-  
way, and found  
a colt tied at  
the door with-  
out in the open

5 loose him. And  
certain of them  
that stood  
there said unto  
them, What do  
ye, loosing the  
6 colt? And they  
said unto them  
even as Jesus  
had said: and  
they let them

7 go. And they  
bring the colt  
unto Jesus, and  
cast on him  
their gar-

Luke 19:29-44.

Bethany, at the  
mount that is  
called *the mount*  
of Olives, he  
sent two of the  
disciples, say-  
ing, Go your  
way into the  
village over  
against *you*; in  
the which as ye  
enter ye shall  
find a colt tied,  
whereon no  
man ever yet  
sat: loose him,  
and bring him.

31 And if any one  
ask you, Why  
do ye loose  
him? thus  
shall ye say,  
The Lord hath  
need of him.

32 And they that  
were sent went  
away, and  
found even as  
he had said un-  
to them. And

as they were  
loosing the  
colt, the own-  
ers thereof  
said unto  
them, Why  
loose ye the  
34 colt? And they  
said, The Lord  
hath need of  
35 him. And  
they brought  
him to Jesus:

and they threw  
their gar-  
ments upon the  
colt, and set

John 12:12-19.

12 On the mor-  
row <sup>a</sup>a great  
multitude that  
had come to the  
feast, when they  
heard that Je-  
sus was coming  
to Jerusalem,  
13 took the  
branches of the  
palm trees, and  
went forth to  
meet him, and  
cried out, Ho-  
sanna: Blessed  
is he that com-  
eth in the name

Matt. 21:1-11 and  
14-17.

garments, and  
he sat thereon.

4 Now this is  
come to pass,  
that it might  
be fulfilled  
which was spo-  
ken by the  
prophet, say-  
ing,

5 Tell ye the  
daughter of  
Zion,  
Behold, thy  
King com-  
eth unto  
thee,  
Meek, and  
riding upon  
an ass,  
And upon a  
colt the foal  
of an ass.

8 And the most  
part of the mul-  
titude spread  
their garments  
in the way;  
and others cut  
branches from  
the trees, and  
spread them in  
9 the way. And  
the multitudes  
that went be-  
fore him, and  
that followed,  
cried, saying,  
Hosanna to the  
son of David:  
Blessed is he  
that cometh in  
the name of  
the Lord; Ho-  
sanna in the  
highest.

Mark 11:1-11.

ments; and he  
sat upon him.

8 And many  
spread their  
garments upon  
the way; and  
others' branch-  
es, which they  
had cut from  
the fields. And  
9 they that went  
before, and  
they that fol-  
lowed, cried,  
Hosanna, Bles-  
sed is he that  
cometh in the  
name of the  
10 Lord: Blessed  
is the king-  
dom that com-  
eth, *the kingdom*  
of our father  
David: Hosan-  
na in the high-  
est.

Luke 19:29-44.

Jesus thereon.

36 And as he went,  
they spread  
their gar-  
ments in the  
17 way. And as  
he was now  
drawing nigh,  
even at the de-  
scent of the  
mount of Olives  
the whole mul-  
titude of the  
disciples be-  
gan to rejoice  
and praise God  
with a loud  
voice for all  
the 18 mighty  
works which  
they had seen;  
19 saying, Bles-  
sed is the King  
that cometh in  
the name of  
the Lord:  
peace in hea-  
ven, and glory  
in the highest.

John 12:12-19.

of the Lord,  
even the King

14 of Israel. And  
Jesus, having  
found a young  
ass, sat there-  
on; as it is  
15 written, Fear  
not, daughter  
of Zion: behold  
thy King com-  
eth, sitting on  
an ass's colt.

16 These things  
understood not  
his disciples at  
the first: but  
when Jesus  
was glorified,  
then remem-  
bered they that  
these things  
were written of  
him, and that  
they had done  
these things un-  
to him. The mul-  
titude therefore  
that was with  
him when he  
called Lazarus  
out of the tomb,  
and raised him  
from the dead,  
bare witness.  
18 For this cause  
also the multi-  
tude went and  
met him, for  
that they heard  
that he had  
done this sign.  
19 The Pharisees  
therefore said  
among them-  
selves, 10 Behold  
how ye prevail  
nothing: lo, the  
world is gone  
after him.

## Luke 19:39-44.

- 39 And some of the Pharisees from the multitude  
 40 said unto him, 'Master, rebuke thy disciples. And  
 he answered and said, I tell you that, if these shall  
 hold their peace, the stones will cry out.  
 41 And when he drew nigh, he saw the city and wept  
 42 over it, saying, 'If thou hadst known in this day,  
 even thou, the things which belong unto peace! but  
 43 now they are hid from thine eyes. For the days  
 shall come upon thee, when thine enemies shall cast  
 up a 'bank about thee, and compass thee round, and  
 44 keep thee in on every side, and shall dash thee to  
 the ground, and thy children within thee; and they  
 shall not leave in thee one stone upon another; be-  
 cause thou knewest not the time of thy visitation.

## Matt. 21:1-11 and 14-17.

- 10 And when he was come into Je-  
 rusalem, all the city was stirred,  
 11 saying, Who is this? And the  
 multitudes said, This is the  
 prophet, Jesus, from Nazareth  
 14 of Galilee. And the blind and  
 the lame came to him in the  
 temple: and he healed them.  
 15 But when the chief priests and  
 the scribes saw the wonderful  
 things that he did, and the chil-  
 dren that were crying in the  
 temple and saying, Hosanna to  
 the son of David; they were  
 16 moved with indignation, and  
 said unto him, Hearest thou  
 what these are saying? And  
 Jesus saith unto them, Yea: did  
 ye never read, Out of the mouth  
 of babes and sucklings thou hast  
 17 perfected praise? And he left  
 them, and went forth out of the  
 city to Bethany, and lodged  
 there.

## Mark 11:1-11.

- 11 And he entered into Jerusa-  
 lem,

into the temple;

and when  
 he had looked round about upon  
 all things, it being now even-  
 tide, he went out unto Bethany  
 with the twelve.

1. Or, *through*. 2. Gr. *sendeth*. 3. Or, *again*. 4. Gr. *layers of leaves*. 5. Gr. *powers*.  
 6. Or, *Teacher*. 7. Or, *O that thou hadst known*. 8. Gr. *palisade*. 9. Some ancient au-  
 thorities read *the common people*. 10. Or, *Ye behold*.



‡ 106. THE BARREN FIG TREE CURSED, AND THE SECOND CLEANSING  
OF THE TEMPLE. (COMP. ‡21, A.)

Bethany and Jerusalem (*Monday*).

Matt. 21:18,19, and 12,13.

18 Now in the morn-  
ing as he returned to  
the city, he hunger-  
19 ed. And seeing a  
fig tree by the way  
side,

he came to it  
and found nothing  
thereon, but leaves  
only;

and he saith  
unto it, Let there be  
no fruit from thee  
henceforward for  
ever.

12 And Jesus entered  
into the temple of  
God, and cast out all  
them that sold and  
bought in the tem-  
ple, and overthrew  
the tables of the  
money-changers, and  
the seats of them  
that sold the doves;

13 and he saith unto  
them, It is written,  
My house shall be  
called a house of  
prayer: but ye make  
it a den of robbers.

Mark 11:12-18.

12 And on the mor-  
row, when they  
were come out from  
Bethany, he hun-  
13 gered. And seeing  
a fig tree afar off  
having leaves, he  
came, if haply he  
might find anything  
thereon: and when  
he came to it, he  
found nothing but  
leaves; for it was  
not the season of  
14 figs. And he an-  
swered and said un-  
to it, No man eat  
fruit from thee  
henceforward for  
ever. And his dis-  
ciples heard it.

15 And they come to  
Jerusalem: and he  
entered into the  
temple, and began  
to cast out them  
that sold and them  
that bought in the  
temple, and over-  
threw the tables of  
the money-chang-  
ers, and the seats of  
them that sold the  
16 doves; and he would  
not suffer that any  
man should carry a  
vessel through the  
17 temple. And he  
taught, and said un-  
to them, Is it not  
written, My house  
shall be called a  
house of prayer  
for all the na-  
tions? but ye have  
made it a den of

Luke 19:45-48.

45 And he entered  
into the temple, and  
began to cast out  
them that sold,

46 say-  
ing unto them, It is  
written, And my  
house shall be a  
house of prayer: but  
ye have made it a  
den of robbers.  
47 And he was teach-

Mark 11:12-18.

18 robbers. And the chief priests and the scribes heard it, and sought how they might destroy him: for they feared him, for all the multitude was astonished at his teaching.

Luke 19:45-48.

ing daily in the temple. But the chief priests and the scribes and the principal men of the people sought to destroy him: and they could not find what they might do; for the people all hung upon him, listening.

1. Or, *a single*.      2. Some ancient authorities omit *of God*.

‡ 107. SOME GREEKS WISH TO SEE JESUS, AND HE FORETELLS THAT BY BEING "LIFTED UP" HE WILL DRAW ALL MEN TO HIM.

Jerusalem (Monday).

John 12:20-50.

20 Now there were certain Greeks among those that went up to worship  
 21 at the feast: these therefore came to Philip, which was of Bethsaida  
 22 of Galilee, and asked him saying, Sir, we would see Jesus. Philip  
 23 cometh and telleth Andrew: Andrew cometh, and Philip, and they tell  
 24 Jesus. And Jesus answereth them, saying, The hour is come, that  
 25 the Son of man should be glorified. Verily, verily, I say unto you,  
 Except a grain of wheat fall into the earth and die, it abideth by itself  
 26 alone; but if it die, it beareth much fruit. He that loveth his 'life  
 27 loseth it; and he that hateth his 'life in this world shall keep it unto  
 28 life eternal. If any man serve me, let him follow me; and where I am,  
 there shall also my servant be: if any man serve me, him will the  
 29 Father honour. Now is my soul troubled; and what shall I say?  
 30 Father, save me from this 'hour. But for this cause came I unto this  
 31 hour. Father, glorify thy name. There came therefore a voice out  
 of heaven, *saying*, I have both glorified it, and will glorify it again.  
 32 The multitude therefore, that stood by, and heard it, said that it had  
 33 thundered: others said, An angel hath spoken to him. Jesus answered  
 and said, This voice hath not come for my sake, but for your sakes.  
 34 Now is 'the judgement of this world: now shall the prince of this  
 world be cast out. And I, if I be lifted up 'from the earth, will draw  
 35 all men unto myself. But this he said, signifying by what manner of  
 death he should die. The multitude therefore answered him, We  
 have heard out of the law that the Christ abideth for ever: and how  
 sayest thou, The Son of man must be lifted up? who is this Son of man?  
 36 Jesus therefore said unto them, Yet a little while is the light 'among  
 you. Walk while ye have the light, that darkness overtake you not:  
 and he that walketh in the darkness knoweth not whither he goeth.  
 37 While ye have the light, believe on the light, that ye may become  
 sons of light.

These things spake Jesus, and he departed and 'hid himself from  
 37 them. But though he had done so many signs before them, yet they

John 12:20-50.

- 38 believed not on him: that the word of Isaiah the prophet might be fulfilled, which he spake,  
 Lord, who hath believed our report?  
 And to whom hath the arm of the Lord been revealed?  
 39 For this cause they could not believe, for that Isaiah said again,  
 40 He hath blinded their eyes, and he hardened their heart;  
 Lest they should see with their eyes, and perceive with their heart,  
 And should turn,  
 And I should heal them.  
 41 These things said Isaiah, because he saw his glory: and he spake of  
 42 him. Nevertheless even of the rulers many believed on him; but because of the Pharisees they did not confess <sup>it</sup>, lest they should be put  
 43 out of the synagogue; for they loved the glory of men more than the glory of God.  
 44 And Jesus cried and said, He that believeth on me, believeth not on  
 45 me, but on him that sent me. And he that beholdeth me beholdeth  
 46 him that sent me. I am come a light into the world, that whosoever  
 47 believeth on me may not abide in the darkness. And if any man hear  
 my sayings, and keep them not, I judge him not: for I came not to  
 48 judge the world, but to save the world. He that rejecteth me, and  
 receiveth not my sayings, hath one that judgeth him: the word that  
 49 I spake, the same shall judge him in the last day. For I spake not  
 from myself; but the Father which sent me, he hath given me a com-  
 50 mandment, what I should say, and what I should speak. And I know  
 that his commandment is life eternal: the things therefore which I  
 speak, even as the Father hath said unto me, so I speak.

1. Or, *soul*. 2. Or, *hour*? 3. Or, *a judgement*. 4. Or, *out of*. 5. Or, *in*. 6. Or, *was hidden from them*. 7. Or, *him*.

## §108. THE BARREN FIG-TREE FOUND TO HAVE WITHERED.

On the way from Bethany to Jerusalem. (*Tuesday*.\*)

Matt. 21:19-22.

Mark 11:19-25.

Luke 21:37, 38.

- |  |   |  |
|--|---|--|
| <p>19 And immediately the fig tree withered away. And when the disciples saw it, they marvelled, saying, How did the fig tree immediately wither away? And Jesus answered and said unto them, Verily I say unto you, If ye have faith, and</p> | <p>19 And every evening <sup>he</sup> went forth out of the city. And as they passed by in the morning, they saw the fig tree withered away from the roots. And Peter calling to remembrance saith unto him, Rabbi, behold, the fig tree which thou cursedst is withered away. 22 And Jesus answer-</p> | <p>37 And every day he was teaching in the temple; and every night he went out, and lodged in the mount that is called the mount of Olives. 38 And all the people came early in the morning to him in the temple, to hear him.</p> |
|--|---|--|

\*We have a larger mass of our Lord's teaching for this day (§108-116) than for any other single day of his ministry. Another very busy day was §48-53.

Matt. 21:19-22.

Mark 11:19-26.

doubt not, ye shall not only do what is done to the fig tree, but even if ye shall say unto this mountain, Be thou taken up and cast into the sea, it shall be done.  
 22 And all things, whatsoever ye shall ask in prayer, believing, ye shall receive.

ing saith unto them, Have faith in God.  
 23 Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall say unto this mountain, Be thou taken up and cast into the sea; and shall not doubt in his heart, but shall believe that what he saith cometh to pass; he shall have it.  
 24 Therefore I say unto you, All things whatsoever ye pray and ask for, believe that ye have received them, and ye shall have them. And whensoever ye stand praying, forgive, if ye have aught against any one; that your Father also which is in heaven may forgive you your trespasses.<sup>3</sup>

1. Gr. *whenever evening came*. 2. Some ancient authorities read *they*. 3. Many ancient authorities add ver. 26 *But if ye do not forgive, neither will your Father which is in heaven forgive your trespasses*.

- ‡ 109. THE RULERS QUESTION\* THE AUTHORITY OF JESUS. HE REFUSES TO EXPLAIN, AND SETS FORTH THEIR WICKEDNESS BY THREE PARABLES. (a) PARABLE OF THE TWO SONS.  
 (b) PARABLE OF THE WICKED HUSBANDMEN.  
 (c) PARABLE OF THE MARRIAGE FEAST OF THE KING'S SON.

In the court of the Temple. (*Tuesday*.)

Matt. 21:23 to 22:14.

Mark 11:27 to 12:12.

Luke 20:1-19.

23 And when he was come into the temple,  
 27 And they come again to Jerusalem: and as he was walking in the temple,  
 1 And it came to pass, on one of the days, as he was teaching the people

\*It was very common to test a Rabbi with hard questions. See this continued in ‡ 110-112. In like manner the Fourth Gospel gave us much animated dialogue between Jesus and the Jews at Jerusalem in chap. 5, and chap. 7-10.



Matt. 21:23 to 22:14.

ple, the chief priests  
and the elders of the  
people came unto  
him as he was teach-  
ing, and said,

By  
what authority doest  
thou these things?  
and who gave thee  
24 this authority? And  
Jesus answered and  
said unto them, I  
also will ask you one  
'question, which if  
ye tell me, I likewise  
will tell you by what  
authority I do these  
25 things. The baptism  
of John, whence was  
it? from heaven or  
from men? And they  
reasoned with them-  
selves, saying, If we  
shall say, From heav-  
en; he will say unto  
us, Why then did ye  
not believe him?  
26 But if we shall say,  
From men; we fear  
the multitude; for  
all hold John as a  
27 prophet. And they  
answered Jesus, and  
said, We know not.

He also said unto  
them, Neither tell I  
you by what author-  
ity I do these things.

28 But what think ye?  
A man had two sons;  
And he came to the  
first, and said, "Son,  
go work to-day in the  
29 vineyard. And he  
answered and said, I  
will not: but after-  
ward he repented

Mark 11:27 to 12:12.

there come to him  
the chief priests,  
and the scribes,  
28 and the elders; and  
they said unto him,

By what author-  
ity doest thou  
these things? or  
who gave thee this  
authority to do  
29 these things? And  
Jesus said unto  
them, I will ask of  
you one 'question,  
and answer me, and  
I will tell you by  
what authority I do  
30 these things. The  
baptism of John,  
was it from heaven,  
or from men? an-  
31 swer me. And they  
reasoned with them-  
selves, saying, If  
we shall say, From  
heaven; he will say,  
Why then did ye not  
32 believe him? 'But  
should we say, From  
men — they feared  
the people: "for all  
33 verily held John to  
be a prophet. And  
they answered Je-  
sus and say, We  
know not. And  
Jesus saith unto  
them, Neither tell I  
you by what author-  
ity I do these  
things.

Luke 20:1-19.

in the temple, and  
preaching the gos-  
pel, there came upon  
him the chief priests  
and the scribes with  
2 the elders; and they  
spake, saying unto  
him, Tell us: By what  
authority doest thou  
these things? or who  
is he that gave thee  
3 this authority? And  
he answered and  
said unto them, I al-  
so will ask you a  
'question; and tell  
4 me: The baptism of  
John, was it from  
heaven, or from  
men?

5 And they rea-  
soned with them-  
selves, saying, If we  
shall say, From  
heaven; he will say,  
Why did ye not be-  
6 lieve him? But if  
we shall say, From  
men; all the people  
will stone us: for  
they be persuaded  
that John was a  
7 prophet. And they  
answered, that they  
knew not whence it  
8 was. And Jesus said  
unto them, Neither  
tell I you by what  
authority I do these  
things.

Matt. 21:23 to 22:14.

Mark 11:27 to 12:12.

Luke 20:1-19.

- himself, and went.  
 30 And he came to the second, and said likewise. And he answered and said, I go, sir: and went not.  
 31 Whether of the twain did the will of his father? They say, The first. Jesus saith unto them, Verily I say unto you, that the publicans and the harlots go into the kingdom of God before you.  
 32 For John came unto you in the way of righteousness, and ye believed him not: but the publicans and the harlots believed him: and ye, when ye saw it, did not even repent yourselves afterward, that ye might believe him.  
 33 Hear another parable: There was a man that was a householder, which planted a vineyard, and set a hedge about it, and digged a winepress in it, and built a tower, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into another country.  
 34 And when the season of the fruits drew near, he sent his <sup>s</sup>servants to the husbandmen, to receive <sup>h</sup>his fruits.  
 35 And the husbandmen took his <sup>s</sup>servants, and beat one, and killed another, and stoned another.  
 36 Again, he sent oth-

- 12 And he began to speak unto them in parables. A man planted a vineyard, and set a hedge about it, and digged a pit for the winepress, and built a tower, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into another country.  
 2 And at the season he sent to the husbandmen a <sup>s</sup>servant, that he might receive from the husbandmen of the fruits of the vineyard. And they took him, and beat him, and sent him  
 4 away empty. And again he sent unto

- 9 And he began to speak unto the people this parable: A man planted a vineyard,  
 and let it out to husbandmen, and went into another country for a long time. And at the season he sent unto the husbandmen a <sup>s</sup>servant, that they should give him of the fruit of the vineyard: but the husbandmen beat him, and sent him  
 11 away empty. And he sent yet another <sup>s</sup>servant: and him al-

Matt. 21:23 to 22:14.

er <sup>s</sup>ervants more than the first: and they did unto them in like manner.

37 But afterward he sent unto them his son, saying, They will reverence my son.

38 But the husbandmen, when they saw the son, said among themselves, This is the heir; come, let us kill him and take his inheritance.

39 And they took him, and cast him forth out of the vineyard, and

40 killed him. When therefore the lord of the vineyard shall come, what will he do unto those hus-

41 bandmen? They say unto him, He will miserably destroy those miserable men, and will let out the vineyard unto other husbandmen, which shall render him the fruits in their seasons.

42 Jesus saith unto them, Did ye never read in the scriptures,

The stone which the builders rejected,

The same was made the head of the corner:

This was from the Lord,

Mark 11:27 to 12:12.

them another <sup>s</sup>ervant: and him they wounded in the head, and handled

5 shamefully. And he sent another; and him they killed: and many others; beating some, and killing some.

6 He had yet one, a beloved son: he sent him last unto them, saying, they will reverence my son.

7 But those husbandmen said among themselves, This is the heir; come, let us kill him, and the inheritance shall be ours.

8 And they took him, and killed him, and cast him forth out of the vineyard. What therefore will the lord of the vineyard do?

he will come and destroy the husbandmen, and will give the vineyard unto others.

10 Have ye not read even this scripture;

The stone which the builders rejected,

The same was made the head of the corner:

This was from the Lord,

Luke 20:1-19.

so they beat, and handled him shamefully, and sent him

12 away empty. And he sent yet a third: and him also they wounded, and cast

13 him forth. And the Lord of the vineyard said, What shall I do? I will send my beloved son: it may be they will reverence him.

14 But when the husbandmen saw him, they reasoned one with another, saying, This is the heir: let us kill him, that the inheritance

15 may be ours. And they cast him forth out of the vineyard, and killed him. What therefore will the lord of the vineyard do unto them?

16 He will come and destroy these husbandmen, and will give the vineyard unto others. And when they heard it, they said, <sup>19</sup>God forbid.

17 But he looked upon them, and said, What then is this that is written,

The stone which the builders rejected,

The same was made the head of the corner?

Matt. 21:23 to 22:14.

And it is marvelous in our eyes?

43 Therefore say I unto you, the kingdom of God shall be taken away from you, and shall be given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof. <sup>5</sup>And he that falleth on this stone shall be broken to pieces; but on whomsoever it shall fall, it will scatter him as dust. And when the chief priests and the Pharisees heard his parables, they perceived that he spake of them. And when they sought to lay hold on him, they feared the multitudes,

because they took him for a prophet.

22 And Jesus answered and spake again in parables unto

2 them, saying, The kingdom of heaven is likened unto a certain king, 3 which made a marriage feast for his son, and sent forth his <sup>3</sup>servants to call them that were bidden to the marriage feast; and they would 4 not come. Again he sent forth other <sup>3</sup>servants, saying, tell them that are bidden, Behold, I have made ready my dinner: my oxen and my fatlings are killed, and all things are ready; come to the marriage 5 feast. But they made light of it, and went their ways, one to his own 6 farm, another to his merchandise: and the rest laid hold on his <sup>3</sup>servants, and entreated them shamefully, and killed them. But the king was wroth; and he sent his armies, and destroyed those murderers, and burned their city. Then saith he to his <sup>3</sup>servants, The wedding is ready, but they that were bidden were not worthy. Go ye therefore unto the partings of the highways, and as many as ye shall 10 find, bid to the marriage feast. And those <sup>3</sup>servants went out into the highways, and gathered together all as many as they found, both 11 bad and good: and the wedding was filled with guests. But when the king came in to behold the guests, he saw there a man which had not 12 on a wedding-garment: and he saith unto him, Friend, how camest

Mark 11:27 to 12:12.

And it is marvelous in our eyes?

12 And they sought to lay hold on him; and they feared the multitude; for they perceived that he spake the parable against them: and they left him and went away.

Luke 20:1-19.

18 Every one that falleth on that stone shall be broken to pieces; but on whomsoever it shall fall, it will scatter him as dust.

19 And the scribes and the chief priests

sought to lay hands on him in that very hour; and they feared the people: for they perceived that he spake this parable against them.



Matt. 21:23 to 22:14.

thou in hither not having a wedding-garment? And he was speech-  
13 less. Then the king said to the servants, Bind him hand and foot,  
and cast him out into the outer darkness; there shall be the weeping  
14 and gnashing of teeth. For many are called, but few chosen.

1. Gr. word. 2. Gr. Child. 3. Gr. bondservants. 4. Or, the fruits of it. 5. Some ancient authorities omit ver. 44. 6. Or, ministers. 7. Or, But shall we say, From men? 8. Or, for all held John to be a prophet indeed. 9. Gr. bondservant. 10. Gr. Be it not so.

### §110. THE PHARISEES AND THE HERODIANS TRY TO ENSNARE JESUS ABOUT PAYING TRIBUTE TO CÆSAR.

In the Court of the Temple. (Tuesday.)

Matt. 22:15-22.

Mark 12:13-17.

Luke 20:20-26.

15 Then went the Pharisees, and took counsel how they might ensnare him in his  
16 talk. And they send to him their disciples, with the Herodians, saying, 'Master, we know that thou art true, and teachest the way of God in truth, and carest not for any one: for thou regardest not the person of  
17 men. Tell us therefore, What thinkest thou? Is it lawful to give tribute unto  
18 Cæsar, or not? But Jesus perceived their wickedness, and said, Why tempt ye me, ye hypocrites? Shew me the tribute money. And they brought unto him a  
20 penny. And he saith unto them, Whose is this image and superscription?  
21 They say unto him,

13 And they send unto him certain of the Pharisees and of the Herodians, that they might catch him in talk.

14 And when they were come, they say unto him, 'Master, we know that thou art true, and carest not for any one; for thou regardest not the person of men, but of a truth teachest the way of God: Is it lawful to give tribute unto Cæsar, or not? Shall we give, or shall we not give? But he, knowing their hypocrisy, said unto them, Why tempt ye me? bring me a penny, that I may see it. And they brought it. And he saith unto them,

20 And they watched him, and sent forth spies, which feigned themselves to be righteous, that they might take hold of his speech, so as to deliver him up to the rule and to the authority of the governor. And they asked him, saying, 'Master, we know that thou sayest and teachest rightly, and acceptest not the person of any, but of a truth teachest the way of God: Is it lawful for us to give tribute unto Cæsar, or not?

23 But he perceived their craftiness, and said unto them, Shew me a penny.

Whose is this image and superscription? And they said unto

Whose image and superscription hath it? And they

Matt. 22:15-22.

Cæsar's. Then saith he unto them, Render therefore unto Cæsar the things that are Cæsar's; and unto God the things that are God's.

22 And when they heard it, they marvelled, and left him, and went their way.

1. Or, *Teacher*.

Mark 12:13-17.

17 him, Cæsar's. And Jesus said unto them, Render unto Cæsar the things that are Cæsar's, and unto God the things that are God's.

And they marvelled greatly at him.

2. See marginal note on Matt. 18:28, §90,

Luke 20:20-26.

25 said, Cæsar's. And he said unto them, Then render unto Cæsar the things that are Cæsar's, and unto God the things that are God's. And they were not able to take hold of the saying before the people: and they marvelled at his answer, and held their peace.

# §111. THE SADDUCEES ASK HIM A PUZZLING QUESTION ABOUT THE RESURRECTION.

In the Court of the Temple. (*Tuesday*.)

Matt. 22:23-33.

23 On that day there came to him Sadducees, <sup>1</sup>which say that there is no resurrection: and they asked him, saying, <sup>2</sup>Master, Moses said, If a man die, having no children, his brother <sup>3</sup>shall marry his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother.

25 Now there were with us seven brethren: and the first married and deceased, and having no seed left his wife  
26 unto his brother: in like manner the second also, and the third, unto the <sup>4</sup>seventh. And after them all the woman  
28 died. In the resur-

Mark 12:18-27.

18 And there come unto him Sadducees, which say that there is no resurrection; and they asked him, saying, <sup>2</sup>Master, Moses wrote unto us, If a man's brother die, and leave a wife behind him, and leave no child, that his brother should take his wife, and raise up seed unto  
20 his brother. There were seven brethren: and the first took a wife, and dying left  
21 no seed; and the second took her, and died, leaving no seed behind him; and the  
22 third likewise: and the seven left no seed. Last of all  
23 In the resurrection

Luke 20:27-40.

27 And there came to him certain of the Sadducees, they which say that there is no resurrection; and they asked him, saying, <sup>2</sup>Master, Moses wrote unto us, that if a man's brother die, having a wife, and he be childless, his brother should take the wife, and raise up seed unto  
29 his brother. There were therefore seven brethren; and the  
30 first took a wife, and died childless, and  
31 the second; and the third took her; and likewise the seven also left no children; and died.

32 Afterward the woman also died.  
33 In the resurrection

Matt. 22:23-33.

reception therefore  
whose wife shall she  
be of the seven? for  
29 they all had her. But  
Jesus answered and  
said unto them, Ye  
do err, not knowing  
the scriptures, nor  
the power of God.

Mark 12:18-27.

whose wife shall she  
be of them? for the  
seven had her to  
24 wife. Jesus said un-  
to them, Is it not for  
this cause that ye  
err, that ye know  
not the scriptures,  
nor the power of  
God?

Luke 20:27-40.

therefore whose wife  
of them shall she be?  
for the seven had her  
34 to wife. And Jesus  
said unto them,

30 For in the resurrec-  
tion they neither  
marry, nor are given  
in marriage, but are

as angels <sup>5</sup>in heaven.

31 But as touching the  
resurrection of the  
dead, have ye not  
read that which was  
spoken unto you by  
God, saying,

32 I am the  
God of Abraham, and  
the God of Isaac, and  
the God of Jacob?  
God is not *the God* of  
the dead, but of the  
33 living. And when the  
multitudes heard it,  
they were astonished  
at his teaching.

25 For when they  
shall rise from the  
dead, they neither  
marry, nor are given  
in marriage; but are

as angels in heaven.

26 But as touching the  
dead, that they are  
raised; have ye not  
read in the book of  
Moses, in *the place*  
*concerning* the Bush,  
how God spake unto  
him, saying, I *am* the  
God of Abraham, and  
the God of Isaac, and  
the God of Jacob?  
27 He is not the God of  
the dead, but of the  
living: ye do great-  
ly err.

The  
sons of this <sup>6</sup>world  
marry, and are given  
35 in marriage: but they  
that are accounted  
worthy to attain to  
that <sup>6</sup>world, and the  
resurrection from the  
dead, neither marry,  
nor are given in mar-  
36 riage: for neither can  
they die any more:  
for they are equal un-  
to the angels; and  
are sons of God, being  
sons of the resurrec-  
37 tion. But that the  
dead are raised,

even  
Moses showed in *the*  
*place concerning* the  
Bush, when he call-  
eth the Lord the God  
of Abraham, and the  
God of Isaac, and the  
38 God of Jacob. Now  
he is not the God of  
the dead, but of the  
living: for all live un-  
39 to him. And certain  
of the scribes answer-  
ing said, <sup>2</sup>Master,  
thou hast well said.  
40 For they durst not  
any more ask him  
any question.

1. Gr. *saying*. 2. Or, *Teacher*. 2. Gr. *shall perform the duty of a husband's brother to his wife*. Compare Deut, 25:5. 4. Gr. *seven*. 5. Many ancient authorities add of God. 6. Or. *age*.

§ 112. A PHARISEE WHO IS A LAWYER ASKS ANOTHER QUESTION,  
AND THEN JESUS ASKS THE PHARISEES A QUESTION  
ABOUT THE MESSIAH, WHICH THEY  
CANNOT ANSWER.

In the court of the Temple. (Tuesday.)

Matt. 22:34-46.

Mark 12:28-37.

Luke 20:41-44.

- 34 But the Pharisees, when they heard that he had put the Sadducees to silence, gathered themselves together. And one of them, a lawyer, asked him a question, tempting him,
- 35 <sup>1</sup>Master, which is the great commandment in the law? And he said unto him,
- 36 Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. This is the great and first commandment. <sup>2</sup>And a second like *unto it* is this, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. On these two commandments hangeth the whole law, and the prophets.
- 28 And one of the scribes came, and heard them questioning together, and knowing that he had answered them well, asked him,
- 29 What commandment is the first of all? Jesus answered, The first is, Hear, O Israel; <sup>3</sup>The Lord our God, the Lord is one: and thou shalt love the Lord thy God <sup>4</sup>with all thy heart, and <sup>4</sup>with all thy soul, and <sup>4</sup>with all thy mind, and <sup>4</sup>with all thy strength. The second is this, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. There is none other commandment greater than these.
- 30 And the scribe said unto him, Of a truth, <sup>1</sup>Master, thou hast well said that he is one; and there is none other but he: and to love him with all the heart, and with all the understanding, and with all the strength, and to love his neighbour as himself, is much more than all whole burnt offerings and



Matt. 22:34-46.

Mark 12:28-37.

Luke 20:41-44.

- 41 Now while the Pharisees were gathered together, Jesus asked them a question, saying, What think ye of the Christ? whose son is he? They say unto him, *The son of David.*
- 42 He saith unto them, How then doth David in the Spirit call him Lord, saying,
- 44 The Lord said unto my Lord,  
Sit thou on my right hand,  
Till I put thine enemies underneath thy feet?
- 45 If David then calleth him Lord, how is he his son? And no one was able to answer him a word, neither durst any man from that day forth ask him any more questions.
- 34 sacrifices. And when Jesus saw that he answered discreetly, he said unto him, Thou art not far from the kingdom of God. And no man after that durst ask him any question.
- 35 And Jesus answered and said, as he taught in the temple, How say the scribes that the Christ is the son of David?
- 36 David himself said in the Holy Spirit,
- The Lord said unto my Lord,  
Sit thou on my right hand,  
Till I make thine enemies<sup>1</sup> the footstool of thy feet.
- 37 David himself calleth him Lord; and whence is he his son? And <sup>2</sup>the common people heard him gladly.
- 41 And he said unto them,  
  
How say they that the Christ is David's son?
- 42 For David himself saith in the book of Psalms,  
The Lord said unto my Lord,  
Sit thou on my right hand,  
Till I make thine enemies the footstool of thy feet.
- 43 David therefore calleth him Lord, and how is he his son?

1. Or, *Teacher*. 2. Or, *And a second is like unto it, Thou shalt love, etc.* 3. Or, *The Lord is our God; the Lord is one.* 4. Gr. *from*. 5. Some ancient authorities read, *underneath thy feet.* 6. Or, *the great multitude.*

§ 113. IN HIS LAST PUBLIC DISCOURSE, JESUS SOLEMNLY DENOUNCES THE SCRIBES AND PHARISEES (COMP. § 85).

In the courts of the Temple. (*Tuesday*.)

Matt. 23:1-39.

Mark 12:38-40.

Luke 20:45-47.

- 1 Then spake Jesus to the multitudes and to his disciples,
- 38 And in his teaching he said, Beware of
- 45 And in the hearing of all the people he said unto his disci-

Matt. 23:1-39.

Mark 12:38-40.

Luke 20:45-47.

2 saying, The scribes  
and the Pharisees  
sit on Moses' seat:  
3 all things therefore  
whatsoever they bid  
you, *these* do and ob-  
serve: but do not ye  
after their works;  
for they say, and do  
4 not. Yea, they bind  
heavy burdens 'and  
grievous to be borne,  
and lay them on  
men's shoulders; but  
they themselves will  
not move them with  
5 their finger. But all  
their works they do  
for to be seen of men:  
for they make broad  
their phylacteries,  
and enlarge the bor-  
ders *of their garments*,  
6 and love the chief  
place at feasts, and  
the chief seats in the  
7 synagogues, and the  
salutations in the  
marketplaces, and to  
be called of men, Rab-  
8 bi. But be not ye  
called Rabbi: for one  
is your teacher, and  
all ye are brethren.  
9 And call no man your  
father on the earth:  
for one is your Fath-  
er,<sup>2</sup> which is in heav-  
10 en. Neither be ye  
called masters: for  
one is your master,  
11 *even* the Christ. But  
he that is <sup>2</sup>greatest  
among you shall be  
12 your <sup>4</sup>servant. And  
whosoever shall ex-  
alt himself shall be  
humbled; and whoso-  
ever shall humble  
himself shall be ex-  
alted.  
13 But woe unto you,

the scribes,

46 ples, Beware of the  
scribes,

which de-  
sire to walk in long  
robes, and *to have*  
salutations in the  
39 marketplaces, and  
chief seats in the  
synagogues, and  
chief places at feasts:

which desire  
to walk in long robes,  
and love salutations  
in the marketplaces,  
and chief seats in the  
synagogues, and chief  
places at feasts;

Matt. 23:1-39.

Mark 12:38-40.

Luke 20:45-47.

scribes and Phari-  
sees, hypocrites! be-  
cause ye shut the  
kingdom of heaven  
against men: for ye  
enter not in your-  
selves, neither suffer  
ye them that are en-  
tering in to enter\*.

40 they which devour  
widows' houses,<sup>12</sup> and  
for a pretence make  
long prayers; these  
shall receive greater  
condemnation.

47 which de-  
vour widows' houses,  
and for a pretence  
make long prayers:  
these shall receive  
greater condemna-  
tion.

- 15 Woe unto you,  
scribes and Phari-  
sees, hypocrites! for  
ye compass sea and  
land to make one  
proselyte; and when  
he is become so, ye make him twofold more a son of 'hell than your-  
selves.
- 16 Woe unto you, ye blind guides, which say, Whosoever shall swear  
by the \*temple, it is nothing; but whosoever shall swear by the gold  
17 of the \*temple he is \*a debtor. Ye fools and blind: for whether is  
18 greater, the gold, or the \*temple that hath sanctified the gold? And,  
Whosoever shall swear by the altar, it is nothing; but whosoever  
19 shall swear by the gift that is upon it, he is \*a debtor. Ye blind: for  
whether is greater, the gift, or the altar that sanctifieth the gift?  
20 He therefore that sweareth by the altar, sweareth by it, and by all  
21 things thereon. And he that sweareth by the \*temple, sweareth by  
22 it, and by him that dwelleth therein. And he that sweareth by the  
heaven, sweareth by the throne of God, and by him that sitteth  
thereon.
- 23 Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye tithe mint  
and <sup>10</sup>anise and cummin, and have left undone the weightier matters  
of the law, judgement, and mercy, and faith: but these ye ought to  
24 have done, and not to have left the other undone. Ye blind guides,  
which strain out the gnat, and swallow the camel.
- 25 Woe unto you scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye cleanse the  
outside of the cup and of the platter, but within they are full from  
26 extortion and excess. Thou blind Pharisee, cleanse first the inside  
of the cup and of the platter, that the outside thereof may become  
clean also.
- 27 Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye are like  
unto whited sepulchres, which outwardly appear beautiful, but in-  
28 wardly are full of dead men's bones, and of all uncleanness. Even so  
ye also outwardly appear righteous unto men, but inwardly ye are  
full of hypocrisy and iniquity.
- 29 Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye build the  
sepulchres of the prophets, and garnish the tombs of the righteous,

Matt. 23:1-39.

30 and say, If we had been in the days of our fathers, we should not  
 31 have been partakers with them in the blood of the prophets. Where-  
 fore ye witness to yourselves, that ye are sons of them that slew the  
 32, 33 prophets. Fill ye up then the measure of your fathers. Ye ser-  
 pents, ye offspring of vipers, how shall ye escape the judgement of  
 34 hell? Therefore, behold, I send unto you prophets, and wise men,  
 and scribes: some of them shall ye kill and crucify: and some of them  
 shall ye scourge in your synagogues, and persecute from city to city:  
 35 that upon you may come all the righteous blood shed on the earth,  
 from the blood of Abel the righteous unto the blood of Zachariah son  
 of Barachiah, whom ye slew between the sanctuary and the altar.  
 36 Verily I say unto you, All these things shall come upon this genera-  
 tion.  
 37 O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, which killeth the prophets, and stoneth  
 them that are sent unto her! how often would I have gathered thy  
 children together, even as a hen gathereth her chickens under her  
 38 wings, and ye would not! Behold, your house is left unto you "deso-  
 39 late. For I say unto you, Ye shall not see me henceforth, till ye shall  
 say, blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord.

1. Many ancient authorities omit *and grievous to be borne*. 2. Gr. *the heavenly*.  
 3. Gr. *greater*. 4. Or, *minister*. 5. Gr. *before*. 6. Some authorities insert here or after  
 ver. 12, ver. 14 *Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye devour widows'*  
*houses, even while for a pretence ye make long prayers: therefore ye shall receive greater*  
*condemnation*. See Mark 12:40; Luke 20:47. above. 7. Gr. *Gehenna*. 8. Or, *sanctuary*:  
 as in ver. 35. 9. Or, *bound by his oath*. 10. Or, *dill*. 11. Some ancient authorities  
 omit *desolate*. 12. Or, *even while for a pretence they make*.

# § 114. JESUS CLOSELY OBSERVES\* THE CONTRIBUTIONS IN THE TEMPLE, AND COMMENDS THE POOR WIDOW'S GIFT.

(Tuesday.)

Mark 12:41-44.

Luke 21:1-4.

41 And he sat down over against  
 the treasury, and beheld how the  
 multitude cast money into the  
 treasury: and many that were  
 42 rich cast in much. And there  
 came a poor widow, and she cast  
 in two mites, which make a  
 43 farthing. And he called unto  
 him his disciples, and said unto  
 them, Verily I say unto you, This  
 poor widow cast in more than all  
 they which are casting into the  
 44 treasury: for they all did cast in  
 of their superfluity; but she of  
 her want did cast in all that she  
 had, *even all her living*.

1 And he looked up, and saw the  
 rich men that were casting their  
 2 gifts into the treasury. And he  
 saw a certain poor widow casting  
 in thither two mites.

3 And he  
 said, Of a truth I say unto you,  
 This poor widow cast in more  
 4 than they all: for all these did  
 of their superfluity cast in unto  
 the gifts: but she of her want did  
 cast in all the living that she had.

1. Gr. *brass*. 2. Gr. *one*. 3. Or, *and saw them that...treasury, and they were rich*.

\* Notice that this was the last occurrence in the Saviour's public ministry, except the trial and the crucifixion.



‡ 115. SITTING ON THE MOUNT OF OLIVES, JESUS SPEAKS TO HIS  
DISCIPLES ABOUT THE DESTRUCTION OF JERUSALEM,  
AND HIS OWN SECOND COMING.

(Tuesday.)

Matt. 24:1-51.

- 1 And Jesus went out from the temple, and was going on his way; and his disciples came to him to shew him the build-ings of the temple.
- 2 But he answered and said unto them, See ye not all these things? verily I say unto you, There shall not be left here one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.
- 3 And as he sat on the mount of Olives, the disciples came unto him privately, saying,

Tell us, when shall these things be? and what *shall be* the sign of thy <sup>1</sup>coming, and of <sup>2</sup>the end of the

- 4 world? And Jesus answered and said unto them, Take heed that no man lead you astray. For many shall come in my name, saying, I am the Christ; and shall lead many a-
- 6 stray. And ye shall hear of wars and rumours of wars: see that ye be not troubled: for *these things* must needs come to pass; but the end is
- 7 not yet. For nation shall rise against na-

Mark 13:1-37.

- 1 And as he went forth out of the temple, one of his disciples saith unto him, <sup>18</sup>Master, behold, what manner of stones and what manner of buildings!
- 2 And Jesus said unto him, Seest thou these great build-ings? there shall not be left here one stone upon another, which shall not be thrown down.
- 3 And as he sat on the mount of Olives over against the temple, Peter and James and John and Andrew asked him pri-
- 4 vately, Tell us, when shall these things be? and what *shall be* the sign when these things are all about to be accom-
- 5 plished? And Jesus began to say unto them, Take heed that no man lead
- 6 you astray. Many shall come in my name, saying, I am *he*; and shall lead
- 7 many astray. And when ye shall hear of wars and rumours of wars, be not troubled: *these things* must needs come to pass; but the end is
- 8 not yet. For nation shall rise against na-

Luke 21:5-36.

- 5 And as some spake of the temple, how it was adorned with goodly stones and of-
- 6 ferings, he said, As for these things which ye behold,

the days will come, in which there shall not be left here one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.

- 7 And they asked him, saying, <sup>18</sup>Master, when therefore shall these things be? and what *shall be* the sign when these things are about to come to pass?
- 8 And he said, Take heed that ye be not led astray: for many shall come in my name, saying, I am *he*; and, The time is at hand: go ye not
- 9 after them. And when ye shall hear of wars and tumults, be not terrified: for these things must needs come to pass first; but the end is not immediately.
- 10 Then said he unto

Matt. 24:1-51.

tion, and kingdom against kingdom: and there shall be famines and earthquakes in divers places.

Mark 13:1-37.

tion, and kingdom against kingdom: there shall be earthquakes in divers places; there shall be famines:

Luke 21:5-36.

them, Nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and there shall be great earthquakes, and in divers places famines and pestilences; and there shall be terrors and great signs from heaven.

8 But all these things are the beginning of travail.

9 Then shall they deliver you up unto tribulation, and shall kill you:

and ye shall be hated of all the nations for my name's sake.

these things are the beginning of travail.

9 But take ye heed to yourselves: for they shall deliver you up to councils; and in synagogues shall ye be beaten; and before governors and kings shall ye stand for my sake, for a testimony unto them.

10 And the gospel must first be preached unto all the nations.

11 And when they lead you to judgement, and deliver you up, be not anxious beforehand what ye shall speak: but whatsoever shall be given you in that hour, that speak ye: for it is not ye that speak, but the Holy Ghost.

10 And then shall many stumble, and shall deliver up one another, and shall hate one another.

12 And brother shall deliver up brother to death, and the father his child: and children shall rise up against parents, and cause them to be put to death. And ye shall be hated of all men for my name's sake:

12 But before all these things, they shall lay their hands on you, and shall persecute you, delivering you up to the synagogues and prisons, bringing you before kings and governors for my name's sake. It shall turn unto you for a testimony.

14 Settle it therefore in your hearts, not to meditate beforehand how to answer: for I will give you a mouth and wisdom, which all your adversaries shall not be able to withstand or to gainsay. But ye shall be delivered up even by parents, and brethren, and kinsfolk, and friends; and some of you shall they cause to be put to death. And ye shall be hated of all men for my name's sake. And not a hair of your head shall

Matt. 24:1-51.

Mark 13:1-37.

Luke 21:5-36.

perish. In your patience ye shall win your <sup>24</sup>souls.

11 And many false prophets shall arise, and shall lead  
12 many astray. And because iniquity shall be multiplied, the love of the many  
13 shall wax cold. But he that endureth to the end, the same shall be saved. And  
14 <sup>this</sup> gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in the whole <sup>world</sup> for a testimony unto all the nations; and then shall the end come.

15 When therefore ye see the abomination of desolation, which was spoken of <sup>by</sup> Daniel the prophet, standing in <sup>the</sup> holy place (let him that readeth understand),

but he that endureth to the end, the same shall be saved.

14 But when ye see the abomination of desolation standing where he ought not

(let him that readeth understand),

20

But when ye see Jerusalem compassed with armies, then know that her desolation is at hand. Then let them that are in Judea flee unto the mountains; and let them that are in the midst of her depart out; and let not them that are in the country enter therein.

16 then let them that are in Judea flee unto the mountains:

then let them that are in Judea flee unto the mountains:

[21

17 let him that is on the housetop not go down to take out the things that are in his house: and let him that is in the field not return back to take his cloke.

15 and let him that is on the housetop not go down, nor enter in, to take anything out of his house: and let him that is in the field return not back to take his cloke.

Matt. 24:1-51.

Mark 13:1-37.

Luke 21:5-36.

19 But woe unto them that  
are with child and to  
them that give suck  
20 in those days! And  
pray ye that your  
flight be not in the  
winter, neither on a  
21 sabbath: for then  
shall be great tribu-  
lation, such as hath  
not been from the  
beginning of the  
world until now, no,  
nor ever shall be.  
22 And except those  
days had been short-  
ened, no flesh would  
have been saved: but  
for the elect's sake  
those days shall be  
shortened.

17 But woe unto them  
that are with child  
and to them that  
give suck in those  
18 days! And pray ye  
that it be not in  
19 the winter. For those  
days shall be tribula-  
tion, such as there  
hath not been the  
like from the begin-  
ning of the creation  
which God created  
until now, and never  
20 shall be. And ex-  
cept the Lord had  
shortened the days  
no flesh would have  
been saved: but for  
the elect's sake,  
whom he chose, he  
shortened the days.

22 For these are  
days of vengeance,  
that all things which  
are written may be  
23 fulfilled. Woe unto  
them that are with  
child and to them  
that give suck in  
those days!

for there  
shall be great distress  
upon the <sup>25</sup>land, and  
wrath unto this peo-  
24 ple. And they shall  
fall by the edge of  
the sword, and shall  
be led captive into  
all the nations: and  
Jerusalem shall be  
trodden down of the  
Gentiles, until the  
times of the Gentiles  
be fulfilled.

23 Then if  
any man shall say  
unto you, Lo, here is  
the Christ, or, Here;  
24 believe *'it* not. For  
there shall arise false  
Christs, and false  
prophets, and shall  
shew great signs and  
wonders; so as to  
lead astray, if possi-  
ble, even the elect.

21 And then if any man  
shall say unto you,  
Lo, here is the  
Christ; or, Lo, there;  
22 believe *'it* not: for  
there shall arise  
false Christs and  
false prophets, and  
shall shew signs and  
wonders, that they  
may lead astray, if  
possible, the elect.



Matt. 24:1-51.

25 Behold, I have told  
 26 you beforehand. If  
 therefore they shall  
 say unto you, Behold,  
 he is in the wilder-  
 ness; go not forth:  
 Behold, he is in the  
 inner chambers; be-  
 27 lieve <sup>it</sup> not. For as  
 the lightning com-  
 eth forth from the  
 east, and is seen even  
 unto the west; so  
 shall be the <sup>coming</sup>  
 of the Son of man.  
 28 Wheresoever the  
 carcase is, there will  
 the <sup>eagles</sup> be gath-  
 ered together.

29 But immediately,  
 after the tribulation  
 of those days, the  
 sun shall be darken-  
 ed, and the moon  
 shall not give her  
 light, and the stars  
 shall fall from heav-  
 en,

and the powers of  
 the heavens shall be  
 30 shaken: and then  
 shall appear the sign  
 of the Son of man in  
 heaven: and then  
 shall all the tribes of  
 the earth mourn, and  
 they shall see the  
 Son of man coming  
 on the clouds of  
 heaven with power  
 31 and great glory. And  
 he shall send forth  
 his angels <sup>with</sup> <sup>a</sup>  
 great sound of a  
 trumpet, and they  
 shall gather togeth-  
 er his elect from the  
 four winds, from one

Mark 13:1-37.

23 But take ye heed:  
 behold, I have told  
 you all things be-  
 forehand.

24 But in those days,  
 after that tribula-  
 tion, the sun shall  
 be darkened, and the  
 moon shall not give  
 25 her light, and the  
 stars shall be falling  
 from heaven,

and  
 the powers that are  
 in the heavens shall  
 be shaken.

26 And then 27  
 shall they see the  
 Son of man coming  
 in clouds with great  
 power and glory.  
 27 And then shall he  
 send forth the an-  
 gels, and shall gather  
 together his elect  
 from the four winds,  
 from the uttermost  
 part of the earth to

Luke 21:5-36.

25 And there  
 shall be signs in sun  
 and moon and stars;  
 and upon the earth  
 distress of nations, in  
 perplexity for the  
 roaring of the sea and  
 26 the billows; men  
<sup>26</sup> fainting for fear, and  
 for expectation of  
 the things which  
 are coming on <sup>27</sup> the  
 world: for the powers  
 of the heavens shall  
 be shaken.

And then  
 shall they see the  
 Son of man coming  
 in a cloud with power  
 and great glory.

Matt. 24:1-51.

end of heaven to the  
other.

Mark 13:1-37.

the uttermost part  
of heaven.

Luke 21:5-36.

28

But

when these things  
begin to come to pass,  
look up, and lift up  
your heads; because  
your redemption  
draweth nigh.

32 Now from the fig  
tree learn her para-  
ble: when her branch  
is now become tender,  
and putteth  
forth its leaves, ye  
know that the sum-

33 mer is nigh; even so  
ye also, when ye see  
all these things,  
know ye that <sup>12</sup>he is  
nigh, *even* at the

34 doors. Verily I say  
unto you, This gener-  
ation shall not pass  
away, till all these  
things be accom-  
35 plished. Heaven

and earth shall pass  
away, but my words  
shall not pass away.  
36 But of that day and  
hour knoweth no  
one, not even the an-  
gels of heaven,  
<sup>13</sup>neither the Son,  
but the Father only.

37 And as *were* the days  
of Noah, so shall be  
the <sup>1</sup>coming of the

38 Son of man. For as  
in those days which  
were before the flood  
they were eating and  
drinking, marrying  
and giving in mar-  
riage, until the day  
that Noah entered

39 into the ark, and they  
knew not until the  
flood came, and took  
them all away; so  
shall be the <sup>1</sup>coming

28 Now from the fig  
tree learn her para-  
ble: when her branch  
is now become tender,  
and putteth  
forth its leaves, ye  
know that the sum-

29 mer is nigh; even so  
ye also, when ye see  
these things coming  
to pass, know ye  
that <sup>12</sup>he is nigh, *even*

30 at the doors. Verily  
I say unto you, This  
generation shall not  
pass away, until all  
these things be ac-  
31 complished. Heaven

and earth shall pass  
away: but my words  
shall not pass away.  
32 But of that day or  
that hour knoweth  
no one, not even the  
angels in heaven,  
neither the Son, but  
the Father.

29 And he spake to  
them a parable: Be-  
hold the fig tree, and

30 all the trees: when  
they now shoot forth,  
ye see it and know of  
your own selves that  
the summer is now

31 nigh. Even so ye al-  
so, when ye see these  
things coming to  
pass, know ye that  
the kingdom of God

32 is nigh. Verily I say  
unto you, this gener-  
ation shall not pass  
away, till all things  
be accomplished.

33 Heaven and earth  
shall pass away: but  
my words shall not  
pass away.

Matt. 24:1-51.

Mark 13:1-37.

Luke 21:5-36.

of the Son of man.

- 40 Then shall two men  
be in the field; one is  
taken, and one is left:  
41 two women *shall* be  
grinding at the mill;  
one is taken, and one  
is left

- 33 Take ye heed, watch <sup>20</sup>and  
pray: for ye know  
not when the time  
34 is. *It is as when a*  
man, sojourning in  
another country,  
having left his  
house, and given  
authority to his <sup>21</sup>ser-  
vants, to each one  
his work, command-  
ed also the porter to  
35 watch. Watch there-  
fore: for ye know not  
when the lord of  
the house cometh,  
whether at even, or  
at midnight, or at  
cockcrowing, or in  
36 the morning; lest  
coming suddenly he  
find you sleeping.  
37 And what I say unto  
you I say unto all,  
Watch.

- 34 But take heed to  
yourselves, lest haply  
your hearts be over-  
charged with sur-  
feiting and drunken-  
ness, and cares of this  
life, and that day  
come on you suddenly  
35 as a snare: for so shall  
it come upon all them  
that dwell on the face  
of all the earth.

- 42 Watch there-  
fore: for ye know not  
on what day your  
Lord cometh.

- 36 But  
watch ye at every  
season, making sup-  
plication, that ye may  
prevail to escape all  
these things that  
shall come to pass,  
and to stand before  
the Son of man.

- 43 <sup>14</sup>But know this, that if the master of the house had known in what  
watch the thief was coming, he would have watched and would not  
44 have suffered his house to be <sup>15</sup>broken through. Therefore be ye also  
45 ready: for in an hour that ye think not the Son of man cometh. Who  
then is the faithful and wise <sup>16</sup>servant, whom his lord hath set over  
46 his household, to give them their food in due season? Blessed is that  
<sup>16</sup>servant, whom his lord when he cometh shall find so doing.  
47 Verily I say unto you, that he will set him over all that he hath.  
48 But if that evil <sup>16</sup>servant shall say in his heart, My lord tarrieth;  
49 and shall begin to beat his fellow-servants, and shall eat and drink  
50 with the drunken; the lord of that <sup>16</sup>servant shall come in a day when  
51 he expecteth not, and in an hour when he knoweth not, and shall <sup>17</sup>cut  
him asunder, and appoint his portion with the hypocrites; there shall  
be the weeping and gnashing of teeth.

1. Gr. *presence*. 2. Or, *the consummation of the age*. 3. Or, *these good tidings*. 4. Gr.  
*inhabited earth*. 5. Or, *through*. 6. Or, *a holy place*. 7. Or, *him*. 8. Or, *them*. 9. Or,  
*vultures*. 10. Many ancient authorities read *with a great trumpet, and they shall gather*,  
&c. 11. Or, *a trumpet of great sound*. 12. Or, *it*. 13. Many authorities, some ancient,  
omit *neither the Son*. 14. Or, *But this ye know*. 15. Gr. *digged through*. 16. Gr. *bond*

*servant.* 17. Or, *severely scourge him.* 18. Or, *Teacher.* 19. Or, *put them to death.*  
 20. Some ancient authorities omit and pray. 21. Gr. *bondservants.* 22. Gr. *you being brought.* 23. Or, *shall they put to death.* 24. Or, *lives.* 25. Or, *earth.* 26. Or, *expiring.*  
 27. Gr. *the inhabited earth.*

§116. CONCLUSION OF THIS DISCOURSE—AS TO THE SECOND COMING—  
 PARABLE OF THE TEN VIRGINS, AND OF THE TALENTS—  
 THE FINAL JUDGMENT.

On the Mount of Olives. (*Tuesday.*)

Matt. chap. 25.

1 Then shall the kingdom of heaven be likened unto ten virgins,  
 2 which took their <sup>1</sup>lamps, and went forth to meet the bridegroom. And  
 3 five of them were foolish, and five were wise. For the foolish, when  
 4 they took their <sup>1</sup>lamps, took no oil with them: but the wise took oil in  
 5 their vessels with their <sup>1</sup>lamps. Now while the bridegroom tarried,  
 6 they all slumbered and slept. But at midnight there is a cry, Behold,  
 7 the bridegroom! Come ye forth to meet him. Then all those virgins  
 8 arose, and trimmed their <sup>1</sup>lamps. And the foolish said unto the wise,  
 9 Give us of your oil; for our <sup>1</sup>lamps are going out. But the wise an-  
 swered, saying, Peradventure there will not be enough for us and  
 10 you: go ye rather to them that sell, and buy for yourselves. And  
 while they went away to buy, the bridegroom came; and they that  
 were ready went in with him to the marriage feast: and the door was  
 11 shut. Afterward come also the other virgins, saying, Lord, Lord,  
 12 open to us. But he answered and said, Verily I say unto you, I know  
 13 you not. Watch therefore, for ye know not the day nor the hour.  
 14 For *it is as when* a man, going into another country, called his own  
 15 <sup>2</sup>servants, and delivered unto them his goods. And unto one he gave  
 five talents, to another two, to another one; to each according to his  
 16 several ability; and he went on his journey. Straightway he that  
 received the five talents went and traded with them, and made other  
 17 five talents. In like manner he also that *received* the two gained other  
 18 two. But he that received the one went away and digged in the earth,  
 19 and hid his lord's money. Now after a long time the lord of those  
 20 <sup>2</sup>servants cometh and maketh a reckoning with them. And he that  
 received the five talents came and brought other five talents, saying,  
 Lord, thou deliveredst unto me five talents: lo, I have gained other  
 21 five talents. His lord said unto him, Well done, good and faithful  
<sup>3</sup>servant: thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will set thee over  
 22 many things; enter thou into the joy of thy lord. And he also that  
*received* the two talents came and said, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me  
 23 two talents: lo, I have gained other two talents. His lord said unto  
 him, Well done, good and faithful <sup>3</sup>servant: thou hast been faithful over  
 a few things, I will set thee over many things: enter thou into the joy  
 24 of thy lord. And he also that had received the one talent came and  
 said, Lord, I knew thee that thou art a hard man, reaping where thou  
 25 didst not sow, and gathering where thou didst not scatter: and I was  
 afraid, and went away and hid thy talent in the earth: lo, thou hast  
 26 thine own. But his lord answered and said unto him, Thou wicked  
 and slothful <sup>3</sup>servant, thou knewest that I reap where I sowed not,



## Matt. chap. 25.

27 and gather where I did not scatter; thou oughtest therefore to have put  
 28 my money to the bankers, and at my coming I should have received  
 29 back mine own with interest. Take ye away therefore the talent  
 30 from him, and give it unto him that hath the ten talents. For unto  
 every one that hath shall be given, and he shall have abundance: but  
 from him that hath not, even that which he hath shall be taken  
 30 away. And cast ye out the unprofitable <sup>3</sup>servant into the outer dark-  
 ness: there shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth.

31 But when the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the angels  
 32 with him, then shall he sit on the throne of his glory: and before him  
 shall be gathered all the nations: and he shall separate them one from  
 33 another, as the shepherd separateth the sheep from the <sup>4</sup>goats; and he  
 34 shall set the sheep on his right hand, but the <sup>4</sup>goats on the left. Then  
 shall the King say unto them on his right hand, Come, ye blessed of  
 my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation  
 35 of the world: for I was an hungred, and ye gave me meat: I was  
 thirsty, and ye gave me drink: I was a stranger, and ye took me in;  
 36 naked, and ye clothed me: I was sick, and ye visited me: I was in  
 37 prison, and ye came unto me. Then shall the righteous answer him,  
 saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungred, and fed thee? or athirst,  
 38 and gave thee drink? And when saw we thee a stranger, and took  
 39 thee in? or naked, and clothed thee? And when saw we thee sick, or  
 40 in prison, and came unto thee? And the King shall answer and say  
 unto them, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye did it unto one of  
 41 these my brethren, *even* these least, ye did it unto me. Then shall he  
 say also unto them on the left hand, <sup>5</sup>Depart from me, ye cursed, into the  
 42 eternal fire which is prepared for the devil and his angels: for I was  
 an hungred, and ye gave me no meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me  
 43 no drink: I was a stranger, and ye took me not in; naked, and ye  
 44 clothed me not; sick, and in prison, and ye visited me not. Then  
 shall they also answer, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungred,  
 or athirst, or a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in prison, and did not  
 45 minister unto thee? Then shall he answer them, saying, Verily, I  
 say unto you, Inasmuch as ye did it not unto one of these least, ye did  
 46 it not unto me. And these shall go away into eternal punishment:  
 but the righteous into eternal life.

1. Or, *torches*. 2. Gr. *bondservants*. 3. Gr. *bondservant*. 4. Gr. *kids*. 5. Or, *Depart from me under a curse*.

*In §117-123 we have the successive steps by which our Lord prepared himself for his approaching death, and prepared his disciples for enduring the separation, and for afterwards carrying on his work.*

§117. JESUS AGAIN PREDICTS, AND THE RULERS PLOT, HIS DEATH.  
MARY ANOINTS HIM BEFOREHAND FOR BURIAL (COMP. §46),  
AND JUDAS BARGAINS TO BETRAY HIM.

Bethany and Jerusalem. Probably beginning of Wednesday (our Tuesday after sunset).

Matt. 26:1-16.

Mark 14:1-11.

Luke 22:1-6.

John 12:2-8.

1 And it came to pass, when Jesus had finished all these words, he said unto his disciples,

2 Ye know that after two days the pass-over cometh, and the Son of man is delivered up to be

3 crucified. Then were gathered together the chief priests, and the elders of the people, unto the court of the high priest, who was called Caia-

4 phas: and they took counsel together that they might take Jesus by subtilty, and kill him. But they said, Not during the feast, lest a tumult arise among the people.

6 Now when Jesus was in

1 Now after two days was *the feast of the passover* and the unleavened bread:

and 2  
the chief priests and the scribes

sought how they might take him with subtilty, and kill him: for they said, Not during the feast, lest haply there shall be a tumult of the people.

3 And while he was in Beth-

1 Now the feast of unleavened bread drew nigh, which is called the Pass-over.

2 And the chief priests and the scribes

sought how they might put him to death;

for they feared the people.

2 So they made him a supper

Matt. 26:1-16.	Mark 14:1-11.	Luke 22:1-6.	John 12:2-8.
Bethany, in the house of Simon the leper, there came unto him a woman having an alabaster cruse of exceeding precious ointment, and she poured it upon his head as he sat at meat.	any in the house of Simon the leper, as he sat at meat, there came a woman having an alabaster cruse of ointment of <sup>s</sup> spikenard very costly, <i>and</i> she brake the cruse, and poured it over his head. But there were some that had indignation among themselves, <i>saying</i> ,		there: and Martha served; but Lazarus was one of them that sat at meat with him. Mary* therefore took a pound of ointment of <sup>s</sup> spikenard, very precious, and anointed the feet of Jesus, and wiped his feet with her hair: and the house was filled with the odour of the ointment.
8 But when the disciples saw it, they had indignation, saying,	4 his head. But there were some that had indignation among themselves, <i>saying</i> ,		3 him. Mary* therefore took a pound of ointment of <sup>s</sup> spikenard, very precious, and anointed the feet of Jesus, and wiped his feet with her hair: and the house was filled with the odour of the ointment.
To what purpose is this waste? For this ointment might have been sold for much, and given to the poor.	To what purpose hath this waste of the ointment been made? For this ointment might have been sold for above three hundred <sup>p</sup> pence, and given to the poor. And they murmured against her.		4 But Judas Iscariot, one of his disciples, which should betray him, 5 saith, Why was not this ointment sold for three hundred <sup>p</sup> pence, and given to the poor?
10 But Jesus perceiving it said unto them, Why trouble ye the woman? for she hath wrought a good work upon me. For ye	6 But Jesus said, Let her alone, why trouble ye her? she hath wrought a good work on me. For ye have the poor always with		6 Now this he said, not because he cared for the poor; but because he was a thief, and having the <sup>b</sup> bag took away what was put there- 7 in. Jesus therefore said, <sup>s</sup> Suffer her to keep it against the

\*This anointing has nothing in common with that given by Luke (246), except the fact of a woman anointing the Saviour's feet, and the name Simon, which was common. The former was in Galilee, this is at Bethany near Jerusalem. There the host despised the woman who anointed, here her brother is one of the guests, and her sister an active attendant. There the woman was "a sinner," a notoriously bad woman, here it is the devout Mary who "sat at the Lord's feet and heard his word" months before (282). There the host thought strange that Jesus allowed her to touch him, here the disciples complain of the waste. There the Saviour gave assurance of forgiveness, here of perpetual and world-wide honor. Especially notice that here the woman who anoints is anticipating his speedy death and burial, of which at the former time he had never distinctly spoken. In view of all these differences it is absurd to represent the two anointings as the same, and outrageous on such slender ground to cast reproach on Mary of Bethany.

- Matt. 26:1-16. have the poor always with you; but me ye have not al-  
12 ways. For in that she poured this ointment upon my body, she did it to prepare me for burial.  
13 Verily I say unto you, Where-soever this gospel shall be preached in the whole world, that also which this woman hath done shall be spoken of for a memorial of her.
- Mark 14:1-11. you, and when-soever ye will ye can do them good: but me ye have not  
8 always. She hath done what she could: she hath anointed my body afore-  
hand for the  
9 burying. And verily I say unto you, Where-soever the gospel shall be preach-  
ed throughout the whole world, that also which this woman hath done shall be spoken of for a memorial of her.
- Luke 22:1-6. 3 And Satan entered into Judas who was called Iscariot, being of the number of the  
4 twelve. And he went away, and communed with the chief priests and captains, how he might deliver him unto them.
- John 12:2-8. day of my bury-  
8 ing. For the poor ye have always with you; but me ye have not al-ways.
- 14 Then one of 10 And Judas Iscariot, he that was one of the twelve, went unto the chief priests, and communed with them, that he might deliver him unto them.
- 15 and said, What are ye willing to give me, and I will deliver him unto you?  
11 And they, when they heard it, were glad, and promised to give him mon-  
5 And they were glad, and covenanted to give him mon-



Matt. 26:1-16.

Mark 14:1-11.

Luke 22:1-6.

And they weighed unto him thirty pieces of silver. And from that time he sought opportunity to deliver him unto them.

ey.

6 ey. And he consented,

And he sought how he might conveniently deliver him unto them.

and sought opportunity to deliver him unto them <sup>in</sup> the absence of the multitude.

1. Or, *a flask*. 2. Gr. *pistic nard*, pistic being perhaps a local name. Others take it to mean *genuine*; others, *liquid*. 3. The word in the Greek denotes a coin worth about seventeen cents. 4. Gr. *the one of the twelve*. 5. Or, *without tumult*. 6. Or, *box*. 7. Or, *carried what was put therein*. 8. Or, *let her alone: it was that she might keep it*.

# § 118. PREPARATION FOR THE PASCHAL MEAL, AND CONTENTION AMONG THE TWELVE AS TO PRECEDENCE UNDER THE MESSIANIC REIGN.

Bethany to Jerusalem. Thursday afternoon and (after sunset)  
beginning of Friday.

Matt. 26:17-20.

Mark 14:12-17.

Luke 22:7-16 and 24-30.

17 Now on the first day of unleavened bread the disciples came to Jesus, saying,

Where wilt thou that we make ready for thee to eat the passover? And he said,

12 And on the first day of unleavened bread, when they sacrificed the passover, his disciples say unto him, Where wilt thou that we go and make ready that thou mayest eat the passover? And he sendeth two of his disciples, and saith unto them,

7 And the day of unleavened bread came, on which the passover must be sacrificed.

8 And he sent Peter and John, saying, Go and make ready for us the passover, that we may eat. And they said unto him, Where wilt thou that we make ready? And he said unto them, Behold, when ye are entered into the city, there shall meet you a man bearing a pitcher of

Go into the city to such a man, and say unto him,

Go into the city, and there shall meet you a

Matt. 26:17-20.

The  
 'Master saith, My  
 time is at hand; I  
 keep the passover  
 at thy house with  
 my disciples.

- 19 And the disciples did as  
 Jesus appointed  
 them; and they made  
 ready the passover.  
 20 Now when even was  
 come he was sitting  
 at meat with the  
 twelve <sup>2</sup>disciples;

Mark 14:12-17.

man bearing a pitch-  
 er of water: follow  
 14 him; and whereso-  
 ever he shall en-  
 ter in, say to the  
 goodman of the  
 house, The 'Master  
 saith, Where is  
 my guest-chamber,  
 where I shall eat the  
 passover with my  
 15 disciples? And he  
 will himself shew  
 you a large upper  
 room furnished *and*  
 ready: and there  
 make ready for us.  
 16 And the disciples  
 went forth, and came  
 into the city, and  
 found as he had said  
 unto them: and they  
 made ready the pass-  
 17 over. And when it  
 was evening he com-  
 eth with the twelve.

Luke 22:7-16 and 24-30.

water; follow him  
 into the house where-  
 11 into he goeth. And  
 ye shall say unto the  
 goodman of the house,  
 The 'Master saith un-  
 to thee, Where is the  
 guest-chamber, where  
 I shall eat the pass-  
 over with my disci-  
 12 ples? And he will  
 shew you a large up-  
 per room furnished:  
 there make ready.

- 13 And they went,  
 and  
 found as he had said  
 unto them: and they  
 made ready the pass-  
 over.

- 14 And when the hour  
 was come, he sat  
 down, and the apos-

15 tles with him. And he said unto them, With desire I have desired  
 16 to eat this passover\* with you before I suffer: for I say unto you, I  
 will not eat it, until it be fulfilled in the kingdom of God.

24 And there arose also a contention among them, which of them is  
 25 accounted to be <sup>3</sup>greatest. And he said unto them, The kings of the  
 Gentiles have lordship over them; and they that have authority over  
 26 them are called Benefactors. But ye *shall not be so*: but he that is the  
 greater among you, let him become as the younger; and he that is  
 27 chief, as he that doth serve. For whether is greater, he that <sup>4</sup>sitteth  
 at meat, or he that serveth? is not he that <sup>4</sup>sitteth at meat? but I am  
 28 in the midst of you as he that serveth. But ye are they which have  
 29 continued with me in my temptations; and <sup>6</sup>I appoint unto you a king-  
 dom, even as my Father appointed unto me, that ye may eat and drink  
 30 at my table in my kingdom; and ye shall sit on thrones judging the  
 twelve tribes of Israel.

1. Or, Teacher. 2. Many authorities, some ancient, omit *disciples*. 3. Gr. *greater*.  
 4. Gr. *reclineth*. 5. Or. *I appoint unto you, even as my Father appointed unto me a king-  
 dom, that ye may eat and drink, etc.*

\*Some regard certain expressions in the Gospel of John as showing that Jesus did not eat  
 the Paschal meal, and thus hopelessly contradicting the other Gospels. But no one of  
 John's expressions shows what is supposed, and one of them really indicates the contrary.  
 See note at end of the volume, on § 118. Matthew, Mark, and Luke clearly show that he did  
 eat the regular Passover meal.

§ 119. DURING THE PASCHAL MEAL, JESUS WASHES THE FEET OF  
HIS DISCIPLES.

### Evening before the Crucifixion.

John 13:1-20.

1 Now before the feast of the passover, Jesus knowing that his hour  
was come that he should depart out of this world unto the Father,  
having loved his own which were in the world, he loved them <sup>1</sup>unto  
2 the end. And during supper, the devil having already put into the  
3 heart of Judas Iscariot, Simon's *son*, to betray him, *Jesus*, knowing that  
the Father had given all things into his hands, and that he came forth  
4 from God and goeth unto God, riseth from supper, and layeth aside his  
5 garments; and he took a towel and girded himself. Then he poureth  
water into the bason, and began to wash the disciples' feet, and to  
6 wipe them with the towel wherewith he was girded. So he cometh  
to Simon Peter. He saith unto him, Lord, dost thou wash my feet?  
7 Jesus answered and said unto him, What I do thou knowest not now;  
8 but thou shalt understand hereafter. Peter saith unto him, Thou  
shalt never wash my feet. Jesus answered him, If I wash thee not,  
9 thou hast no part with me. Simon Peter saith unto him, Lord, not  
10 my feet only, but also my hands and my head. Jesus saith to him, He  
that is bathed needeth not <sup>2</sup>save to wash his feet, but is clean every  
11 whit; and ye are clean, but not all. For he knew him that should be-  
tray him; therefore said he, Ye are not all clean.  
12 So when he had washed their feet, and taken his garments, and <sup>3</sup>sat  
13 down again, he said unto them, Know ye what I have done to you? Ye  
14 call me, <sup>4</sup>Master, and, Lord: and ye say well; for so I am. If I then,  
the Lord and the <sup>4</sup>Master, have washed your feet, ye also ought to  
15 wash one another's feet. For I have given you an example, that ye  
16 also should do as I have done to you. Verily, verily, I say unto you,  
A <sup>5</sup>servant is not greater than his lord; neither <sup>6</sup>one that is sent  
17 greater than he that sent him. If ye know these things, blessed are  
18 ye if ye do them. I speak not of you all: I know whom I <sup>7</sup>have chosen:  
but that the scripture may be fulfilled, He that eateth <sup>8</sup>my bread lifted  
19 up his heel against me. From henceforth I tell you before it come to  
pass, that, when it is come to pass, ye may believe that <sup>9</sup>I am *he*.  
20 Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that receiveth whomsoever I send  
receiveth me; and he that receiveth me receiveth him that sent me.

1. Or, *to the uttermost*. 2. Some ancient authorities omit *save, and his feet*. 3. Gr. *reclined*. 4. Or, *Teacher*. 5. Gr. *bondservant*. 6. Gr. *an apostle*. 7. Or, *chose*. 8. Many ancient authorities read *his bread with me*. 9. Or, *I am*.

§ 120. JESUS FORETELLS THAT JUDAS WILL BETRAY HIM, AND  
PETER WILL DENY HIM.

Evening before the Crucifixion.

Matt. 26:21-25      Mark 14:18-21      Luke 22:21-23      John 13:21-38.  
and 31-35.      and 27-31.      and 31-38.

21 and as they <sup>18</sup>sat and were <sup>21</sup>the hand of <sup>21</sup>had thus said,

Matt. 26:21-25  
and 31-35.

were eating, he  
said, Verily I  
say unto you,  
that one of you  
shall betray  
me.

Mark 14:18-21  
and 27-31.

eating, Jesus  
said, Verily I  
say unto you, <sup>22</sup>One of you  
shall betray  
me, *even* he  
that eateth  
with me.

Luke 22:21-23  
and 31-38.

him that be-  
trayeth me is  
with me on the  
table. For the  
Son of man in-  
deed goeth, as  
it hath beende-  
termined: but  
woe unto that  
man through  
whom he is be-  
trayed!

John 13:21-38.

he was troubled  
in the spirit,  
and testified,  
and said, Veri-  
ly, verily, I say  
unto you, that  
one of you shall  
betray me.

<sup>22</sup> And they 19

were exceeding  
sorrowful, and  
began to say  
unto him every  
one, Is it I,  
Lord?

They 23

began to be  
sorrowful, and  
to say unto  
him one by one,  
Is it I?

And they began <sup>22</sup>

to question a-  
mong them-  
selves, which  
of them it was  
that should do  
this thing.

The  
disciples look-  
ed one on an-  
other, doubting  
of whom he  
spake.

<sup>23</sup> And he 20

answered and  
said, He that  
dipped his  
hand with me  
in the dish,  
the same shall

And he

said unto them,  
*It is* one of the  
twelve, he that  
dippeth with  
me in the dish.

<sup>24</sup> betray me. The

Son of man go-  
eth, even as it  
is written of  
him: but woe  
unto that man  
through whom  
the Son of man  
is betrayed!  
good were it  
for that man  
if he had not  
been born.

<sup>21</sup> For the Son of  
man goeth,  
even as it is  
written of him:  
but woe unto  
that man  
through whom  
the Son of man  
is betrayed!  
good were it  
for that man  
if he had not  
been born.

<sup>23</sup>

There  
was at the table  
reclining in Je-  
sus' bosom one  
of his disciples,  
whom Jesus  
loved. Simon  
Peter therefore  
beckoneth to  
him, and saith  
unto him, Tell



Matt. 26:21-25  
and 31-35.

Mark 14:18-21  
and 27-31.

Luke 22:21-23  
and 31-38.

John 13:21-38.

us who it is  
of whom he  
25 speaketh. He leaning back, as  
he was, on Jesus' breast saith un-  
26 to him, Lord, who is it? Jesus  
therefore answereth, He it is, for  
whom I shall dip the sop, and give  
it him. So when he had dipped  
the sop, he taketh and giveth it  
to Judas, *the son of Simon Iscariot.*

25 And  
Judas, which  
betrayed him,  
answered and  
said, Is it I,  
Rabbi? He  
saith unto him,  
Thou hast said.

27 And after the sop, then entered  
Satan into him. Jesus therefore  
saith unto him, That thou doest,

28 do quickly. Now no man at the table knew for what intent he spake  
29 this unto them. For some thought, because Judas had the 'bag, that  
Jesus said unto him, Buy what things we have need of for the feast:  
30 or, that he should give something to the poor. He then having re-  
ceived the sop went out straightway: and it was night.

31 When therefore he was gone out, Jesus saith, Now <sup>is</sup> the Son of  
32 man glorified, and God <sup>is</sup> glorified in him; and God shall glorify him  
33 in himself, and straightway shall he glorify him. Little children,  
yet a little while I am with you. Ye shall seek me: and as I said unto  
34 the Jews, Whither I go, ye cannot come; so now I say unto you. A  
new commandment I give unto you, that ye love one another; <sup>even</sup>  
35 as I have loved you, that ye also love one another. By this shall all  
men know that ye are my disciples, if ye have love one to another.

31	Then	saith	27	And	Jesus	31	Simon, Si-	36	Simon Peter
	Jesus	unto		saith	unto		mon, behold,		saith unto him,
	them, All ye			them, All ye			Satan <sup>asked</sup> to		Lord, whither
	shall be offend-			shall be offend-			have you, that		goest thou? Je-
	ed in me this			ed: for it is			he might sift		sus answered,
	night: for it is			written, I will			you as wheat:		Whither I go,
	written, I will			smite the shep-	32	but I made sup-		thou canst not	
	smite the shep-			herd, and the		plication for		follow me now;	
	herd, and the			sheep shall be		thee, that thy		but thou shalt	
	sheep of the			scattered a-		faith fail not:		follow after-	
	flock shall be	28	broad. How-			and do thou,		wards.	
	scattered a-		beit, after I am			when once			
32	broad. But af-		raised up, I			thou hast turn-			
	ter I am raised		will go before			ed again, stab-			
	up, I will go be-		you into Gali-			lish thy breth-			
	fore you into		lee.			ren.			

Matt. 26:21-25  
and 31-35.

Mark 14:18-21  
and 27-31.

Luke 22:21-23  
and 31-38.

John 13:21-38.

- 33 Galilee. But 29 Peter answered and said unto him, If all shall be 'offended in thee, I 30 will never be 34 'offended. Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, that this night, before the cock crow, thou shalt deny me 35 thrice. Peter 31 saith unto him, Even if I must die with thee, yet will I not deny thee. Likewise also said all the disciples.
- But Peter said unto him, Although all shall be 'offended, yet will not I. And Jesus saith unto him, Verily I say unto thee, that thou to-day, even this night, before the cock crow twice shalt deny me thrice. But he spake exceeding vehemently, If I must die with thee, I will not deny thee. And in like manner also said they all.
- And he 37 said unto him, Lord, with thee I am ready to go both to prison and to death. And he said, I tell thee, 38 Peter, the cock shall not crow this day, until thou shalt thrice deny that thou knowest me.
- Peter saith unto him, Lord, why cannot I follow thee even now? I will lay down my life for thee. Jesus answereth, Wilt thou lay down thy life for me? Verily, verily, I say unto thee, The cock shall not crow, till thou hast denied me thrice.

- 35 And he said unto them, When I sent you forth without purse, and wallet, and shoes, lacked ye anything? And they said, Nothing.
- 36 And he said unto them, But now, he that hath a purse, let him take it, and likewise a wallet: 'and he that hath none, let him sell his 37 cloke, and buy a sword. For I say unto you, that this which is written must be fulfilled in me, And he was reckoned with transgressors: for that which concerneth me hath 'fulfilment. And they said, Lord, behold, here are two swords. And he said unto them, It is enough.

1. Gr. *caused to stumble*. 2. Gr. *reclined*. 3. Gr. *for him if that man*. 4. Or, *obtained you by asking*. 5. Or, *and he that hath no sword, let him sell his cloke and buy one*. 6. Gr. *end*. 7. Or, *box*. 8. Or, *was*. 9. Or, *even as I loved you, that ye also may love one another*.

## 3121. JESUS INSTITUTES THE MEMORIAL OF EATING BREAD AND DRINKING WINE.

Jerusalem. Evening before the Crucifixion.

Matt. 26:26-29

Mark 14:22-25.

Luke 22:17-20.

I Cor. 11:23-26.

17 And he received a cup, and when he had given thanks he said, Take this, and divide it among yourselves: for I say unto you, I will not drink from henceforth of the fruit of the vine until the kingdom of God shall come.

26 And as they were eating, Jesus took bread, and brake it; and he gave to the disciples, and said, Take, eat; this is my body.

27 And he took a cup, and gave thanks, and gave to them, saying, Drink ye all of it;

28 for this is my blood of the covenant, which is shed for many unto remission of sins. But I

29 say unto you, I will not drink henceforth of

And as they were eating, he took bread, and when he had blessed, he brake it, and gave to them, and said, Take ye: this is my body.

And he took a cup, and when he had given thanks, he gave to them, and they all drank of it.

And he said unto them, This is my blood of the covenant, which is shed for many.

Verily I say unto you, I will no more drink of the fruit of

19 And he took bread, and when he had given thanks, he brake it, and gave to them, saying, This is my body which is given for you: this do in remembrance of me. And the cup in like manner after supper, saying,

This cup is the new covenant in my blood, even that which is poured out for you.

23 For I received of the Lord that which also I delivered unto you, how that the Lord Jesus in the night in which he was betrayed took bread; and when he had given thanks, he brake it, and said, This is my body, which is for you: this do in remembrance of me.

25 In like manner also the cup, after supper, saying, This cup is the new covenant in my blood: this do, as oft as ye drink it, in re-

Matt. 26:26-29.  
this fruit of  
the vine, until  
that day when  
I drink it new  
with you in my  
Father's king-  
dom.

Mark 14:22-25.  
the vine, until  
that day when  
I drink it new  
in the king-  
dom of God.

I Cor. 11:23-26.  
membrance of  
26 me. For as of-  
ten as ye eat  
this bread, and  
drink the cup,  
ye proclaim the  
Lord's death  
till he come.

1. Or, *a loaf*. 2. Some ancient authorities read *the cup*. 3. Or, *the testament*.  
4. Many ancient authorities insert *new*. 5. Some ancient authorities omit *which is*  
*given for you...which is poured out for you*. 6. Or, *testament*. 7. Many ancient authori-  
ties read *is broken for you*.

### § 122. FAREWELL DISCOURSE TO HIS DISCIPLES.

Jerusalem.

John, chap. 14 to chap. 17.

(a) chap. 14.—1 Let not your heart be troubled: 'ye believe in God,  
2 believe also in me. In my Father's house are many <sup>2</sup>mansions; if it  
were not so, I would have told you; for I go to prepare a place for you.  
3 And if I go and prepare a place for you, I come again, and will receive  
4 you unto myself; that where I am *there* ye may be also. <sup>2</sup>And whither  
5 I go, ye know the way. Thomas saith unto him, Lord, we know not  
6 whither thou goest; how know we the way? Jesus saith unto him, I  
am the way, and the truth, and the life: no one cometh unto the  
7 Father, but <sup>4</sup>by me. If ye had known me, ye would have known my  
Father also: from henceforth ye know him, and have seen him.  
8 Philip saith unto him, Lord, shew us the Father, and it sufficeth us.  
9 Jesus saith unto him, Have I been so long time with you, and dost  
thou not know me, Philip? he that hath seen me hath seen the Father;  
10 how sayest thou, Shew us the Father? Believest thou not that I am  
in the Father, and the Father in me? the words that I say unto you I  
speak not from myself: but the Father abiding in me doeth his works.  
11 Believe me that I am in the Father and the Father in me: or else be-  
12 lieve me for the very works' sake. Verily, verily, I say unto you, he  
that believeth on me, the works that I do shall he do also; and greater  
13 *works* than these shall he do; because I go unto the Father. And  
whatsoever ye shall ask in my name, that will I do, that the Father  
14 may be glorified in the Son. If ye shall ask <sup>4</sup>me anything in my name,  
15 that will I do. If ye love me, ye will keep my commandments.  
16 And I will <sup>6</sup>pray the Father, and he shall give you another <sup>7</sup>Comforter,  
17 that he may be with you for ever, *even* the Spirit of truth: whom the  
world cannot receive; for it beholdeth him not, neither knoweth him:  
18 ye know him; for he abideth with you, and shall be in you. I will not  
19 leave you <sup>8</sup>desolate: I come unto you. Yet a little while, and the  
world beholdeth me no more; but ye behold me: because I live, <sup>9</sup>ye  
20 shall live also. In that day ye shall know that I am in my Father,  
21 and ye in me, and I in you. He that hath my commandments, and  
keepeth them, he it is that loveth me: and he that loveth me shall



John, chap. 14 to chap. 17.

be loved of my Father, and I will love him, and will manifest myself  
22 unto him. Judas (not Iscariot) saith unto him, Lord, what is come to  
pass that thou wilt manifest thyself unto us, and not unto the world?  
23 And Jesus answered and said unto him, If a man love me, he will  
keep my word: and my Father will love him, and we will come unto  
24 him, and make our abode with him. He that loveth me not keepeth  
not my words: and the word which ye hear is not mine, but the  
Father's who sent me.

25 These things have I spoken unto you, while yet abiding with you.  
26 But the Comforter, even the Holy Spirit, whom the Father will send  
in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring to your remem-  
27 brance all that I said unto you. Peace I leave with you; my peace I  
give unto you: not as the world giveth, give I unto you. Let not your  
28 heart be troubled, neither let it be fearful. Ye heard how I said  
to you, I go away, and I come unto you. If ye loved me, ye would  
have rejoiced, because I go unto the Father: for the Father is greater  
29 than I. And now I have told you before it come to pass, that, when it  
30 is come to pass, ye may believe. I will no more speak much with you,  
31 for the prince of the world cometh: and he hath nothing in me; but  
that the world may know that I love the Father, and as the Father  
gave me commandment, even so I do. Arise, let us go hence.

1. Or, *believe in God*. 2. Or, *abiding-places*. 3. Many ancient authorities read *And whither I go, ye know, and the way ye know*. 4. Or, *through*. 5. Many ancient authorities omit *me*. 6. Gr. *make request of*. 7. Or, *Advocate*, Or, *Helper*. Gr. *Paraclete*. 8. Or, *orphans*. 9. Or, *and ye shall live*.

(b) chaps. 15 and 16.—15. I am the true vine, and my Father is the  
2 husbandman. Every branch in me that beareth not fruit, he taketh  
it away: and every branch that beareth fruit, he cleanseth it, that it  
3 may bear more fruit. Already ye are clean because of the word which  
4 I have spoken unto you. Abide in me, and I in you. As the branch  
cannot bear fruit of itself, except it abide in the vine; so neither can  
5 ye, except ye abide in me. I am the vine, ye are the branches: He  
that abideth in me, and I in him, the same beareth much fruit: for  
6 apart from me ye can do nothing. If a man abide not in me, he is  
cast forth as a branch, and is withered; and they gather them, and  
7 cast them into the fire, and they are burned. If ye abide in me, and  
my words abide in you, ask whatsoever ye will, and it shall be done  
8 unto you. Herein is my Father glorified, that ye bear much fruit:  
9 and so shall ye be my disciples. Even as the Father hath loved me,  
10 I also have loved you: abide ye in my love. If ye keep my command-  
ments, ye shall abide in my love; even as I have kept my Father's  
11 commandments, and abide in his love. These things have I spoken  
unto you, that my joy may be in you, and that your joy may be fulfilled.  
12 This is my commandment, that ye love one another, even as I have  
13 loved you. Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down  
his life for his friends. Ye are my friends, if ye do the things which  
14 I command you. No longer do I call you servants; for the servant  
knoweth not what his lord doeth: but I have called you friends; for  
all things that I heard from my Father I have made known unto you.  
15 Ye did not choose me, but I chose you, and appointed you, that ye  
16 should go and bear fruit, and that your fruit should abide: that what-

John, chap. 14 to chap. 17.

soever ye shall ask of the Father in my name, he may give it you.  
 17, 18 These things I command you, that ye may love one another. If the  
 world hateth you, 'ye know that it hath hated me before *it hated you*.  
 19 If ye were of the world, the world would love its own; but because ye  
 are not of the world, but I chose you out of the world, therefore the  
 20 world hateth you. Remember the word that I said unto you, A 'servant  
 is not greater than his lord. If they persecuted me, they will also  
 21 persecute you; if they keep my word, they will keep yours also. But  
 all these things will they do unto you for my name's sake, because  
 22 they know not him that sent me. If I had not come and spoken unto  
 them, they had not had sin: but now they have no excuse for their  
 23, 24 sin. He that hateth me hateth my Father also. If I had not done  
 among them the works which none other did, they had not had sin:  
 25 but now have they both seen and hated both me and my Father. But  
*this cometh to pass*, that the word may be fulfilled that is written in  
 26 their law, They hated me without a cause. But when the 'Comforter  
 is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father, *even* the Spirit  
 of truth, which 'proceedeth from the Father, he shall bear witness of  
 27 me: 'and ye also bear witness, because ye have been with me from the  
 beginning.

16. 1. These things have I spoken unto you that ye should not be  
 2 made to stumble. They shall put you out of the synagogues: yea, the  
 hour cometh, that whosoever killeth you shall think that he offereth  
 3 service unto God. And these things will they do, because they have  
 4 not known the Father, nor me. But these things have I spoken unto  
 you, that when their hour is come, ye may remember them, how that  
 I told you. And these things I said not unto you from the beginning,  
 5 because I was with you. But now I go unto him that sent me; and  
 6 none of you asketh me, Whither goest thou? But because I have  
 7 spoken these things unto you, sorrow hath filled your heart. Never-  
 theless I tell you the truth; It is expedient for you that I go away: for  
 if I go not away, the 'Comforter will not come unto you; but if I go, I  
 8 will send him unto you. And he, when he is come, will convict the  
 9 world in respect of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgement: of  
 10 sin, because they believe not on me: of righteousness, because I go to  
 11 the Father, and ye behold me no more; of judgement, because the  
 12 prince of this world hath been judged. I have yet many things to say  
 13 unto you, but ye cannot bear them now. Howbeit when he, the Spirit  
 of truth, is come, he shall guide you into all the truth: for he shall  
 not speak from himself; but what things soever he shall hear, *these*  
 shall he speak: and he shall declare unto you the things that are to  
 14 come. He shall glorify me: for he shall take of mine, and shall  
 15 declare *it* unto you. All things whatsoever the Father hath are mine:  
 therefore said I, that he taketh of mine, and shall declare *it* unto you.  
 16 A little while, and ye behold me no more; and again a little while,  
 17 and ye shall see me. *Some* of his disciples therefore said one to  
 another, What is this that he saith unto us, A little while, and ye  
 behold me not; and again a little while, and ye shall see me: and,  
 18 Because I go to the Father? They said therefore, What is this that  
 19 he saith, A little while? We know not what he saith. Jesus per-  
 ceived that they were desirous to ask him, and he said unto them, Do

John, chap. 14 to chap. 17.

ye inquire among yourselves concerning this, that I said, A little while, and ye behold me not, and again a little while, and ye shall see me? Verily, verily, I say unto you, that ye shall weep and lament, but the world shall rejoice: ye shall be sorrowful, but your sorrow shall be turned into joy. A woman when she is in travail hath sorrow because her hour is come: but when she is delivered of the child, she remembereth no more the anguish, for the joy that a man is born into the world. And ye therefore now have sorrow: but I will see you again, and your heart shall rejoice, and your joy no one taketh away from you. And in that day ye shall ask me nothing. Verily, verily, I say unto you, If ye shall ask anything of the Father, he will give it you in my name. Hitherto have ye asked nothing in my name: ask and ye shall receive, that your joy may be fulfilled.

These things have I spoken unto you in <sup>10</sup>proverbs: the hour cometh, when I shall no more speak unto you in <sup>10</sup>proverbs, but shall tell you plainly of the Father. In that day ye shall ask in my name: and I say not unto you, that I will <sup>11</sup>pray the Father for you; for the Father himself loveth you, because ye have loved me, and have believed that I came forth from the Father. I came out from the Father, and am come into the world: again, I leave the world, and go unto the Father. His disciples say, Lo, now speakest thou plainly, and speakest no <sup>13</sup>proverb. Now know we that thou knowest all things, and needest not that any man should ask thee: by this we believe that thou camest forth from God. Jesus answered them, Do ye now believe? Behold, the hour cometh, yea, is come, that ye shall be scattered, every man to his own, and shall leave me alone: and yet I am not alone, because the Father is with me. These things have I spoken unto you, that in me ye may have peace. In the world ye have tribulation: but be of good cheer; I have overcome the world.

1. Or, was. 2. Many ancient authorities read *that ye bear much fruit, and be my disciples*. 3. Gr. *bondservants*. 4. Gr. *bondservant*. 5. Or, *know ye*. 6. Or, *Advocate*. Or, *Helper*. Gr. *Paraclete*. 7. Or, *goeth forth from*. 8. Or, *and bear ye also witness*. 9. Or, *ask me no question*. 10. Or, *parables*. 11. Gr. *make request of*. 12. Or, *parable*.

(c) chap. 17. 1. These things spake Jesus; and lifting up his eyes to heaven, he said, Father, the hour is come; glorify thy Son, that the Son may glorify thee: even as thou gavest him authority over all flesh, that whatsoever thou hast given him, to them he should give eternal life. And this is life eternal, that they should know thee the only true God, and him whom thou didst send, *even* Jesus Christ. I glorified thee on the earth, having accomplished the work which thou hast given me to do. And now, O Father, glorify thou me with thine own self with the glory which I had with thee before the world was. I manifested thy name unto the men whom thou gavest me out of the world: thine they were, and thou gavest them to me; and they have kept thy word. Now they know that all things whatsoever thou hast given me are from thee: for the words which thou hast given me I have given unto them; and they received *them*, and knew of a truth that I came forth from thee, and they believed that thou didst send me. I pray for them: I pray not for the world, but for those whom thou hast given me; for they are thine: and all things that are mine are thine, and thine are mine; and I am glorified in them. And



John, chap. 14 to chap. 17.

I am no more in the world, and these are in the world, and I come to thee. Holy Father, keep them in thy name which thou hast given me, that they may be one, even as we *are*. While I was with them, I kept them in thy name which thou hast given me: and I guarded them, and not one of them perished, but the son of perdition; that the scripture might be fulfilled. But now I come to thee: and these things I speak in the world, that they may have my joy fulfilled in themselves. I have given them my word; and the world hated them, because they are not of the world, even as I am not of the world. I pray not that thou shouldest take them <sup>2</sup>from the world, but that thou shouldest keep them <sup>2</sup>from <sup>3</sup>the evil one. They are not of the world, even as I am not of the world. <sup>4</sup>Sanctify them in the truth: thy word is truth. As thou didst send me into the world, even so sent I them into the world. And for their sakes I <sup>4</sup>sanctify myself, that they themselves also may be sanctified in truth. Neither for these only do I pray, but for them also that believe on me through their word; that they may all be one; even as thou, Father, *art* in me, and I in thee, that they also may be in us: that the world may believe that thou didst send me. And the glory which thou hast given me I have given unto them; that they may be one, even as we *are* one; I in them, and thou in me, that they may be perfected into one; that the world may know that thou didst send me, and lovedst them, even as thou lovedst me. Father, <sup>5</sup>that which thou hast given me, I will that, where I am, they also may be with me; that they may behold my glory, which thou hast given me: for thou lovedst me before the foundation of the world. O righteous Father, the world knew thee not, but I knew thee; and these knew that thou didst send me; and I made known unto them thy name, and will make it known; that the love wherewith thou lovedst me may be in them, and I in them.

1. Gr. *make request*. 2. Gr. *out of*. 3. Or, *evil*. 4. Or, *Consecrate*. 5. Many ancient authorities read *those whom*.

### §123. GOING FORTH TO GETHSEMANE, JESUS SUFFERS LONG IN AGONY.

In an open garden, between the brook Kedron and the foot of the Mount of Olives.

Late in the night introducing Friday.

Matt. 26:30, and Mark 14:26, and Luke 22:39-46. John 18:1  
36-46. 32-42.

30 And when they had sung a hymn, they went out unto the Mount of Olives.	26 And when they had sung a hymn, they went out unto the Mount of Olives.	39 And he came out, and went, as his custom was, unto the Mount of Olives; and the disciples also followed him.	1 When Jesus had spoken these words, he went forth with his disciples over the <sup>1</sup> brook <sup>2</sup> Kidron, where was a
---	---	---	--



Matt. 26:30, and Mark 14:26, and Luke 22:39-46.

John 18:1.

36 Then com- 32 And they 40 And when he  
eth Jesus come unto was at the  
with them un- 'a place place, he said  
to 'a place which was unto them,  
called Geth- named Geth-  
semane, and semane: and  
saith unto his he saith unto  
disciples, Sit his disciples,  
ye here, while Sit ye here,  
I go yonder while I pray.

garden, into  
the which he  
entered, him-  
self and his dis-  
ciples.

37 and pray. And he took with 33 And he taketh  
him Peter and with him Pe-  
the two sons of ter and James  
Zebedee, and and John,  
began to be and began to  
sorrowful and be greatly a-  
sore troubled. mazed, and

38 Then saith he 34 And he saith  
unto them, My unto them, My  
soul is exceed- soul is exceed-  
ing sorrowful, ing sorrowful  
even unto even unto  
death: abide death: abide  
ye here, and ye here, and  
watch with

Pray that ye  
enter not into  
temptation.

39 me. And he 35 watch. And 41  
went forward he went for-  
a little, and ward a little,  
fell on his face, and fell on the  
and prayed, ground, and  
prayed that,  
if it were pos-  
sible, the hour 42 saying,

And  
he was parted  
from them a-  
bout a stone's  
cast: and he  
kneeled down  
and prayed,

saying, O my 36 And he said,  
Father, if it be Abba, Father,  
possible, let all things are  
this cup pass possible unto  
away from thee; remove  
me: neverthe- this cup from  
less, not as I me: howbeit  
will, but as I not what I  
thou wilt. will, but what  
thou wilt.

Father,  
if thou be will-  
ing, remove  
this cup from  
me: neverthe-  
less not my  
will, but thine,  
be done.

43  
there ap-  
peared unto  
him an angel  
from heaven,

Matt. 26:30, and Mark 14:26, and Luke 22:39-46.  
36-46. 32-42.

- strengthening  
44 him. And being in an agony he prayed more earnestly: and his sweat became as it were great drops of blood falling down upon the  
45 ground. And when he rose up from his prayer, he came unto the disciples, and found them sleeping for  
46 sorrow, and said unto them, Why sleep ye? rise and pray, that ye enter not into temptation.
- 40 And he cometh unto the disciples, and findeth them sleeping, and saith unto Peter, What, could ye not watch with me one hour?
- 41 <sup>2</sup>Watch and pray, that ye enter not into temptation: the spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak.
- 42 Again a second time he went away, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if this cannot pass away, except I drink it, thy will be done.
- 43 And he came again and found them sleeping, for their eyes were very heavy.
- 44 And he left them again, and went away, strengthening him. And being in an agony he prayed more earnestly: and his sweat became as it were great drops of blood falling down upon the ground. And when he rose up from his prayer, he came unto the disciples, and found them sleeping for sorrow, and said unto them, Why sleep ye? rise and pray, that ye enter not into temptation.
- 37 And he cometh, and findeth them sleeping, and saith unto Peter, Simon, sleepest thou? couldest thou not watch one hour?
- 38 <sup>2</sup>Watch and pray, that ye enter not into temptation: the spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak.
- 39 And again he went away, and prayed, saying the same words.
- 40 And again he came, and found them sleeping, for their eyes were very heavy; and they wist not what to answer him.

Matt. 26:30, and Mark 14:26, and  
36-46. 32-42.

and prayed a swer him.  
third time, say-  
ing again the  
same words.

45 Then cometh 41 And he com-  
he to the dis- eth the third  
ciples, and time, and saith  
saith unto unto them,  
them, Sleep on Sleep on now,  
now, and take and take your  
your rest: be- rest: it is  
hold, the hour enough; the  
is at hand, and hour is come;  
the Son of man behold, the Son  
is betrayed un- of man is be-  
to the hands of trayed into the  
sinners. hands of sin-

46 Arise, 42 ners. Arise,  
let us be going: let us be go-  
behold, he is ing: behold, he  
at hand that that betrayeth  
betrayeth me. me is at hand.

1. Gr. *an enclosed piece of ground*. 2. Or, *Watch ye, and pray that ye enter not*. 3. *Many ancient authorities omit ver. 43, 44.* 4. Or, *ravine*. Gr. *winter-torrent*. 5. Or, *of the Cedars*.

*In §124-132 our Lord is arrested, tried, and sentenced to be crucified.*

#### §124. JESUS IS BETRAYED, ARRESTED AND FORSAKEN.

Garden of Gethsemane. Friday, long before dawn.

Matt. 26:47-56. Mark 14:43-52. Luke 22:47-53. John 18:2-12.

2 Now Judas al-  
so, which be-  
trayed him,  
knew the place:  
for Jesus oft-  
times resorted  
thither with  
his disciples.  
3 Judas then,  
having receiv-  
ed the <sup>band of</sup>  
*soldiers*, and  
officers from  
the chief  
priests and the  
Pharisees, com-

47 And while he 43 And straight- 47 While he yet  
yet spake, lo, way, while he spake, behold,  
Judas, one of yet spake, com- a multitude,  
the twelve, eth Judas, and he that was  
came, and with of the twelve, called Judas,  
him a great and with him one of the  
multitude with a multitude twelve, went

Matt. 26:47-56.  
swords and  
staves, from  
the chief  
priests and elders  
of the  
people.

Mark 14:43-52.  
with swords  
and staves,  
from the chief  
priests and the  
scribes and the  
elders.

Luke 22:47-53.  
before them;

John 18:2-12.  
eth thither  
with lanterns  
and torches  
and weapons.  
4 Jesus there-  
fore, knowing  
all the things  
that were com-  
ing upon him,  
went forth, and  
saith unto  
them, Whom  
5 seek ye? They  
answered him,  
Jesus of Naza-  
reth. Jesus  
saith unto  
them, I am *he*.  
And Judas al-  
so, which be-  
trayed him, was  
standing with  
6 them. When  
therefore he  
said unto them,  
I am *he*, they  
went backward,  
and fell to the  
7 ground. Again  
therefore he  
asked them,  
Whom seek ye?  
And they said,  
Jesus of Naza-  
8 reth. Jesus an-  
swered, I told  
you that I am  
*he*: if therefore  
ye seek me, let  
these go their  
9 way: that the  
word might be  
fulfilled which  
he spake, Of  
those whom  
thou hast given  
me I lost not  
one.

48            Now he 44            Now he  
that betrayed    that betrayed  
him gave them    him had given  
a sign, saying,    them a token,



Matt. 26:47-56.

Whomsoever I shall kiss, that is he; take him.

Mark 14:43-52.

saying, Whomsoever I shall kiss, that is he: take him, and lead him away

45 safely. And when he was come, straight-

49 And straightway he came to Jesus, and said, Hail, Rabbi; and <sup>1</sup>kissed him.

way he came to him, and saith, Rabbi; and <sup>1</sup>kissed him.

Luke 22:47-53.

and he drew near unto Jesus, to kiss him. But Jesus said unto him, Judas, betrayest thou the Son of man with a kiss?

John 18:2-12.

50 And Jesus said unto him, Friend, do that for which thou art come. Then 46 they came and laid hands on Jesus, and took

And they laid hands on him, and took him.

51 him. And be- 47 hold, one of them that were with Jesus stretched out his hand, and drew his sword, and smote the <sup>2</sup>servant of the high priest, and struck off

But a cer- 50 tain one of them that stood by drew his sword, and smote the <sup>2</sup>servant of the high priest, and struck off his ear.

49 And when they 12 that were about him saw what would follow, they said, Lord, shall we smite with the sword?

And a 10 certain one of them smote the <sup>2</sup>servant of the high priest, and struck off his right ear.

So the <sup>2</sup>band and the <sup>4</sup>chief captain, and the officers of the Jews, seized Jesus and bound him.

52 his ear. Then saith Jesus unto him, Put up again thy sword into its place: for all they that take the sword shall perish with

53 the sword. Or thinkest thou that I cannot beseech my Father, and he shall even now send me more

51 But 11 Jesus answered and said, Suffer ye thus far. And he touched his ear, and healed him.

Jesus therefore said unto Peter, Put up the sword into the sheath: the cup which the Father hath given me, shall I not drink it?

Matt. 26:47-56.

Mark 14:43-52.

Luke 22:47-53.

John 18:2-12.

than twelve le-  
 gions of an-  
 54 gels? How  
 then should  
 the scriptures  
 be fulfilled,  
 that thus it  
 55 must be? In 48  
 that hour said  
 Jesus to the  
 multitudes,

And 52 And Jesus  
 Jesus answer-  
 ed and said un-  
 to them,

said unto the  
 chief priests,  
 and captains  
 of the temple,  
 and elders,  
 which were  
 come against  
 him, Are ye  
 come out, as  
 against a rob-  
 ber, with  
 swords and  
 staves? When  
 I was daily  
 with you in the  
 temple, ye  
 stretched not  
 forth your  
 hands against  
 me: but this is  
 your hour, and  
 the power of  
 darkness.

Are  
 ye come out  
 as against a  
 robber with  
 swords and  
 staves to seize  
 me? I sat daily 49  
 in the temple  
 teaching, and  
 ye took me not.  
 56 But all this is  
 come to pass,  
 that the scrip-  
 tures of  
 the prophets  
 might be ful- 50  
 filled. Then  
 all the disci-  
 ples left him  
 and fled.

Are  
 ye come out as  
 against a rob-  
 ber, with  
 swords and  
 staves to seize  
 me? I was 53  
 daily with you  
 in the temple  
 teaching, and  
 ye took me  
 not: but *this*  
 is *done* that  
 the scriptures  
 might be ful- 50  
 filled. And  
 they all left  
 him, and fled.

51 And a certain  
 young man fol-  
 lowed with  
 him, having a  
 linen cloth cast  
 about him, over *his* naked body:  
 52 and they lay hold on him; but  
 he left the linen cloth, and fled  
 naked.

1. Gr. *kissed him much*. 2. Gr. *bondservant*. 3. Or, *cohort*. 4. Or, *military tribune*.  
 Gr. *chilarch*.

*The Jewish Trial and related occurrences, §125-9.*

## §125. JESUS FIRST\* EXAMINED BY ANNAS, THE EX-HIGH-PRIEST.

Friday before dawn.

John 18:12-14, 19-23.

12 So the <sup>1</sup>band and the <sup>2</sup>chief captain, and the officers of the Jews,  
 13 seized Jesus and bound him, and led him to Annas first; for he was  
 14 father in law to Caiaphas, which was high priest that year. Now  
 Caiaphas was he which gave counsel to the Jews, that it was expedient that one man should die for the people.

19 The high priest therefore asked Jesus of his disciples, and of his  
 20 teaching. Jesus answered him, I have spoken openly to the world; I  
 ever taught in <sup>3</sup>synagogues, and in the temple, where all the Jews  
 21 come together; and in secret spake I nothing. Why askest thou me?  
 ask them that have heard *me*, what I spake unto them: behold, these  
 22 know the things which I said. And when he had said this, one of  
 the officers standing by struck Jesus <sup>4</sup>with his hand, saying, Answer-  
 23 est thou the high priest so? Jesus answered him, If I have spoken  
 evil, bear witness of the evil; but if well, why smitest thou me?

1. Or, cohort. 2. Or, military tribune, Gr. chiliarch. 3. Gr. synagogue. 4. Or, with a rod.

## §126. TRIED AND CONDEMNED BY CAIAPHAS AND THE SANHEDRIN.

Residence of the High-priest Caiaphas. Before dawn on Friday.

Matt. 26:57,59-68. Mark 14:53,55-65. Luke 22:54,63-65. John 18:24.

57 And they that	53 And they led	54 And they	24 Annas there-
had taken Je-	Jesus away to	seized him,	fore sent him
sus led him a-	the high	and led him	bound unto Cai-
way to the house	priest: and	away, and	aphas the high
of Caiaphas the	there come	brought him	priest.
the high	together with	into the high	
priest, where	him all the	priest's house.	
the scribes and	chief priests		
the elders were	and the elders		
gathered to-	and the scribes.		
gether.			

59 Now the	55 Now the
chief priests	chief priests
and the whole	and the whole
council sought	council sought
false witness	witness against
against Jesus,	Jesus to put
that they	him to death;
might put him	and found it

\*The Jewish trial comprised three stages, the preliminary examination by Annas (§125), the informal trial by the Sanhedrin, probably before dawn (§126), and the formal trial after dawn (§128). With these are narrated two related matters, the denial by Peter (§127), and the suicide of Judas (§129).

Matt. 26:57,59-68. Mark 14:53,55-65. Luke 22:54,63-65.

60 to death; and 56 not. For many  
they found it bare false wit-  
not, though ness against  
many false wit- him, and their  
nesses came. witness agreed  
not together.

But afterward 57 And there  
61 came two, and stood up cer-  
said, tain, and bare  
false witness  
against him,

This man 58 saying, We  
said, I am able heard him say,  
to destroy the I will destroy  
'temple of God, this 'temple  
and to build it that is made  
in three days. with hands,  
and in three  
days I will  
build another  
made without

59 hands. And  
noteven so did  
their witness  
agree togeth-

62 And the high 60 er. And the  
priest stood high priest  
up, and said stood up in the  
unto him, An- midst, and  
swerest thou asked Jesus,  
nothing? what saying, An-  
is it which swerest thou  
these witness nothing? what  
against thee? is it which

63 But Jesus held these witness  
his peace. against thee?

61 But he held  
his peace, and  
answered no-  
thing. Again  
the high priest  
asked him, and  
saith unto him,

And  
the high priest  
said unto him,  
I adjure thee  
by the living  
God, that thou  
tell us wheth-  
er thou be the  
Christ, the Son  
of God.

Art thou the  
Christ, the Son  
of the Blessed?

64 Jesus 62 And Jesus  
saith unto him, said, I am:  
Thou hast



Matt. 26:57,59-68. Mark 14:53,55-65. Luke 22:54,63-65.

<p>said: nevertheless I say unto you, Henceforth ye shall see the Son of man sitting at the right hand of power, and coming on the clouds of heaven. Then the high priest rent his garments, saying, He hath spoken blasphemy: what further need have we of witnesses? behold, now ye have heard the blasphemy: what think ye? They answered and said, He is <sup>2</sup>worthy of death.</p> <p>66 Then 65 did they spit in his face and buffet him: and some smote him <sup>2</sup>with the palms of their hands, saying, Prophesy unto us, thou Christ, who is he that struck thee?</p>	<p>and ye shall see the Son of man sitting at the right hand of power, and coming with the clouds of heaven. And the high priest rent his clothes, and saith,</p> <p>What further need have we of witnesses? Ye have heard the blasphemy: what 63 And the men that held <sup>1</sup>Jesus mocked him and beat him. And they blindfolded him, and asked him, saying, Prophesy: who is he that struck thee? And many other things spake they against him, reviling him.</p>
--	---

1. Or, *sanctuary*: as in chap. 23:35; 27:5.  
 strokes of rods. 5. Gr. *him*.

2. Gr. *liable to*. 3. Or, *with rods*. 4. Or,

## §127. PETER THRICE DENIES HIS LORD.

Court of the High-priest's residence, during the series of trials.

Friday before and about dawn.

Matt. 26:58,69-75. Mark 14:54, 66-72. Luke 22:54-62. John 18:15-18,  
25-27.

58 But Peter fol- 54 And Peter had 54 But Peter fol- 15 And Simon  
lowed him afar followed him lowed afar off. Peter followed  
off, afar off,

unto the even  
court of the within, into  
high priest, the court of  
and entered in, the high  
priest;

16 but Peter was  
standing at the  
door without.  
So the other  
disciple, which  
was known un-  
to the high  
priest, went out  
and spake unto  
her that kept  
the door, and  
brought in Pe-  
ter. The maid  
therefore that  
kept the door  
saith unto Pe-  
ter, Art thou  
also *one* of this  
man's disci-  
ples? He saith,

18 I am not. Now  
the 'servants  
and the officers  
were standing  
*there*, having  
made 'a fire of  
coals; for it was  
cold; and they  
were warming  
themselves; and  
Peter also was  
with them,

and sat with  
the officers, to  
see the end. was sitting  
with the offi-  
cers, and he

Matt. 26:58,69-75. Mark 14:54,66-72. Luke 22:54-62. John 18:15-18, 25-27.

warming him-  
self in the <sup>55</sup>  
light of the  
fire.

And when  
they had kin-  
dled a fire in  
the midst of  
the court, and  
had sat down  
together, Pe-  
ter sat in the  
midst of them.

standing and  
warming him-  
self.

69 Now Peter  
was sitting  
without in the  
court: and a  
maid came un-  
to him, saying,

66 And as Peter  
was beneath in  
the court,  
there cometh  
one of the  
maids of the

56 And a certain  
maid seeing  
him as he sat  
in the light of  
the fire, and  
looking sted-  
fastly upon  
him, said, This  
man also was  
with him.

25 Now Simon Pe-  
ter was stand-  
ing and warm-  
ing himself.  
They said  
therefore unto  
him, Art thou  
also one of his  
disciples?

Thou also wast  
with Jesus the  
Galilæan.

70 But he  
denied be-  
fore them all,  
saying, I know  
not what thou  
sayest.

67 And seeing Pe-  
ter warming  
himself, she  
looked upon  
him, and saith,  
Thou also wast  
with the Naz-  
arene, even Je-  
sus. But he  
denied, saying,  
I neither  
know, nor un-  
derstand what  
thou sayest:  
and he went  
out into the  
<sup>2</sup>porch; <sup>3</sup>and  
the cock crew.

57 But  
he denied, say-  
ing, Woman, I  
know him not.

He  
denied and  
said, I am not.

71 And  
when he was  
gone out into  
the porch, an-  
other maid saw  
him, and saith  
unto them that  
were there,  
This man also  
was with Jesus  
the Nazarene.

69 And the maid  
saw him, and  
began again to  
say to them  
that stood by,  
This is one of  
them.

58 And after a lit-  
tle while an-  
other saw him,  
and said, Thou  
also art one of  
them. But Pe-  
ter said, Man,  
I am not.

72 And again he  
denied with an  
oath, I know  
not the man.

70 But he  
again denied  
it.

73 And after a  
little while  
they that stood  
by came and  
said to Peter,

And after  
a little while  
again they  
that stood by  
said to Peter,

59 after the space  
of about one  
hour another  
confidently af-  
firmed, saying,

26 One of the  
<sup>s</sup>servants of the  
high priest, be-  
ing a kinsman  
of him whose  
ear Peter cut

Matt. 26:58,69-75.	Mark 14:54,66-72.	Luke 22:54-62.	John 18:15-18, 25-27.
Of a truth thou also art <i>one</i> of them; for thy speechbewray- 74 eth thee. Then began he to curse and to swear, I know not the man.	Of a truth thou art <i>one</i> of them; for thou art a Galilæan. But he began to curse, and to swear, I know not this man of whom ye speak.	Of a truth this man also was with him: for he is a Galilæan. But Peter said, Man, I know not what thou sayest.	off, saith, Did not I see thee in the garden with him? Peter therefore denied again:
And straight- way the cock crew.	72 And straight- way the second time the cock crew.	And immediately, while he yet spake, the cock crew. 61 And the Lord turned, and looked upon Peter. And Peter remem- bered the word of the Lord, how that he said unto him, Before the cock crow this day, thou shalt deny me thrice.* And he went out, and wept bitterly.	and straight- way the cock crew.
75 And Peter remembered the word which Jesus had said, Before the cock crow, thou shalt deny me thrice.* And he went out, and wept bitterly.	And Peter called to mind the word, how that Jesus said unto him, Before the cock crow twice, thou shalt deny me thrice. And when he thought thereon, he wept.	61 And the Lord turned, and looked upon Peter. And Peter remembered the word of the Lord, how that he said unto him, Before the cock crow this day, thou shalt deny me thrice. And he went out, and wept bitterly.	

1. Or, *I neither know, nor understand: thou, what sayest thou?* 2. Gr. *forecourt*. 3. Many ancient authorities omit *and the cock crew*. 4. Or, *And he began to weep*. 5. Gr. *bond-servants*. 6. Gr. *a fire of charcoal*.

## §128. AFTER DAWN, JESUS IS FORMALLY CONDEMNED BY THE SANHEDRIN, AND LED AWAY TO PILATE.

(Friday.)

Matt. 27:1, 2.	Mark 15:1.	Luke 22:66-23:1.	John 18:28.
1 Now when morning was	1 And straight- way in the	66 And as soon as it was day,	

\*Each of the four Gospels records three denials; but the details differ considerably, as must always be the case where in each narrative a few facts are selected out of many sayings and doings. We have seen (footnote on §125) that there were *three stages* of the Jewish trial, (1) before Annas, (2) before Caiaphas and the Sanhedrin for informal examination, (3) before them in a formal trial. Now John gives only the first of the three stages, Luke only the last, Matthew and Mark give the second stage fully, and the third in brief mention. If Peter's denials ran through all three (and Luke says in ver. 59 that there was an hour between his second and third denials), then no one of the four Gospels could give each of the denials precisely at the time of its occurrence; and so each Gospel merely throws them together, as in another way we here bring them together in one section. There is no difficulty about the substantial fact of the denials; and we must be content with our inability to arrange all the circumstances into a complete programme.

Matt. 27:1, 2.

come, all the  
chief priests  
and the elders  
of the people  
took counsel  
against Jesus  
to put him to  
death:

Mark 15:1.

morning the  
chief priests  
with the eld-  
ers and  
scribes, and  
the whole  
council, held  
a consultation,

Luke 22:66-23:1.

the assembly  
of the elders of  
the people was  
gathered to-  
gether, both  
chief priests  
and scribes,  
and they led  
him away into  
their council,  
67 saying, If thou  
art the Christ,  
tell us. But he  
said unto  
them, If I tell  
you, ye will not  
68 believe: and if  
I ask *you*, ye  
will not an-  
69 swer. But  
from hence-  
forth shall the  
Son of man be  
seated on the  
right hand of  
the power of  
70 God. And they  
all said, Art  
thou then the  
Son of God?  
And he said  
unto them, <sup>1</sup>Ye  
say that I am.  
71 And they said,  
What further  
need have we  
of witness? for  
we ourselves  
have heard  
from his own  
mouth.

John 18:23.

2 and they  
bound him, and  
led him away,  
and delivered  
him up to Pi-  
late the gov-  
ernor.

and bound Je-  
sus, and car-  
ried him away,  
and delivered  
him up to Pi-  
late.

1 And the  
whole com-  
pany of them  
rose up, and  
brought him  
before Pilate.

28 They lead Je-  
sus therefore  
from Caiaphas  
into the <sup>1</sup>pal-  
ace: and it was  
early;

1. Or, *Ye say it, because I am.*2. Gr, *Prætorium.*



## §129. REMORSE AND SUICIDE OF JUDAS THE BETRAYER.

In the Temple, and in a place without the walls of Jerusalem.

Friday morning.

Matt. 27:3-10.

Acts 1:18, 19.

- 3 Then Judas, which betrayed 18 him, when he saw that he was condemned, repented himself, and brought back the thirty pieces of silver to the chief 19 priests and elders, saying, I have sinned in that I betrayed 'innocent blood. But they said, What is that to us? see thou *to it*. And he cast down the pieces of silver into the sanctuary, and departed; and he went away and hanged 6 himself. And the chief priests took the pieces of silver, and said, It is not lawful to put them into the <sup>2</sup>treasury, since it is the 7 price of blood. And they took counsel, and bought with them the potter's field, to bury strangers in. Wherefore that field was called, The field of blood, 9 unto this day. Then was fulfilled that which was spoken <sup>3</sup>by Jeremiah the prophet, saying, And <sup>4</sup>they took the thirty pieces of silver, the price of him that was priced, <sup>5</sup>whom *certain* of the 10 children of Israel did price; and <sup>6</sup>they gave them for the potter's field, as the Lord appointed me.

1. Many ancient authorities read *righteous*. 2. Gr. *corbanas*, that is, *sacred treasury*. Comp. Mark 7:11. 3. Or, *through*. 4. Or, *I took*. 5. Or, *whom they priced on the part of the sons of Israel*. 6. Some ancient authorities read *I gave*.

*The Roman Trial, §130-132.*

§130. JESUS BEFORE PILATE THE FIRST\* TIME.

Jerusalem. Friday, early morning.

Matt. 27:11-14.

Mark 15:2-5.

Luke 23:2-5.

John 18:28-38.

28 and they themselves entered not into the

\*The Roman Trial also comprised three stages, (1) the first appearance before the Roman procurator Pilate (§130), (2) the appearance before Herod Antipas, the native ruler of Gallilee appointed by the Romans (§131), and (3) the final appearance before Pilate (§132).

Matt. 27:11-14.

Mark 15:2-5.

Luke 23:2-5.

John 18:28-38.

<sup>2</sup>palace, that they might not be defiled, but might eat the passover. Pilate therefore went out unto them, and saith, What accusation bring ye against this man? They answered and said unto him, If this man were not an evil-doer we should not have delivered him up unto thee.

29

2 And they began to accuse him, saying, We found this man perverting our nation, and forbidding to give tribute to Cæsar, and saying that he himself is <sup>1</sup>Christ a king.

30

31 Pilate therefore said unto them, Take him yourselves, and judge him according to your law. The Jews said unto him, It is not lawful for us to put any man to death: that the word of Jesus might be fulfilled, which he spake signifying by what manner of death he should die.

32

33 Pilate therefore entered again into the <sup>2</sup>palace, and called Jesus, and said unto him,

11 Now Jesus stood before the governor: and the governor asked him, saying, Art thou the King of the

2 And Pilate asked him, Art thou the King

3 And Pilate asked him, saying, Art thou the King of the

Art thou the King of the

Matt. 27:11-14.  
Jews? And Jesus said unto him, Thou sayest.

Mark 15:2-5.  
of the Jews? And he answering saith unto him, Thou sayest.

Luke 23:2-5.  
Jews? And he answered him and said, Thou sayest.

John 18:28-38.  
Jews? Jesus answered, Sayest thou this of thyself, or did others tell it thee concerning me? Pilate answered, Am I a Jew? Thine own nation and the chief priests delivered thee unto me: what hast thou done? Jesus answered, My kingdom is not of this world: if my kingdom were of this world, then would my servants fight, that I should not be delivered to the Jews: but now is my kingdom not from hence.  
37 Pilate therefore said unto him, Art thou a king then? Jesus answered, 'Thou sayest that I am a king. To this end have I been born, and to this end am I come into the world, that I should bear witness unto the truth. Every one that is of the truth heareth my  
38 voice. Pilate saith unto him, What is truth?

Matt. 27:11-14.

Mark 15:2-5.

Luke 23:2-5.

John 18:28-38.

- 12 And when he was accused by the chief priests and elders, he answered nothing. Then saith Pilate unto him, Hear-est thou not how many things they witness against thee? And he gave him no answer, not even to one word: inso-much that the governor marvelled greatly.
- 3 And the chief priests accused him of many things.
- 4 And Pilate again asked him, saying, Answerest thou nothing? behold how many things they accuse thee of. But Jesus no more answered anything; inso-much that Pilate marvelled.
- 4 And when he had said this, he went out again unto the Jews, and saith unto them, I find no crime in him.
- 5 But they were the more urgent, saying, He stirreth up the people, teaching throughout all Judea, and beginning from Galilee even unto this place.

1. Or, *anointed king*.2. Gr. *Prætorium*.3. Or, *officers*: as in ver. 3, 12, 18, 22.4. Or, *Thou sayest it, because I am a king*.

### §131. JESUS BEFORE HEROD ANTIPAS THE TETRARCH.

Jerusalem. Friday, early morning.

Luke 23:6-12.

- 6 But when Pilate heard it, he asked whether the man were a Galilæan. And when he knew that he was of Herod's jurisdiction, he sent him unto Herod, who himself also was at Jerusalem in these days.

Luke 23:6-12.

8 Now when Herod saw Jesus, he was exceeding glad: for he was of a long time desirous to see him, because he had heard concerning him;\* and he hoped to see some miracle done by him. And he questioned him in many words; but he answered him nothing. And the chief priests and the scribes stood, vehemently accusing him. And Herod with his soldiers set him at nought, and mocked him, and arraying him in gorgeous apparel sent him back to Pilate. And Herod and Pilate became friends with each other that very day: for before they were at enmity between themselves.

1. Gr. *sign*.

‡132. BROUGHT BACK TO PILATE, WHO SLOWLY AND RELUCTANTLY CONSENTS THAT HE SHALL BE CRUCIFIED.

Friday toward sunrise (John 19:14).

Matt. 27:15-30.

Mark 15:6-19.

Luke 23:13-25.

John 18:39-19:16.

15 Now at the feast the governor was wont to release unto the multitude one prisoner, whom they would. And they had then a notable prisoner, called Barabbas.

6 Now at the feast he used to release unto them one prisoner, whom they asked of him. And there was one called Barabbas, lying bound with them that had made insurrection, men who in the insurrection had committed murder. And the multitude went up and began to ask him to do as he was wont to do unto them.

13 And Pilate called together the chief priests and the rulers and the people, and

\*Comp. ‡56.



Matt. 27:15-30.

Mark 15:6-19.

Luke 23:13-25.

John 18:39-19:16.

said unto  
them, Ye  
brought unto  
me this man,  
as one that  
perverteth the  
people: and be-  
hold, I, having  
examined him  
before you,  
found no fault  
in this man  
touching those  
things whereof  
ye accuse him:

15 no, nor yet  
Herod: for he  
sent him back  
unto us; and  
behold, noth-  
ing worthy of  
death hath  
been done by  
him.

17 When  
therefore they  
were gathered  
together, Pi-  
late said unto  
them, Whom  
will ye that I  
release unto  
you? Barabbas,  
or Jesus which  
is called

9 And 16  
Pilate answer-  
ed them, say-  
ing, Will ye  
that I release  
unto you the  
King of the  
Jews?

I will  
therefore chas-  
tise him, and  
release him'.

39 But ye have a  
custom, that I  
should release  
unto you one  
at the passover:  
will ye there-  
fore that I re-  
lease unto you  
the King of the  
Jews?

18 Christ? For he 10

knew that for  
envy they had  
delivered him  
up. And while  
he was sitting  
on the judge-  
ment seat, his  
wife sent unto  
him, saying,  
Have thou no-  
thing to do  
with that  
righteous man:

For he  
perceived that  
for envy the  
chief priests  
had delivered  
him up.

Matt. 27:15-30.

for I have suffered many things this day in a dream because of him.

20 Now the chief 11

priests and the elders persuaded the multitudes that they should ask for Barabbas, and destroy Jesus.

21 But the governor answered and said unto them, Whether of the twain will ye that I release unto you? And they said, Barabbas.

Mark 15:6-19.

But the chief priests stirred up the multitude, that he should rather release Barabbas unto them.

Luke 23:13-25.

John 18:39-19:16.

18 But they cried 40

out all together, saying, Away with this man, and release unto us

19 Barabbas: one who for a certain insurrection made in the city, and for murder, was cast into prison.

They cried out therefore again, saying, Not this man, but Barabbas. Now Barabbas was a robber.

19. Then Pilate therefore took Jesus, and scourged him.

2 And the soldiers plaited a crown of thorns, and put it on his head, and arrayed him in a purple

3 garment; and they came unto him, and said, Hail, King of the Jews! and they struck

Matt. 27:15-30.

Mark 15:6-19.

Luke 23:13-25.

John 18:39-19:16.

- him<sup>s</sup> with their  
4 hands. And  
Pilate went out  
again, and saith  
unto them, Be-  
hold, I bring  
him out to you,  
that ye may  
know that I find  
no crime in  
5 him. Jesus  
therefore came  
out, wearing  
the crown of  
thorns and the  
purple gar-  
ment. And Pi-  
late saith unto  
them, Behold,  
6 the man! When  
therefore the  
chief priests  
and the officers  
saw him, they  
cried out, say-  
ing, Crucify  
him, crucify  
him. Pilate  
saith unto them,  
Take him your-  
selves, and cru-  
cify him, for I  
find no crime  
7 in him. The  
Jews answered  
him, We have  
a law, and by  
that law he  
ought to die,  
because he  
made himself  
the Son of  
8 God. When  
Pilate there-  
fore heard this  
9 saying, he was the more afraid; and he entered into the <sup>s</sup>palace again,  
10 and saith unto Jesus, Whence art thou? But Jesus gave him no  
answer. Pilate therefore saith unto him, Speakest thou not unto me?  
knowest thou not that I have <sup>s</sup>power to release thee, and have <sup>s</sup>power to  
11 crucify thee? Jesus answered him, Thou wouldest have no <sup>s</sup>power  
against me, except it were given thee from above: therefore he that  
delivered me unto thee hath greater sin.
- 22 Pilate saith 12 And Pilate 20 And Pilate  
unto them, again answered spake unto  
What then ed and said un- them again,  
shall I do unto to them, What desiring to re-  
Jesus which is then shall I do lease Jesus;  
called Christ? unto him 21 but they shout-  
They all say, whom ye call ed, saying,  
the King of  
13 the Jews? And  
Let him be they cried out  
crucified. again, Crucify 22 him. And he  
14 him. And Pi- said unto them  
23 And late said unto the third time,  
he said, Why, Why, what evil hath  
what evil hath he done? he done?  
But  
they cried out exceedingly, saying, Let  
him be cruci-  
fied.  
But  
they cried out exceedingly, Crucify  
him.

Matt. 27:15-30. Mark 15:6-19. Luke 23:13-25. John 18:39-19:16.

- 12 Upon this Pilate sought to release him: but the Jews cried out, saying, If thou release this man, thou art not Cæsar's friend: every  
 13 one that maketh himself a king <sup>10</sup>speaketh against Cæsar. When Pilate therefore heard these words, he brought Jesus out, and sat down on the judgement seat at a place called The Pavement, but in  
 14 Hebrew, Gabbatha. Now it was the Preparation of the passover: it was about the sixth hour.\* And he saith unto the Jews, Behold, your King!

23 But they were 15 They therefore  
 instant with cried out, Away  
 loud voices, with *him*, away  
 asking that with *him*, cru-  
 he might be cify him. Pi-  
 crucified. late saith unto  
 them, Shall I  
 crucify your  
 King? The  
 chief priests  
 answered, We  
 have no king  
 but Cæsar.

- 24 So when Pi-  
 late saw that  
 he prevailed  
 nothing, but  
 rather that a  
 tumult was a-  
 rising, he took  
 water, and  
 washed his  
 hands before  
 the multitude,  
 saying, I am  
 innocent <sup>20</sup>of  
 the blood of  
 this righteous  
 man: see ye to  
 25 it. And all the  
 people answer-  
 ed and said,  
 His blood be on  
 us, and on our  
 children.

And  
 their voices  
 prevailed.

- 15 And Pilate, 24 And  
 wishing to con- Pilate gave  
 tent the multi- sentence that  
 tude, what they ask-

\*It appears that John, who wrote in Asia Minor, long after the destruction of Jerusalem, makes the day begin at midnight, as the Greeks and Romans did. We seem compelled so to understand him in 20:19 (comp. Luke 24:29-39); and in no passage of his Gospel is that view unsuitable. Here then we understand that Pilate passed the sentence about sunrise, which at the Passover, near the vernal equinox, would be 6 o'clock. The intervening three hours might be occupied in preparations, and the Crucifixion occurred at 9 o'clock, viz. the third hour as counted by the Jews (§133, Mark 15:25).

- |   |   |   |  |
|---|---|---|--|
| Matt. 27:15-30.   | Mark 15:6-19.   | Luke 23:13-25.  | John 18:39-19:16.  |
| 26 Then released he unto them Barabbas:   | released unto them Barabbas,  | ed for should be done. And he released him that for insurrection and murder had been cast into prison, whom | 16 Then therefore they asked for; he delivered him unto them |
| but Jesus he scourged and delivered to be crucified.  | and delivered Jesus, when he had scourged him, to be crucified.   | but Jesus he delivered up to their will.  | to be crucified.   |
| 27 Then the soldiers of the governor took Jesus into the palace, and gathered unto him the whole  | 16 And the soldiers led him away within the court, which is the 'Prætorium; and they call together the whole                  |   |  |
| 28 'band. And they 'stripped him, and put on him a scarlet  | 17 'band. And they clothe him with purple, and plaiting a crown of thorns, they put it on him;                                |   |  |
| 29 robe. And they plaited a crown of thorns and put it upon his head, and a reed in his right hand; and they kneeled down before him, and mock- | 18 and they began to salute him, Hail, King of the Jews! And they spat upon him, and took the reed and smote him on the head. |   |  |
| 30 the Jews! And they spat upon him, and took the reed and smote him on the head.   | 19 the Jews! And they smote his head with a reed, and did spit upon him, and bowing their knees worshipped him.               |   |  |

1. Or, *a feast*. 2. Some ancient authorities read of *this blood*: see ye, etc. 3. Gr. *Prætorium*. See Mark 15:16. 4. Or, *cohort*. 5. Some ancient authorities read *clothed him*. 6. Or, *palace*. 7. Many ancient authorities insert ver. 17 *Now he must needs release unto them at the feast one prisoner*. Others add the same words after ver. 19. 8. Or, *with rods*. 9. Or, *authority*. 10. Or, *opposeth Cæsar*.



## § 133. THE CRUCIFIXION.

Outside of Jerusalem. Friday.

(a) He is led out to Golgotha.\*

- |   |   |   |  |
|---|---|---|--|
| Matt. 27:31-34.   | Mark 15:20-23.  | Luke 23:26-33.  | John 19:16, 17.  |
| 31 And when they had mocked him, they took off from him the robe, and put on him his garments, and led him away to crucify him.               | 20 And when they had mocked him, they took off from him the purple, and put on him his garments. And they lead him out to crucify him.                                    |   | 16 They took Jesus therefore;<br>17 and he went out bearing the cross for himself, |
| 32 And as they came out, they found a man of Cyrene, Simon by name: him they compelled to go <i>with them</i> , that he might bear his cross. | 21 And they compelled one passing by, Simon of Cyrene, coming from the country, the father of Alexander and Rufus, to go <i>with them</i> , that he might bear his cross. | 26 And when they led him away, they laid hold upon one Simon of Cyrene, coming from the country, and laid on him the cross, to bear it after Jesus. |  |
|   |   | 27 And there followed him a great multitude of the people, and of women who bewailed and lamented him.  |  |
|   |   | 28 But Jesus turning unto them said, Daughters of Jerusalem, weep not for me, but weep for yourselves, and for your children.                       |  |
|   |   | 29 For behold, the days are com-  |  |

\*Golgotha is the Aramaic word for 'skull,' and Calvary is the Latin word. The place cannot have been where the so-called "Church of the Holy Sepulchre" stands, far within the walls. There is of late a rapidly growing agreement that it was the northern end of the Temple hill, whose rounded summit (without the city wall), and southern face with holes in the rock, looks at a little distance much like a skull. This place fulfils all the conditions.

Matt. 27:31-34.

Mark 15:20-23.

Luke 23:26-33.

John 19:16,17.

ing, in which  
they shall say,  
Blessed are the  
barren, and the  
wombs that  
never bare, and  
the breasts  
that never  
gave suck.

30 Then shall  
they begin to  
say to the  
mountains, Fall  
on us; and to  
the hills, Cover  
31 us. For if they  
do these things  
in the green  
tree, what shall  
be done in the  
dry?

32 And there  
were also two  
others, male-  
factors, led  
with him to be  
put to death.

33 And 22

when they  
were come un-  
to a place call-  
ed Golgotha,  
that is to say,  
The place of a

34 skull, they  
gave him wine  
to drink min-  
gled with gall:  
and when he  
had tasted it,  
he would not  
drink.

And 22 they bring him  
unto the  
place Golgo-  
tha, which is,  
being interpre-  
ted, The place  
of a skull. And  
they offered  
him wine min-  
gled with  
myrrh: but he  
received it not.

And 33

And when  
they came un-  
to the place  
which is called  
\*The skull,

unto the  
place called  
The place of a  
skull, which is  
called in He-  
brew Golgotha:

1. Gr. *impressed*.  
the same meaning.

2. Gr. *impress*.

3. According to the Latin, *Calvary*, which has

(b) He is crucified. Many revile.

His three sayings\* during the first three hours.

Matt. 27:35-44.

Mark 15:24-32.

Luke 23:33-43.

John 19:18-27.

- 25 And it was the third hour, and they crucified him.
- 38 Then are there crucified with him two robbers, one on the right hand, and one on the left.
- 35 And when they had crucified him, they parted his garments among them, casting lots: and they sat and watched him there.
- 24 And they crucify him, and part his garments among them, casting lots upon them, what each should take.
- 33 there they crucified him, and the malefactors, one on the righthand and the other on the left. <sup>4</sup>And Jesus said, Father, forgive them; for they know not what they do.
- 18 where they crucified him, and with him two others, on either side one, and Jesus in the midst.
- 23 The soldiers therefore, when they had crucified Jesus, took his garments, and made four parts, to every soldier a part; and also the <sup>5</sup>coat: now the <sup>5</sup>coat was without seam, woven from the top throughout.
- 24 They said therefore one to another, Let us not rend it, but cast lots for it, whose it shall be: that the scripture might be fulfilled, which saith, They parted my garments among them, And upon my vesture did they cast lots.
- These things therefore the

\*The apparent order of the three sayings is (1) Luke 23:34; (2) John 19:26,27; (3) Luke 23:43.

Matt. 27:35-44.

Mark 15:24-32.

Luke 23:33-43.

John 19:18-27.

soldiers did.

19 And Pilate wrote a title also, and put it on the cross.

And there was written, JESUS OF NAZARETH, THE KING OF

20 THE JEWS. This title therefore read many of the Jews: 'for the place where Jesus was crucified was nigh to the city; and it was written in Hebrew, and in Latin, and in

21 Greek. The chief priests of the Jews therefore said to Pilate, Write not, The King of the Jews; but, that he said, I am King of

22 the Jews. Pilate answered, What I have written I have

25 written. But

there were standing by the cross of Jesus his mother, and his mother's sister, Mary the *wife* of Clopas, and Mary Magdalene. When Jesus therefore saw his mother, and the disciple standing by, whom he loved, 27 he saith unto his mother, Woman, behold, thy son! Then saith he to the disciple, Behold, thy mother! And from that hour the disciple took her unto his own *home*.

39 And they that 29 And they that 35 And the people stood beholding.

passed by railled on him, wagging their heads, and saying, Thou that destroyest the temple, and buildest it in three days, save thyself: if 30 save thyself,

passed by railled on him, wagging their heads, and saying, Ha! thou that destroyest the temple, and buildest it in three days,

And the people stood beholding.

Matt. 27:35-44.

thou art the  
 Son of God,  
 come down 31  
 from the cross.  
 41 In like manner  
 also the chief  
 priests mock-  
 ing *him*, with  
 the scribes and  
 42 elders, said, He  
 saved others;  
<sup>2</sup>himself he  
 cannot save.  
 He is the King 32  
 of Israel; let  
 him now come  
 down from the  
 cross, and we  
 will believe on  
 43 him. He trust-  
 eth on God; let  
 him deliver  
 him now, if he  
 desireth him:  
 for he said, I  
 am the Son of  
 44 God. And the  
 robbers also  
 that were cru-  
 cified with him  
 cast upon him  
 the same re-  
 proach.

Mark 15:24-32.

and come down  
 from the cross.  
 31 In like manner  
 also the chief  
 priests mock-  
 ing *him* a-  
 mong them-  
 selves with the  
 scribes said,  
 He saved oth-  
 ers; <sup>2</sup>himself 36  
 he cannot save.  
 32 Let the Christ,  
 the King of Is-  
 rael, now come 37  
 down from the  
 cross, that we  
 may see and  
 believe.

And  
 they that were  
 crucified with  
 him reproach-  
 ed him.

Luke 23:33-43.

And  
 the rulers also  
 scoffed at him,  
 saying, He  
 saved others:  
 let him save  
 himself, if this  
 is the Christ  
 of God, his  
 chosen. And  
 the soldiers  
 also mocked  
 him, coming to  
 him, offering  
 him vinegar,  
 and saying, If  
 thou art the  
 King of the  
 Jews, save thy-  
 self.

39 And one of  
 the malefac-  
 tors which  
 were hanged  
 railed on him,  
 saying, Art  
 not thou the  
 Christ? save  
 thyself and us.  
 40 But the other  
 answered, and  
 rebuking him  
 said, Dost thou  
 not even fear  
 God, seeing  
 thou art in the  
 same condem-  
 41 nation? And we  
 indeed justly;



Luke 23:33-43.

for we receive  
the due reward  
of our deeds:  
but this man  
hath done no-  
thing amiss.

42 And he said,  
Jesus, remem-  
ber me when  
thou comest<sup>e</sup> in  
thy kingdom.

43 And he said  
unto him, Ver-  
ily I say unto  
thee, To-day  
shalt thou be  
with me in  
Paradise.

1. Or, sanctuary. 2. Or, can he not save himself? 3. Many ancient authorities insert ver. 28 *And the scripture was fulfilled, which saith, And he was reckoned with transgressors.* See Luke 22:37. 4. Some ancient authorities omit *And Jesus said, Father, forgive them; for they know not what they do.* 5. Or, tunic. 6. Some ancient authorities read *into thy kingdom.* 7. Or, for the place of the city where Jesus was crucified was nigh at hand.

(c) Darkness for three hours. After four more sayings,\* he expires.

Strange events attending his death.

Matt. 27:45-56.

Mark 15:33-41.

Luke 23:44-49.

John 19:28-30.

<p>45 Now from the sixth hour there was darkness over all the 'land until the ninth 46 hour. And a- bout the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, say- ing Eli, Eli, lama sabach- thani? that is, My God, my God, <sup>2</sup>why hast thou forsaken me?</p>	<p>33 And when the sixth hour was come, there was darkness over the whole 'land until the ninth hour. 34 And at the ninth hour Je- sus cried with a loud voice, Eloi, Eloi, la- ma sabachtha- ni? which is, being inter- preted, My God, my God, <sup>2</sup>why hast thou forsaken me?</p>	<p>44 And it was now about the sixth hour, and a darkness came over the whole 'land un- til the ninth 45 hour, <sup>e</sup>the sun's light failing.</p>
---	---	---

\*These came all close together, near the end. The probable order is (1) Matt. 27:46 (Mark 15:34); (2) John 19:28; (3) John 19:30; (4) Luke 23:46.

Matt. 27:45-56.

Mark 15:33-41.

Luke 23:44-49.

John 19:28-30.

47 And some of them that stood there, when they heard it, said, This man calleth Elijah.

35 And some of them that stood by, when they heard it, said, Behold, he calleth Elijah.

48 And straightway one of them ran, and took a sponge, and filled it with vinegar, and put it on a reed, and gave him to drink.

49 And the rest said, Let be; let us see whether Elijah cometh to save him.\*

And one ran, and filling a sponge full of vinegar, put it on a reed, and gave him to drink, saying, Let be; let us see whether Elijah cometh to take him down.

50 And Je-

sus cried again with a loud voice,

And 46 \*And when Je-

Jesus uttered a loud voice,

sus had cried with a loud voice, he said,

Father, into thy hands I commend my spirit; and having said this,

and yielded up his spirit.

51 And behold, the veil of the temple was rent in twain

and gave up the ghost.

38 And the veil of the temple was rent in twain from the

he gave up the ghost.

45 And the veil of the temple was rent in the midst.

28 After this Jesus, knowing that all things are now finished, that the scripture might be accomplished, saith, I thirst. There was set there a vessel full of vinegar: so they put a sponge full of the vinegar upon hyssop, and brought it to his mouth.

30 When Jesus therefore had received the vinegar,

he said, It is finished:

and he bowed his head,

and gave up his spirit.

- Matt. 27:45-56. from the top to the bottom; and the earth did quake; and the rocks were  
 52 rent; and the tombs were opened; and many bodies of the saints that had fallen asleep were  
 53 raised; and coming forth out of the tombs after his resurrection they entered into the holy city and appeared unto  
 54 many. Now the 39 centurion, and they that were with him watching Jesus, when they saw the earthquake, and the things that were done, feared exceedingly, saying, Truly this was  
 55 the Son of God. And many women 40 were there beholding from afar, which had followed Jesus from Galilee, ministering unto  
 56 him: among whom was Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James and Joses, and the mother of the
- Mark 15:33-41. top to the bottom.
- And when 47 the centurion, which stood by over against him, saw that he so gave up the ghost, he said,  
 Truly this man was 48 the Son of God. And there were also women beholding from afar:  
 among whom were both 49 Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James the less and of Joses, and Salome;
- Luke 23:44-49. And when the centurion saw what was done, he glorified God, saying, Certainly this was a righteous man. And all the multitudes that came together to this sight, when they beheld the things that were done, returned smiting their breasts. And all his acquaintance, and the women that followed with him from Galilee, stood afar

Matt. 27:45-56. Mark 15:33-41. Luke 23:44-49.  
 sons of Zebe- 41 who, when he off, seeing  
 dee. was in Galilee, these things.  
 followed him,  
 and ministered  
 unto him: and  
 many other  
 women which  
 came up with  
 him unto Jeru-  
 salem.

1. Or, earth. 2. Or, *why didst thou forsake me?* 3. Many ancient authorities add *And another took a spear and pierced his side, and there came out water and blood.* See John 19:34. 4. Or, *sanctuary.* 5. Or, *a son of God.* 6. Many ancient authorities read, *so cried out and gave up the ghost.* 7. Gr. *little.* 8. Gr. *the sun failing.* 9. Or, *And Jesus, crying with a loud voice, said.*

(d) Found to be dead, he is buried. A guard is set over the tomb.

Matt. 27:57-66. Mark 15:42-47. Luke 23:50-56. John 19:31-42.

31 The Jews,  
 therefore, be-  
 cause it was

the Preparation, that the bodies should not remain on the cross upon the sabbath (for the day of that sabbath was a high day), asked of Pilate that their legs might be broken, and *that* they might be taken  
 32 away. The soldiers therefore came, and brake the legs of the first,  
 33 and of the other which was crucified with him: but when they came to Jesus, and saw that he was dead already, they brake not his legs:  
 34 howbeit one of the soldiers with a spear pierced his side, and straight-  
 35 way there came out blood and water. And he that hath seen hath borne witness, and his witness is true: and he knoweth that he saith  
 36 true, that ye also may believe. For these things came to pass, that the scripture might be fulfilled, A bone of him shall not be broken.  
 37 And again another scripture saith, They shall look on him whom they pierced.

57 And when 42 And when  
 even was come, even was now  
 come, because  
 it was the Pre-  
 paration, that  
 is, the day be-  
 fore the sab- 50  
 43 bath, there a man named  
 there came a came Joseph of Joseph, who  
 rich man came Arimathæa, a was a council-  
 from Arima- counsellor of lor, a good  
 thæa, named honourable es- man and a  
 Joseph, tate, 51 righteous (he  
 had not con-  
 sented to their

And behold, 38 And after  
 these things  
 Joseph of Ari-  
 mathæa,

Matt. 27:57-66.

who al-  
so himself was  
Jesus' disciple:

58 this man went  
to Pilate, and  
asked for the  
body of Jesus.

Then Pilate  
commanded it  
to be given up.

Mark 15:42-47.

who also  
himself was  
looking for  
the kingdom  
of God;

and 52 he boldly went  
in unto Pilate,  
and asked for  
the body of Je-  
44 sus. And Pi-  
late marvelled  
if he were al-  
ready dead:  
and calling un-  
to him the cen-  
turion, he ask-  
ed him wheth-  
er he<sup>s</sup> had been  
any while dead.  
45 And when he  
learned it of  
the centurion,  
he granted the  
corpse to Jo-  
seph.

59 And Joseph 46  
took the body,  
and wrapped  
it in a clean  
linen cloth,

And he 53  
bought a linen  
cloth, and tak-  
ing him down,  
wound him in  
the linen cloth,

Luke 23:50-56.

counsel and  
deed), *a man* of  
Arimathæa, a  
city of the  
Jews, who was  
looking for the  
kingdom of  
God:

52 this man  
went to Pilate,  
and asked for  
the body of Je-  
sus.

And he took 40  
it down, and  
wrapped it in  
a linen cloth,

John 19:31-42.

being a  
disciple of Je-  
sus,

but secret-  
ly for fear of  
the Jews, asked  
of Pilate that  
he might take  
away the body  
of Jesus:

and Pilate gave  
*him* leave. He  
came therefore,  
and took away  
39 his body. And  
there came also  
Nicodemus, he  
who at the first  
came to him by  
night, bringing  
a<sup>s</sup> mixture of  
myrrh and al-  
oes, about a  
hundred pound  
weight. So they  
took the body  
of Jesus, and  
bound it in lin-  
en cloths with  
the spices, as



Matt. 27:57-66.

Mark 15:42-47.

Luke 23:50-56.

John 19:31-42.

60 and laid it in his own new tomb, which he had hewn out in the rock: and he rolled a great stone to the door of the tomb and departed.

and laid him in a tomb which had been hewn out of a rock; and he rolled a stone against the door of the tomb.

and laid him in a tomb that was hewn in stone, where never man had yet lain. And it was the day of the Preparation, and the sabbath 'drew on.

the custom of the Jews is to bury. Now in the place where he was crucified there was a garden; and in the garden a new tomb wherein was never man yet laid. There then because of the Jews' Preparation (for the tomb was nigh at hand) they laid Jesus.

61 And Mary Magdalene was there, and the other Mary, sitting over against the sepulchre.

And Mary Magdalene and Mary the mother of Joseph beheld where he was laid.

And the women, which had come with him out of Galilee, followed after, and beheld the tomb, and how his body was laid.

56

And they returned, and prepared spices and ointments.

62 Now on the morrow, which is the day after the Preparation, the chief priests and the Pharisees were gathered together un-

And on the sabbath they rested according to the commandment.

63 to Pilate, saying, Sir, we remember that that deceiver said, while he was yet alive, After three days I rise again. Command therefore that the sepulchre be made sure until the third day, lest haply his disciples come and steal him away, and say unto the people, He is risen from the dead: and the last error will be worse than the first. Pilate said unto them, 'Ye have a guard: go your way, 'make it as sure as ye can. So they went, and made the sepulchre sure, sealing the stone, the guard being with them.

1. Or. *take a guard.* 2. Gr. *make it sure, as ye know.* 3. Many ancient authorities read, *were already dead.* 4. Gr. *began to dawn.* 5. Or, *crushed.* 6. Some ancient authorities read *roll.*

## PART VIII.

## OUR LORD'S RESURRECTION, APPEARANCES AND ASCENSION.

Judea and Galilee. Forty days.\* Probably Spring of A.D. 30 (or 29).

§134. ANGELS ANNOUNCE TO CERTAIN WOMEN THAT JESUS IS RISEN,  
AND PETER AND JOHN ENTER THE EMPTY TOMB.

Golgotha. First day of the week, very early.

Matt. 28:1-8.

Mark 16:1-8.

Luke 24:1-8.

John 20:1-10.

1 Now late on the sabbath day, as it began to dawn toward the first day of the week, came Mary Magdalene and the other Mary to see the sepulchre.

1 And when the sabbath was past, Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James, and Salome, bought spices, that they might come and anoint him.

2 And behold, there was a great earthquake; for an angel of the Lord descended from heaven, and came and rolled away the stone, and sat upon it.

3 His appearance was as lightning, and his raiment white as snow:

4 and for fear of

2 And very early on the first day of the week they come to the tomb when the sun was risen.

3 And they were saying

1 But on the first day of the week, at early dawn,† they came unto the tomb, bringing the spices which they had prepared.

1 Now on the first day of the week cometh Mary Magdalene early while it was yet dark, unto the tomb,

\*Of this period we see that he remained at or near Jerusalem for a week (§139). Then he probably left at once for Galilee (Matt. 28:7; Mark 16:7). In the month that followed we cannot fix the exact time of the events that occurred in Galilee (§140, 141), but just at the end of the forty days we find him again in Jerusalem (§142-3).

†So he had already risen at early dawn on the first day of the week. He was buried (§133d) shortly before sunset on Friday, and at sunset the sabbath began. So he lay in the tomb a small part of Friday, all of Saturday, and 10 or 11 hours of Sunday. This corresponds exactly with the seven times repeated statement that he would or did rise "on the third day," which *could not possibly* mean after 72 hours. The phrase 2 or 3 times given, "after three days," naturally denoted for Jews, as for Greeks and Romans, a whole central day and any part of a first and third, thus agreeing with "on the third day." Even the "three days and three nights" of Matt. 12:40 need not, according to known Jewish usage, mean more than we have described. To these expressions *can* be reconciled with "on the third day," and with the facts as recorded, while "on the third day" *cannot* mean after 72 hours.

Matt. 28:1-8.

him the watch-  
ers did quake,  
and became as  
dead men.

Mark 16:1-8.

among them-  
selves, Who  
shall roll us  
away the stone  
from the door  
of the tomb?  
4 and looking  
up they see  
that the stone  
is rolled back:  
for it was ex-  
ceeding great.

5 And entering  
into the tomb,  
they saw a  
young man sit-  
ting on the  
right side, ar-  
rayed in a  
white robe;  
and they were

6 amazed. And  
he saith unto  
them, Be not  
amazed: ye  
seek Jesus,  
the Nazarene,  
which hath  
been crucified:  
he is risen; he  
is not here: be-  
hold, the place  
where they

7 laid him! But  
go, tell his  
disciples and  
Peter, He go-  
eth before you  
into Galilee:  
there shall ye  
see him, as he  
said unto you.

8 And they went  
out, and fled  
from the tomb;  
for trembling  
and astonish-  
ment had come  
upon them; and  
they said noth-  
ing to any one;  
for they were  
afraid.

Luke 24:1-8.

2 And they found  
the stone roll-  
ed away from  
3 the tomb. And  
they entered  
in, and found  
not the body  
4 of the Lord  
Jesus.

4 And it  
came to pass,  
while they  
were perplex-  
ed thereabout,  
behold, two  
men stood by  
them in daz-  
zling apparel:

5 and as they  
were affright-  
ed, and bowed  
down their  
faces to the  
earth, they  
said unto  
them, Why  
seek ye 3 the  
living among

6 the dead? 4 He  
is not here,  
but is risen:  
remember how  
he spake unto  
you when he  
was yet in Gal-

7 ilee, saying  
that the Son  
of man must be  
delivered up  
into the hands  
of sinful men,  
and be cruci-  
fied, and the  
third day rise  
8 again. And  
they remem-  
bered his  
words.

John 20:1-10.

and seeth  
the stone taken  
away from the  
tomb.

5 And  
the angel an-  
swered and  
said unto the  
women, Fear  
not ye: for I  
know that ye  
seek Jesus,  
which hath  
been crucified.  
6 He is not here;  
for he is risen,  
even as he  
said. Come,  
see the place  
7 where the  
Lord lay. And  
go quickly, and  
tell his disci-  
ples, He is ris-  
en from the  
dead; and lo,  
he goeth be-  
fore you into  
Galilee; there  
shall ye see  
him: lo, I have  
8 told you. And  
they departed  
quickly from  
the tomb with  
fear and great  
joy, and ran to  
bring his dis-  
ciples word.

John 20:1-10.

2 She runneth  
therefore, and  
cometh to Si-  
mon Peter, and to the other disciple, whom Jesus loved, and saith  
unto them, They have taken away the Lord out of the tomb, and we  
3 know not where they have laid him. Peter therefore went forth, and  
4 the other disciple, and they went toward the tomb. And they ran  
both together; and the other disciple outran Peter, and came first to  
5 the tomb; and stooping and looking in, he seeth the linen cloths lying;  
6 yet entered he not in. Simon Peter therefore also cometh, following  
him, and entered into the tomb; and he beholdeth the linen cloths  
7 lying, and the napkin, that was upon his head, not lying with the  
8 linen cloths, but rolled up in a place by itself. Then entered in there-  
fore the other disciple also, which came first to the tomb, and he saw,  
9 and believed. For as yet they knew not the scripture, that he must  
10 rise again from the dead. So the disciples went away again unto  
their own home.

1. Many ancient authorities read *where he lay*. 2. Some ancient authorities omit  
of the Lord Jesus. 3. Gr. *him that liveth*. 4. Some ancient authorities omit *He is not  
here, but is risen*.

*Five appearances are given as occurring on the day of his resurrection, and  
five subsequently during the forty days.*

§ 135. THE RISEN LORD APPEARS TO THE WOMEN\*, AND SEPA-  
RATELY TO MARY MAGDALENE. THESE REPORT  
TO THE APOSTLES.

Jerusalem. First day of the week (Sunday).

Matt. 28:9,10.

Mark 16:9-11.

Luke 24:9-11.

John 20:11-18.

[8 And they re- 11 But Mary was  
membered his standing with-  
9 words] and re- out at the tomb  
turned <sup>3</sup>from weeping: so, as  
the tomb, and she wept, she  
told all these stooped and  
things to the looked into the  
eleven, and to 12 tomb; and she  
all the rest. beholdeth two  
10 Now they were angels in white  
Mary Magda- sitting, one at  
lene, and Joan- the head, and  
na, and Mary one at the feet,  
the *mother* of where the body  
James: and of Jesus had

\*The five appearances on this day were (1) to Mary Magdalene (John and Mark); (2) to  
other women (Matthew); (3) to Simon Peter, (§137, Luke 24:34); (4) to the two going to Emmaus  
(§137); (5) to ten apostles, and others (§138).

Matt. 28:9,10.

Mark 16:9-11.

Luke 24:9-11.

John 20:11-18.

9 <sup>1</sup>Now when he was risen early on the first day of the week, he appeared first to Mary Magdalene, from whom he had cast out seven <sup>2</sup>devils.

the other women with them told these things unto the apostles.  
11 And these words appeared in their sight as idle talk; and they disbelieved them.

13 lain. And they say unto her, Woman, why weepest thou? She saith unto them, Because they have taken away my Lord, and I know not where they have laid him.  
14 When she had thus said, she turned herself back, and beholdeth Jesus standing, and knew not that it was Jesus.  
15 Jesus saith unto her, Woman, why weepest thou? whom seekest thou? She, supposing him to be the gardener, saith unto him, Sir, if thou hast borne him hence, tell me wherethou hast laid him, and I will take him away.  
16 Jesus saith unto her, Mary. She turneth herself, and saith unto him in Hebrew, Rabboni; which is to say, <sup>4</sup>Master.  
17 Jesus saith to her, <sup>6</sup>Touch me not; for I am not yet ascended unto the Father: but go unto my brethren, and say to them, I ascend unto my Father



Matt. 28:9,10.

Mark 16:9-11.

John 20:11-18.

and your Father,  
and my God  
and your God.

10 She went  
and told them  
that had been  
with him, as  
they mourned  
and wept.

18 Mary Magda-  
lene cometh  
and telleth the  
disciples, I have  
seen the Lord;  
and *how that* he  
had said these  
things unto her.

11 And  
they, when  
they heard  
that he was a-  
live, and had  
been seen of  
her, disbe-  
lieved.

9 And behold,  
Jesus met  
them, saying,  
All hail. And  
they came and  
took hold of his  
feet, and wor-  
shipped him.

10 Then saith Je-  
sus unto them,  
Fear not: go  
tell my breth-  
ren that they  
depart into  
Galilee, and  
there shall  
they see me.

1. The two oldest Greek manuscripts, and some other authorities, omit from ver. 9 to the end. Some other authorities have a different ending to the Gospel. 2. Gr. *demons*. 3. Some ancient authorities omit from *the tomb*. 4. Or, *Teacher*. 5. Or, *Take hold not on me*.

## § 136. SOME OF THE GUARD REPORT TO THE JEWISH RULERS.

Matt 28:11-15.

11 Now while they were going, behold, some of the guard came into the city, and told unto the chief priests all the things that were come 12 to pass. And when they were assembled with the elders, and had 13 taken counsel, they gave large money unto the soldiers, saying, Say ye, His disciples came by night, and stole him away while we slept. 14 And if this 'come to the governor's ears, we will persuade him, and

Matt. 28:11-15.

15 rid you of care. So they took the money, and did as they were taught: and this saying was spread abroad among the Jews, *and continueth* until this day.

1. Or, *come to a hearing before the governor.*

‡137. JESUS APPEARS TO SIMON PETER, AND TO TWO DISCIPLES  
ON THE WAY TO EMMAUS.

First day of the week, afternoon.

Mark 16:12,13.

Luke 24:13-35.

I Cor. 15:5.

12 And after these 13 And behold, two of things he was manifested in another form unto two of them, as they walked on their way into 14 the country. And 15 they went away and told it unto the rest: neither believed they them. 15 had happened. And it came to pass, while they communed and questioned together, that Jesus himself drew near, and went 16 with them. But their eyes were holden 17 that they should not know him. And he said unto them, <sup>1</sup>What communications are these that ye have one with another, as ye walk? And they stood still, looking sad. 18 And one of them, named Cleopas, answering said unto him, <sup>2</sup>Dost thou alone sojourn in Jerusalem and not know the things which 19 are come to pass there in these days? And he said unto them, What things? And they said unto him, The things concerning Jesus of Nazareth, which was a prophet mighty in deed and word before God and all the people: 20 and how the chief priests and our rulers delivered him up to be condemned to death, 21 and crucified him. But we hoped that it was he which should redeem Israel. Yea and beside all this, it is now the third day since 22 these things came to pass. Moreover certain women of our company amazed us, having 23 been early at the tomb; and when they found not his body, they came, saying, that they had also seen a vision of angels, which 24 said that he was alive. And certain of them

Luke 24:13-35.

I Cor. 15:5.

that were with us went to the tomb, and found it even so as the women had said: but  
 25 him they saw not. And he said unto them, O foolish men, and slow of heart to believe  
 26 in all that the prophets have spoken! Behoved it not the Christ to suffer these  
 27 things, and to enter into his glory? And beginning from Moses and from all the prophets, he interpreted to them in all the scriptures the things concerning himself. And they drew nigh unto the village, whither they were going: and he made as though he  
 29 would go further. And they constrained him, saying, Abide with us: for it is toward evening, and the day is now far spent. And  
 30 he went in to abide with them. And it came to pass, when he had sat down with them to meat, he took the bread, and blessed  
 31 it, and brake, and gave to them. And their eyes were opened, and they knew him; and  
 32 he vanished out of their sight. And they said one to another, Was not our heart burning within us, while he spake to us in the way, while he opened to us the scriptures?  
 33 And they rose up that very hour, and returned to Jerusalem, and found the eleven gathered together, and them that were with them,  
 34 saying, The Lord is risen indeed, and hath  
 35 appeared to Simon. And they rehearsed the things *that happened* in the way, and how he was known of them in the breaking of the bread.

5 and that he  
 appeared to Cephas.

1. Gr. *What words are these that ye exchange one with another?* 2. Or, *Dost thou sojourn alone in Jerusalem, and knowest thou not the things.* 3. Or, *after.* 4. Or, *loaf.*

‡138. HE APPEARS TO THE APOSTLES (EXCEPT THOMAS), TO THE TWO RETURNED FROM EMMAUS, AND OTHERS, AND GIVES A COMMISSION.

Jerusalem. First day of the week, evening.

Mark 16:14.

Luke 24:36-43.

John 20:19-25.

14 And afterward he 36 And as they spake was manifested unto these things, he himself stood in the the eleven them-

19 When therefore it was evening, on that day, the first *day* of the week, and when the doors were shut where the disciples were, for fear of the Jews, Jesus came and

Mark 16:14.

selves as they sat at meat;

and he upbraided them with their unbelief and hardness of heart, because they believed not them which had seen him after he was risen.

Luke 24:36-43.

midst of them, <sup>1</sup>and saith unto them, Peace *be* unto you.

37 But they were terrified and affrighted, and supposed that they beheld a spirit.

John 20:19-25.

stood in the midst, and saith unto them, Peace *be* unto you.

38 And he said unto them, Why are ye troubled? and wherefore <sup>1</sup>do reasonings arise in your heart?

39 See my hands and my feet, that it is I myself; handle me, and see; for a spirit hath not flesh and bones, as ye behold

40 me having. <sup>2</sup>And when he had said this, he shewed them his hands and

41 his feet. And while they still disbelieved for joy, and wondered, he said unto them, Have ye here anything to eat?

42 And they gave him a piece of a broiled

43 fish<sup>3</sup>. And he took it, and did eat before them.

20 And when he had said this, he shewed unto them his hands and his side.

The dis-

ciples therefore were glad, when they saw

21 the Lord. Jesus therefore said to them again, <sup>1</sup>Peace *be* unto you: as  
22 the Father hath sent me, even so send I you. And when he had said this, he breathed on them, and saith unto them, Receive ye the <sup>4</sup>Holy  
23 Ghost: whosoever sins ye forgive, they are forgiven unto them; whosoever *sins* ye retain, they are retained.\*

24 But Thomas, one of the twelve, called <sup>5</sup>Didymus, was not with them

\*Of our Lord's final commissions to the apostles and others (Luke 24:33), this is the first. See a second in § 141, and a third in § 142.

John 20:19-25.

25 when Jesus came. The other disciples therefore said unto him, We have seen the Lord. But he said unto them, Except I shall see in his hands the print of the nails, and put my finger into the print of the nails, and put my hand into his side, I will not believe.

1. Some ancient authorities omit *and saith unto them, Peace be unto you.* 2. Some ancient authorities omit ver. 40. 3. Many ancient authorities add *and a honeycomb.* 4. Or. *Holy Spirit.* 5. That is, *Twin.*

### §139. HE APPEARS AGAIN TO THE DISCIPLES, INCLUDING THOMAS.

Jerusalem. A week later than the resurrection.

John 20:26-31.

I Cor. 15:5.

26 And after eight days again his disciples were within, and Thomas with them. Jesus cometh, the doors being shut, and stood in the midst, and said, Peace be unto you. Then saith he to Thomas, Reach hither thy finger, and see my hands; and reach *hither* thy hand, and put it into my side: and be not faithless, but believing. Thomas answered and said unto him, My Lord and my God. Jesus saith unto him, Because thou hast seen me, 'thou hast believed: blessed *are* they that have not seen, and *yet* have believed.

30 Many other signs therefore did Jesus in the presence of the disciples, which are not written in this book: but these are written, that ye may believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God; and that believing ye may have life in his name.

[and that he appeared to Cephas;] then to the twelve;

1. Or, *hast thou believed?*

### §140. HE APPEARS TO SEVEN DISCIPLES BESIDE THE SEA OF GALILEE.

John 21.

1 After these things Jesus manifested himself again to the disciples at the sea of Tiberias; and he manifested *himself* on this wise. There were together Simon Peter, and Thomas called 'Didymus, and Nathanael of Cana in Galilee, and the *sons of* Zebedee, and two other of his disciples. Simon Peter saith unto them, I go a fishing. They say unto him, We also come with thee. They went forth, and entered 4 into the boat; and that night they took nothing. But when day was



John 21.

now breaking, Jesus stood on the beach; howbeit the disciples knew  
5 not that it was Jesus. Jesus therefore said unto them, Children, have  
6 ye aught to eat? They answered him, No. And he said unto them,  
Cast the net on the right side of the boat, and ye shall find. They  
cast therefore, and now they were not able to draw it for the multitude  
7 of fishes. That disciple therefore whom Jesus loved saith unto Peter,  
It is the Lord. So when Simon Peter heard that it was the Lord, he  
girt his coat about him (for he was naked), and cast himself into the  
8 sea. But the other disciples came in the little boat (for they were  
not far from the land, but about two hundred cubits off), dragging the  
9 net full of fishes. So when they got out upon the land, they see a fire  
10 of coals there, and fish laid thereon, and bread. Jesus saith unto  
11 them, Bring of the fish which ye have now taken. Simon Peter  
therefore went up, and drew the net to land, full of great fishes, a  
hundred and fifty and three: and for all there were so many, the net  
12 was not rent. Jesus saith unto them, Come and break your fast. And  
none of the disciples durst inquire of him, Who art thou? knowing  
13 that it was the Lord. Jesus cometh, and taketh the bread, and giveth  
14 them, and the fish likewise. This is now the third time that Jesus  
was manifested to the disciples, after he was risen from the dead.  
15 So when they had broken their fast, Jesus saith to Simon Peter,  
Simon, son of John, lovest thou me more than these? He saith unto  
him, Yea, Lord; thou knowest that I love thee. He saith unto him,  
16 Feed my lambs. He saith to him again a second time, Simon, son of  
John, lovest thou me? He saith unto him, Yea, Lord; thou knowest  
17 that I love thee. He saith unto him, Tend my sheep. He saith un-  
to him the third time, Simon, son of John, lovest thou me? Peter  
was grieved because he said unto him the third time, Lovest thou  
me? And he said unto him, Lord, thou knowest all things; thou  
18 knowest that I love thee. Jesus saith unto him, Feed my sheep.  
18 Verily, verily, I say unto thee, When thou wast young, thou girdedst  
thyself, and walkedst whither thou wouldest: but when thou shalt be  
old, thou shalt stretch forth thy hands, and another shall gird thee,  
19 and carry thee whither thou wouldest not. Now this he spake, signi-  
fying by what manner of death he should glorify God. And when he  
20 had spoken this, he saith unto him, Follow me. Peter, turning  
about, seeth the disciple whom Jesus loved following; which also  
leaned back on his breast at the supper, and said, Lord, who is he  
21 that betrayeth thee? Peter therefore seeing him saith to Jesus,  
22 Lord, and what shall this man do? Jesus saith unto him, If I will  
23 that he tarry till I come, what is that to thee? follow thou me. This  
saying therefore went forth among the brethren, that that disciple  
should not die: yet Jesus said not unto him, that he should not die;  
but, If I will that he tarry till I come, what is that to thee?  
24 This is the disciple which beareth witness of these things, and  
wrote these things: and we know that his witness is true.  
25 And there are also many other things which Jesus did, the which  
if they should be written every one, I suppose that even the world  
itself would not contain the books that should be written.

1. That is, Twin. 2. Gr. a fire of charcoal. 3. Or, a fish. 4. Or, a loaf. 5. Or, aboard.  
6. Or, loaf. 7. Gr. Joanes. See ch. 1:42. 8, 9. Love in these places represents two dif-  
ferent Greek words. 10. Or, percestvest. 11. Gr. and this man, what?

‡ 141. HE MEETS ABOVE FIVE HUNDRED\* ON AN APPOINTED  
MOUNTAIN IN GALILEE, AND GIVES A COMMISSION.

Matt. 28:16-20.

Mark 16:15-18.

I Cor. 15:6.

- 16 But the eleven disciples went into Galilee, unto the mountain where Jesus had  
17 appointed them. And when they saw him, they worshipped *him*: but some doubted.  
18 And Jesus came to them and spake unto them, saying, All authority hath been given unto me in heaven and on earth.

6 then he appeared to above five hundred brethren at once, of whom the greater part remain until now, but some are fallen asleep:

- 19 Go ye therefore, and make disciples of all the nations, baptizing them into the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Ghost:  
20 teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I commanded you:
- 15 And he said unto them, Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to the whole creation.

- 16 He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved: but he that disbelieveth shall be condemned.  
17 And these signs shall follow them that believe: in my name shall they cast out <sup>3</sup>devils; they shall speak with <sup>4</sup>new tongues;  
18 they shall take up serpents, and if they drink any deadly thing, it shall in no wise hurt them: they shall lay hands on

\*The meeting attended by so large a number as stated by Paul, was most probably that which Jesus had appointed (Matt. 28:16, and ‡ 134), and it could be held on an appointed mountain without attracting the attention of unbelievers.—The Commission in Mark may perhaps be reckoned the same as Matthew's here. A third Commission is given by Luke in ‡ 142.

Matt. 28:16-20.

Mark 16:15-18.

the sick, and they  
shall recover.

and lo, I am  
with you<sup>1</sup> alway, even  
unto<sup>2</sup> the end of the  
world.

1. Gr. *all the days*. 2. Or, *the consummation of the age*. 3. Gr. *demons*. 4. Some  
ancient authorities omit *new*.

§142. HE APPEARS TO JAMES; THEN TO ALL THE APOSTLES, AND  
GIVES THEM A COMMISSION.

Jerusalem.

Luke 24:44-49.

Acts 1:3-8.

I Cor. 15:7.

44 And he said unto  
them, These are my  
words which I spake  
unto you, while I was  
yet with you, how  
that all things must  
needs be fulfilled,  
which are written in  
the law of Moses,  
and the prophets,  
and the psalms, con-  
45 cerning me. Then  
opened he their  
mind, that they  
might understand  
46 the scriptures; and  
he said unto them,  
Thus it is written,  
that the Christ  
should suffer, and  
rise again from the  
dead the third day;  
47 and that repentance  
<sup>1</sup>and remission of sins  
should be preached  
in his name unto all  
<sup>2</sup>nations, beginning  
48 from Jerusalem. Ye  
are witnesses of these  
49 things. And behold,  
I send forth the  
promise of my Father  
upon you: but tarry  
ye in the city, until  
ye be clothed with  
power from on high.

3 to whom he also  
<sup>3</sup>shewed himself  
alive after his pas-  
sion by many proofs,  
appearing unto them  
by the space of forty  
days, and speaking  
the things concern-  
ing the kingdom of  
4 God; and <sup>4</sup>being as-  
sembled together  
with them he charg-  
ed them not to de-  
part from Jerusalem,  
but to wait for the  
promise of the Fath-  
er, which, *said he*,  
ye heard from me:  
5 for John indeed bap-  
tized with water; but  
ye shall be baptized  
<sup>5</sup>with the Holy Ghost  
not many days  
hence.  
6 They therefore,  
when they were  
come together, asked  
him, saying, Lord,  
dost thou at this  
time restore the  
kingdom to Israel?  
7 And he said unto  
them, It is not for  
you to know times  
or seasons, which  
the Father hath <sup>6</sup>set

Then he appeared  
to James; then to all  
the apostles.

Acts 1:3-8.

within his own au-  
 8 thority. But ye  
 shall receive power,  
 when the Holy  
 Ghost is come upon  
 you: and ye shall be  
 my witnesses both in  
 Jerusalem, and in all  
 Judea and Samaria,  
 and unto the utter-  
 most part of the  
 earth.

1. Some ancient authorities read *unto*. 2. Or, *nations*. *Beginning from Jerusalem*,  
*ye are witnesses*. 3. Gr. *presented*. 4. Or, *eating with them*. 5. Or, *in*. 6. Or, *appointed*  
*by*.

## §143. THE ASCENSION.

Between Jerusalem and Bethany.

Mark 16:19,20.

Luke 24:50-53.

Acts 1:9-12.

50 And he led them  
 out until *they*  
*were* over against  
 Bethany, and he  
 lifted up his hands,  
 and blessed them.  
 51 And it came to pass,  
 while he blessed  
 them, he parted  
 from them, <sup>1</sup>and was  
 carried up into  
 heaven.

19 So then the Lord  
 Jesus, after he had  
 spoken unto them,  
 was received up in-  
 to heaven,

and sat  
 down at the right  
 hand of God.

9 And when he had  
 said these things, as  
 they were looking,  
 he was taken up;  
 and  
 a cloud received him  
 out of their sight.

10 And while they were  
 looking stedfastly  
 into heaven as he  
 went, behold two men  
 stood by them in  
 11 white apparel; which  
 also said, Ye men of  
 Galilee, why stand ye  
 looking into heaven?  
 this Jesus, which was  
 received up from you  
 into heaven, shall so

Mark 16:19,20.

Luke 24:50-53.

Acts 1:9-12.

come in like manner  
as ye beheld him go-  
ing into heaven.

52 And they  
    <sup>2</sup>worshipped him,  
and returned to Je-  
    rusalem with great  
53 joy: and were con-  
    tinually in the tem-  
    ple, blessing God.

12 Then returned they  
unto Jerusalem.

20 And they went  
forth, and preached  
everywhere, the  
Lord working with  
them, and confirm-  
ing the word by the  
signs that followed.  
Amen.

1. Some ancient authorities omit *and was carried up into heaven*. 2. Some ancient  
authorities omit *worshipped him, and*.



## EXPLANATORY NOTES ON POINTS OF SPECIAL DIFFICULTY IN THE HARMONY OF THE GOSPELS.

---

BY A. T. ROBERTSON.

---

In explaining a difficulty, it is always to be remembered that even a possible explanation is sufficient to meet the objector. If several possible explanations are suggested, it becomes all the more unreasonable for one to contend that the discrepancy is irreconcilable. It is a work of supererogation to proceed to show that this or that explanation is the real solution of the problem. Sometimes, owing to new light, this might be possible, but it is never necessary. And by reason of the meagre information we have on many points in the gospel narrative, it may always be impossible in various cases to present a solution satisfactory in every point. The harmonist has done his duty, if he can show a reasonable explanation of the problem before him. Let no one be upset by the numerous theories about such matters, nor be seized with a nervous anxiety to apply the square and rule to every expression of different witnesses about the life of Christ. They are all true, and simply present different views of the perfect and so many-sided Man. It is to be remembered also that there is as much prejudice against the supernatural element in the Gospels as there is in favor of the accuracy of the narratives.

### §1, c. THE GENEALOGIES OF CHRIST.

Sceptics of all ages, from Porphyry and Celsus to Strauss, have urged the impossibility of reconciling the difficulties in the two accounts of the descent of Jesus. Even Alford says it is impossible to reconcile them. But certainly several possible explanations have been suggested. The chief difficulties will be discussed.

1. In Matthew's list several discrepancies are pointed out.

(a) It is objected that Matthew is mistaken in making three sets of fourteen each. There are only forty-one names, and this would leave one set with only thirteen. But does Matthew say he has mentioned forty-two names? He does say (1:17) that there are three sets of fourteen and divides them for us himself: "So all the generations from

Abraham unto David are fourteen generations; and from David unto the carrying away to Babylon fourteen generations; and from the carrying away to Babylon unto the Christ fourteen generations." The points of division are David and the captivity; in the one case a man, in the other an event. He counts David in each of the first two sets, although Jechoniah is counted only once. David was the connecting link between the patriarchal line and the royal line. But he does not say "from David to Jechoniah," but "from David to the carrying away unto Babylon," and Josiah is the last name he counts before that event. And so the first name after this same event is Jechoniah. Thus Matthew deliberately counts David in two places to give symmetry to the division, which made an easy help to the memory.

(b) The omissions in Matthew's list have occasioned some trouble. These omissions are after Joram, the names of Ahaziah, Joash, Amaziah, and after Josiah, that of Jehoiakim. (II. Kings 8:24; I. Chron. 3:11; II. Chron. 22: 1, 11; 24:27; II. Kings 23:34; 24:6). But such omissions were very common in the Old Testament genealogies. See II. Chron. 22:9. Here "son of Jehoshaphat" means "grandson of Jehoshaphat." So in Matt. 1:1 Jesus is called the son of David, the son of Abraham. A direct line of descent is all that it is designed to express. This is all that the term "begat" necessarily means here. It is a real descent. Whatever omissions were made for various reasons, would not invalidate the line. The fact that Ahaziah, Joash, and Amaziah were the sons of Ahab and Jezebel would be sufficient ground for omitting them.

(c) Matthew mentions four women in his list, which is contrary to Jewish custom, viz. Tamar, Rahab, Ruth, and the wife of Uriah. But neither one is counted in the lists of fourteen, and each one has something remarkable in her case (Broadus, Comm. on Matt. *in loco*). Three were guilty of gross sin, and one, Ruth, was of Gentile origin and deserved mention for that reason. This circumstance would seem to indicate that Matthew did not simply copy the genealogical history of Joseph. He did this, omitting what suited his purpose and adding likewise remarks of his own. His record is thus reliable and yet made a part of his own story.

## 2. A comparison of the lists of Matthew and Luke.

If no list had been given by Luke, no further explanations would be necessary. But Luke not only gives a list, but one radically different from Matthew's, and in inverse order. Matthew begins with Abraham and comes to Jesus; Luke begins with Jesus and concludes with Adam [the son of God]. Several explanations are offered to remove the apparent contradiction.

(a) As early as Julius Africanus it was suggested that the two lines

had united in accordance with the law of Levirate marriage. By this theory, Heli and Jacob being stepbrothers, Jacob married Heli's widow and was the real father of Joseph. Thus both genealogies would be the descent of Joseph, one the real, the other the legal. This theory is ably advocated by McClellan, p. 416ff., and Waddy, p. xvii. It is argued that Jechoniah's children were born in captivity and so, being slaves, lost both his royal dignity and his legal status. Stress is laid upon the word "begat" to show that Matthew's descent must be the natural pedigree of Joseph, and upon the use of the expression "son (as was supposed) of Joseph." Hence both Joseph's real and legal standing are shown, for by Luke's account he had an undisputed legal title to descend from David. This is certainly possible, although it rests on the hypothesis of the Levirate marriage.

(b) Lord Arthur Hervey, in his volume on the Genealogies of Our Lord, and in Smith's Dictionary, argues that Matthew gives Joseph's legal descent as successor to the throne of David. According to this theory Solomon's line failed in Jechoniah (Jer. 22:30) and Shealtiel of Matthew's line took his place. Luke's account, on the other hand, gives Joseph's real parentage. Matthew's Matthan and Luke's Mattathias are identified as one, and the law of Levirate marriage comes into service with Jacob and Heli. This explanation has received favor with such writers as Mill, Alford, Wordsworth, Ellicott, Westcott, Fairbairn. The chief objection seems to be the most natural meaning of "begat," implying direct descent, and the necessity for two suppositions, one about Shealtiel and another about Jacob and Heli. It is even fairly probable that the Shealtiel and Zerubbabel of Matthew and Luke are different persons.

(c) The third and most plausible solution yet suggested makes Matthew give the real descent of Joseph, and Luke the real descent of Mary. Several arguments of more or less weight can be adduced for this hypothesis.

(1) The most natural meaning of "begat" in Matthew is preserved. Jesus goes through David's royal line and so fulfils prophecy. It is not elsewhere stated that Mary was of Davidic descent, although presumptive evidence exists in the language of the angel (Luke 1:32) and the enrollment of Mary (Luke 2:5). So Robinson (Revised edition).

(2) The use of Joseph without the article, while it is used with every other name in the list. "The absence of the article puts the name outside of the genealogical series properly so-called."—Godet. This would seem to indicate that Joseph belonged to the parenthesis, "as was supposed." It would read thus, "being son (as was supposed of Joseph) of Heli." Luke had already clearly stated the manner of Christ's birth, so

that no one would think he was the son of Joseph. Jesus would thus be Heli's grandson, an allowable meaning of "son." See Andrews' (new edition) *Life of Our Lord*, p. 63.

(3) It would seem proper that Matthew should give the *legal* descent of Jesus, since he wrote chiefly for Jews. This, of course, could only be through Joseph.

(4) And it would seem equally fitting that Luke should give the *real* genealogy of Jesus, since he was writing for all. And this could come only through Mary. If it is objected that a woman's genealogy is never given, it may be replied that women are mentioned for special reasons in Matthew's list, though not counted, and that Mary's name is not mentioned in this list. The genealogy goes back to her father either by skipping her as suggested above and making son mean the grandson of Heli, or by allowing Joseph to stand in her place in the list, as he would have to do anyhow. On the whole, then, this theory seems the most plausible and pleasing. So practically Luther, Bengel, Olshausen, Lightfoot, Wieseler, Robinson, Alexander, Godet, Weiss, Andrews (new edition, p. 65), Broadus, Clark.

#### § 7. THE PROBABLE TIME OF THE SAVIOUR'S BIRTH.

Every one now understands that the accepted date of our Lord's birth is wrong by several years. The estimates of the true date vary all the way from one to seven years B.C. There are various data that fix the year with more or less certainty, but none of them with absolute precision. They do, however, agree in marking pretty clearly a narrow limit for this notable occurrence.

1. The death of Herod the Great is relied on with most certainty to fix the year of Christ's birth. The rule of Archelaus and Antipas demands B.C. 4. Josephus mentions an eclipse of the moon which occurred shortly before he died. Ant. xvii. 6, 4. This eclipse is the only one alluded to by Josephus, and fixes with absolute certainty the time after which the birth of Jesus could not have occurred, since, according to Matt. 2:1-6, Jesus was born while Herod was still living. The question to be determined would be the year of this eclipse. Astronomical calculations name an eclipse of the moon March 12 and 13, in the year of Rome 750, and no eclipse occurred the following year that was visible in Palestine. Josephus (Ant. xvii. 8, 1,) says that Herod died thirty-seven years after he was declared king by the Romans. In 714 he was proclaimed king, and this would bring his death, counting from Nisan to Nisan, as Josephus usually does, "in the year from 1st Nisan 750 to 1st Nisan 751, according to Jewish computation, at the age of seventy" (Andrews). Herod



died shortly before the Passover of 750, then, according to the eclipse and the length of his reign. Caspari contends for Jan. 24, 753, as the date of Herod's death, because there was a total eclipse of the moon Jan. 10. So he puts his death fourteen days later. Mr. Page (*New Light from Old Eclipses*) argues for the eclipse that occurred July 17, 752, as the one preceding Herod's death. He thinks that this makes unnecessary the subtraction of two years from the reign of Tiberius on the theory that Tiberius was contemporary ruler with Augustus for two years. But he finds difficulty in lengthening Herod's reign so long, and his theory has gained no great acceptance as yet. Our present era makes the birth of Christ in the year of Rome 754, and is due to the Abbot Dionysius Exiguus in the Sixth Century. Hence it is clear that if Herod died in the early spring of 750, Jesus must have been born *at least* four years before 754, the common era, and likely in the year 749.

2. It has been inferred by some that Jesus was at least two or three years old when Herod slaughtered the infants in Bethlehem, Matt. 2:16. Thus the year would be put two years further back to the end of 747 or beginning of 748. But this is not demanded by the "two years" of Matthew, for Herod would naturally extend the limit so as to be sure to include the child in the number slain, and a child just entering the second year would be called "two years" old by Jewish custom. No more definite note of time comes from this circumstance, save that the massacre probably took place some months before Herod's death, which fact would bring the Saviour's birth back some time into the year 749.

3. The appearance of the "star in the east" (Matt. 2:2). This, of course, was before Herod's death, and would agree in time with the slaughter of the children, if the star be looked upon as a supernatural phenomenon, and not the wise men's interpretation of a natural conjunction of planets. Kepler first suggested that, as there was a conjunction of Jupiter and Saturn in 747, to which Mars was added in 748, this conjunction might have been the bright star that led on the wise men. See Wieseler, *Synopsis*, p. 57. Kepler had also suggested that a periodical star or a comet might have joined the constellation. The Chinese records preserve the account of the appearance of a comet in the spring of 749. Either of these theories is fascinating in itself, especially to those minds that prefer a natural explanation of anything that looks miraculous. Both phenomena are possible in themselves, but they hardly meet the requirements of the record in Matthew. (1) The word used is *aster*, star, and not *astron*, a group of stars. (2) Rev. C. Pritchard, whose calculations have been verified at Greenwich (*Smith's Dict.*), has shown that those "planets could never have appeared as one star, for they never approached each other within double the apparent diameter of



the moon." So Ideler's hypothesis that the wise men all had weak eyes seems rather feeble. (3) The year 747 would conflict slightly with other evidence for Christ's birth that favors 749, although Wieseler, p. 53, note 4, contends that the star first appeared to the wise men two years before their visit, and a second time on their visit to Bethlehem. (4) Besides, the star is said to have stood over "where the young child was," v. 9. If it were a natural star it would have kept going as they went, and would not have stopped till they stopped. Even then it would appear as far away as ever from Bethlehem. It seems best, therefore, to admit the existence of a miracle here, and hence gain nothing from the visit of the Magi to establish the date of the Saviour's birth, save that it was not long before the slaughter of the infants, and would at least agree with the date 749. See Broadus, *Comm. in loco*.

4. The language of the heavenly host in Luke 2:14 is urged by some as fixing the birth at a time when there was universal peace throughout the world. The closing of the temple of Janus in the time of Augustus is also adduced, but it is not certainly known when it was closed apart from 725 and 729. It was intended to be closed at the end of 744, but was delayed on account of trouble among the Daci and Dalmatae. See Greswell i. 469. Nothing specific can be obtained from this fact, save that there was a time of comparative quiet in the Roman world from 746 to 752. There was a hush in the clangor of war when Jesus was born.

5. The entrance of John the Baptist upon his ministry gives us another note of time. See Luke 3:1 f. John emerged from the wilderness seclusion in the fifteenth year of the reign of Tiberius. Augustus died August 29, 767. Adding fifteen years to this, the fifteenth year of Tiberius would begin August 29, 781. John was of a priestly family and so could naturally enter upon his work when thirty years of age. Thirty years subtracted from this gives 751, as the date of John's birth. But that is too late by two years to agree with the other date. Here, however, the Roman histories come to our help. Tacitus, *Ann.* 1,3: "Tiberius is adopted by Augustus as his son, and *colleague in empire*." Vell. Pat. 2, 121; "At the request of Augustus, Tiberius was invested with equal authority in all the provinces." So Suetonius Aug. 97 and Tib. 21. It is clear then, that Tiberius reigned jointly with Augustus about two years before he assumed full control of the empire at the death of Augustus. Luke could have used either date, but Tiberius' power was already equal to that of Augustus in the provinces two years before his death. Luke would naturally use the provincial point of view. Taking off the two years from the joint reign of Augustus, we again come to the year 749, as John was born six months before Jesus. So if

John was born in the early part of the spring, Jesus would have been born in the summer or fall of 749.

6. The age of Jesus at his entrance upon his ministry, Luke 3:23. "And Jesus himself, when he began to teach, was about thirty years of age." So most modern scholars, Meyer, Wieseler, Alford, Ellicott, Wordsworth, etc. Origen refers it to the beginning of a new life, by the second birth of baptism, after his spiritualizing fashion. The Authorized Version has it: "And Jesus himself began to be about thirty years of age," applying the "beginning" to the period of thirty years. McClellan argues that it means "about thirty years, beginning;" that is, a little the rise of thirty years. The Revised Version seems to be preferable and the only doubt would be as to what is included in the phrase "about thirty years." It has been variously argued that Jesus was from one to three years younger or older than thirty. It seems more reasonable to give the words the meaning that he was just about thirty, a few months under or over. So Edersheim, Meyer, Alford, Tischendorf, DeWette, Norton. The argument that Jesus had to be exactly thirty years old because the priest had to be so, when he entered upon his work, has no great force. For Jesus was not a priest save in a spiritual sense. John had been preaching no great while when Jesus was baptized by him and so entered upon his public ministry. If John began his ministry when he was thirty years old in the fifteenth year of Tiberius, then Jesus's ministry would begin about six months later. His birth would then come in the latter part of 749, unless John was born in the latter part of 748, when it would be earlier in the year.

7. The building of the temple of Herod gives a further clue to the date of Christ's birth. In John 2:20, the Jews say, "Forty and six years was this temple in building." Josephus tells us in one place that Herod began rebuilding the temple in the fifteenth year of his reign, War. I. 21,1, and in another that he did so in the eighteenth year of his reign, Ant. XV. 11,1. In the account of Herod's death, Ant. XVII. 8,1, he used two dates for his reign, according as he counted from his declaration as king by the Romans 714, or the death of Antigonus 717. Eighteen and fifteen would both be correct, according as he reckoned from the one date or the other. Eighteen added to forty-six and both to 714 would make 778. It was at the first Passover in his ministry that this expression is used. It has been probably six months since his baptism. If thirty and a half years be taken from 778, his birth would be thrown back to the year 747, unless the forty-six years be taken as completed, when it would be 748. So Robinson. But this does not quite agree with the other notes of time we have. Many modern harmonists count the eighteen years from 717, and so bring the whole number, adding forty-

six, down to 780, or, if the years are complete, 781. Thirty and a half from this would give the autumn of 749 or 750. So substantially McClellan, Andrews, Clark, Thomson (Smith's Dict.), Meyer, Wieseler, Weiss, Godet, Edersheim, Lardner, Tischendorf. This is done because Josephus usually reckons Herod's reign from the death of Antigonus, 717. On the whole it seems clear that Josephus is wrong in the War. The temple was begun the year that the Emperor came to Syria, as is plain from Josephus. According to Dio Cassius LIV., 7, this visit was made in B.C. 20 or 19. Correcting Josephus by himself and by Dio Cassius we thus again get B.C. 5 as the probable year of the birth of Christ. See Schuerer, *History of the Jewish People in the Time of Jesus Christ*, Div. I., Vol. I., p. 410. Caspari urges the year 713 as the time when Herod was proclaimed king by the Romans. This would make the year 748 or 749.

8. The census of Augustus Cæsar mentioned in Luke 2:1f., furnishes the last note of time for this event. This subject is involved in a great many difficulties, and for a full discussion, the reader is referred to McClellan, who presents quite an array of testimony.

(1) It used to be said that no census was ever taken by Augustus, but heathen writers mention three, in 726, 746, 767. One of these, 746, may be the one here mentioned, which was delayed for various reasons, or which was executed slowly in the distant provinces. But it is not necessary that the phrase "all the world" should be pressed to its literal meaning, though this is more natural. Nor does the argument from silence prove that no other general census was taken by Augustus.

(2) It is not a "taxing," but an "enrollment" (Rev. Ver.) that was taken. There was a taxing later (Acts 5:37). And if it were done while Herod was king, Augustus could not have taxed Judea without Herod's consent.

(3) This helps to explain another objection that the enrollment would not have included Judea anyhow, because it was not yet a province, but a kingdom. But it is not likely that Herod would have displeased Augustus by refusing such information if it was desired. Tacitus asserts that the *regna*, the dependent kingdoms, were included in the census taken by Augustus.

(4) Hence, also, it is natural that the enrollment should have taken place according to the Jewish and not according to the Roman method, because Herod would wish it to be in accordance with the customs of his kingdom. So every one went to his own city.

(5) We now have to meet the objection that Quirinius was not governor till ten years later, A.D. 6, when a taxing did occur. (See Acts 5:37.) Various answers are given. (a) Two statements are made here; one is

that the decree went forth, which was begun by Herod, but was interrupted by his death. This enrollment was completed by Quirinius ten years later. This seems hardly likely since Luke specially says "first" and seems to point to the second in Acts 5:37. (b) But the first enrollment may have been undertaken by Herod, which was completed about 750 by Quirinius, who might thus have succeeded Varus as Procurator of Judea. We may suppose that Quirinius was twice governor of Syria. A gap exists in the history of Quirinius in the years 748-752, so that it is possible. (c) The term "governor" may have a special meaning. Quirinius, as the superior officer, may have had special powers granted for this census, which they both may have carried on after Herod's death. McClellan suggests the possibility of a plurality of Procurators, Varus, Legatine governorship, and Quirinius, the Fiscal governorship. Prof. Ramsay's book, *Was Christ Born at Bethlehem*, has shown the entire likelihood of Luke's correctness from the periodical census used by Augustus every fourteen years.

Few subjects have excited as much interest, even needless curiosity, as the date of the birth of the Saviour. But it is noticeable that by the masses of Christians more interest is taken in the day of Christ's birth than in the year. The Christmas festivities and the natural desire to make that the birthday of Jesus cause this widespread interest in December 25. Not only is it impossible to determine with any degree of certainty the day of the month, but the time of the year also is equally uncertain. The chief thing that appears proved is that December 25 is not the time, since the shepherds would hardly be in the fields at night with the flocks, which were usually taken into the folds in November and kept in till March. The nights of December would scarcely allow watching in the mountain fields even as far South as Bethlehem. And besides, the long journey from Nazareth to Bethlehem would hardly be made by Joseph and Mary in winter, the rainy season. McClellan argues for December 25, but his arguments are not convincing. The ancients had various days for Christ's birth: May 20 (Clement of Alexandria), April 20, December 25, January 5. Tertullian and others even say that the day of his birth (December 25) was kept in the register at Rome. But chronologists attach little weight to this testimony, since the same tradition puts the birth of John, June 24; the annunciation of Mary, March 25, and Elizabeth's conception, September 25—the four cardinal points of the year. If one might hazard an opinion, it would be that the birth of Jesus occurred in the summer or early in the fall of 749.



§37. THE FEAST OF JOHN 5:1, AND THE DURATION OF OUR LORD'S MINISTRY.

It seems almost impossible to decide with certainty what feast is alluded to in John 5:1. One can only speak with moderation where everything is so doubtful. Various feasts have been suggested as solving the problem.

1. The Feast of Dedication has been proposed by Kepler and Petavius. But this view has met with no great amount of favor, for there is too short an interval between the first Passover and December, when it occurred. It might be a later Feast of Dedication, but this feast was not one of the great feasts and would hardly have drawn Jesus all the way from Galilee to attend it. He did attend this feast once, (John 10:22), but he was already in Judea at this time, having come up to attend the Feast of Tabernacles (John 7:2, 14). So Robinson, Clark, etc. So this feast seems to be ruled out of the question.

2. The Feast of Tabernacles is advocated by Ebrard, Ewald, Patritius. It is very unlikely that the Feast of Tabernacles after the first Passover could be meant, as the Saviour did not return to Galilee for sometime afterwards. He could hardly have come back so soon to Jerusalem. But the Feast of Tabernacles after the Passover of John 6:4 is mentioned later, John 7:2f., which Jesus attended, it seems, because he was hindered from going up to the previous Passover by the murderous designs of the Jews. It is possible that the feast of John 5:1 may have been the Feast of Tabernacles after a Passover not mentioned, and so would come after the second Passover of his public ministry. But we do not know that Jesus attended any other Feast of Tabernacles save the one in John 7:2, which he may have done because he missed the preceding Passover.

3. The Feast of Purim, first suggested by Kepler, has had great favor with modern harmonists. So Lange, Tholuck, Ellicott, Wieseler, Tischendorf, Winer, Neander, Olshausen, Meyer, who says, "Without doubt it was Purim." But it is by no means so certain as Meyer would have us believe. (a) Meyer relies on John 4:35 and 6:4 to show that this was the Feast of Purim just before John 6:4. But the expression, "Say not ye, There are yet four months and then cometh the harvest?" may be, and probably is, a proverbial saying indicating the usual length of time between sowing and reaping, which, as a matter of fact, was about four months. Hence nothing can be determined by this note of time. And, besides, the four months could precede the Passover just as well as Purim, because the sowing lasted a month or so. (b) The Feast of Purim occurred a month before the Passover. Is it at all likely that two circuits of all Galilee were made in the meantime, besides much work of other kinds? See Luke 8:1 and Matt. 9:25-38. The three gen-



eral circuits throughout Galilee, besides the mission of the twelve and a large part of their training, the general statements about the Master's work of preaching and healing, require an expansion rather than a contraction of the time for this period of his ministry. It seems then quite unreasonable, when once the mind takes in this enlarged conception of the missionary work of Jesus, as recorded by the Synoptic Gospels, to limit it to the amount of work mentioned by John, since he omits much of the early ministry, because, it would seem, the others are so full just here. (c) The Feast of Purim, moreover, was observed at home in the synagogues, and not by going to Jerusalem. See Esther 9:22 and Jos. Ant. xi. 6, 13. But "the multitude" (John 5:13) seems to imply (Robinson) a concourse of strangers at one of the great festivals. (d) It seems hardly probable, besides, that Jesus would go to any feast just a month before the Passover and come back to Galilee and not go to the Passover itself (John 6:4). Least of all would he do this in the case of Purim. (e) The man who was healed at this feast was healed on the Sabbath (John 5:9), and this occasioned the outburst among the people. But the Feast of Purim was never celebrated on the Sabbath, and when it came on a Sabbath it was postponed. See Reland, *Antiq. Sacr.* 4, 9. So Robinson and Clark.

4. Pentecost is held to be the feast here alluded to by many early and some later writers, such as Chrysostom, Cyril of Alex., Erasmus, Calvin, Bengel, Norris, McClellan. Norris makes it the Pentecost after the first Passover, but to do this, has to crowd into this short interval Christ's first Judean ministry, the journey through Samaria together with the first part of his Galilean ministry. So this idea has little weight. McClellan argues that the allusions of Jesus in John 5:17-47, "infallibly point to Pentecost," meaning the Pentecost after a second Passover that is not mentioned. He further contends that this best suits the chronological arrangement and the term "a feast of the Jews." This view is certainly possible and cannot be positively disproved, although it is not so "infallibly" clear as McClellan imagines.

5. The Passover has always met with many adherents, being the second Passover in the Saviour's ministry and making four in all (John 2:13; 5:1; 6:4; 12:1). So Luther, Grotius, Lightfoot, LeClerc, Hengstenberg, Greswell, Robinson, Clark, Smith's B. D., Broadus, etc. The arguments in favor of this interpretation are the most satisfactory. We cannot consider them as absolutely conclusive, yet the Passover meets all sides of the case better than any of the other feasts. (a) The plucking of ears from standing grain by the disciples (Luke 6:1,) would indicate a time after the Passover and before Pentecost. This incident appears to have happened after the feast mentioned in John 5:1. (b) It

is fairly implied (John 5:1) that the feast took Jesus to Jerusalem. The Passover would more likely be the one to lead him there. It is expressly stated that he attended two Passovers and a special reason is given for his not attending a third. If there was another passover in his ministry, this would naturally be the one. (c) This suits best the hostility manifested at this feast, which would have time to become acute (Broadus' Comm. on Matt.) and break out with increased vigor in Galilee and prevent his attending the next Passover (John 6:4; 7:1). (d) If this Passover be a second Passover of the ministry, sufficient time is afforded for the great Galilean ministry without artificial crowding. His ministry would be long enough to allow the great work recorded as done by him. Only two serious objections can be urged to this idea. (1) It is objected that the article would be used with "feast," if the Passover were thus mentioned as *the* feast. But to this we can reply: (a) The article is sometimes omitted when the Passover is meant (Matt. 27:15; Mark 15:6). (b) The absence of the article proves nothing whatever one way or the other. No conclusion can be drawn for or against the idea of the Passover. (c) The article does occur in many manuscripts, including the Sinaitic, and is put in the margin of the Revised Version. So nothing can be gained against this theory here. (2) The chief objection is that Jesus would not have remained so long away from Jerusalem, a year and six months, from the Second Passover till the Feast of Tabernacles after the Third Passover. But (a) we do not know that he did not attend any other feast in that time, for silence proves nothing; and (b) a good reason is given for his failure to attend the Third Passover, which may have applied to the others, if he did not go, viz., the desire of the Jews to kill him (John 7:1).

Hence it is natural that there should be a variety of opinions as to the length of the Saviour's ministry, varying all the way from one to four years, leaving out mere guesses based on five and more Passovers. McKnight argues that the ministry may have lasted five or more full years, since all the Passovers of Christ's ministry may not be mentioned.

(1) The *Bi-paschal* theory makes the time of the public life of Jesus one year, allowing only two Passovers to the Gospel of John. Browne in his *Ordo Saeculorum* advocates this view. But the words, "the Passover," in John 6:4 must be omitted, and for this there is not enough documentary evidence. If this could be done, Westcott thinks Browne would make out a good case. But with the present text, his view cannot be entertained.

(2) The *Tri-paschal* theory finds only three Passovers in the life of Christ. Hence the public work of Jesus would be from two to two and a

half years in length. So Wieseler, Godet, Caspari, Tischendorf, Stier, Ellicott, Farrar, etc. These writers usually make the feast of John 5:1 Purim before the Passover of John 6:4, or Pentecost after it.

(3) The *Quadri-paschal* theory contends for four Passovers and a ministry of from three to three and a half years. This theory follows from making John 5:1 a Passover or Purim before or Pentecost or Tabernacles after an unnamed Passover. This seems to be the more probable length of the Saviour's public work on earth. How short a space was even this to compass such a marvellous work. So Robinson, Andrews, McClellan, Clark, Broadus, Waddy, Smith's B. D. It would be certain that the Saviour's public life lasted about three years and a half, if it was admitted that John 5:1 referred to a Passover. Various writers seek to find an allusion to the three years of the Saviour's ministry in the Parable of the Barren Fig Tree (Luke 13:6), but this application of the parable is by no means certain, since three might naturally be used as a round number.

#### ‡ 41. THE FOUR LISTS OF THE TWELVE APOSTLES.

It is interesting to compare the four lists of Jesus' chosen apostles as given by Matthew, Mark, Luke, and Acts.

Matthew 10:2f.	Mark 3:16f.	Luke 6:14f.	Acts 1:13f.
1. Simon Peter.	Simon Peter.	Simon Peter.	Simon Peter.
2. Andrew.	James.	Andrew.	James.
3. James.	John.	James.	John.
4. John.	Andrew.	John.	Andrew.
5. Philip.	Philip.	Philip.	Philip.
6. Bartholomew.	Bartholomew.	Bartholomew.	Thomas.
7. Thomas.	Matthew.	Matthew.	Bartholomew.
8. Matthew.	Thomas.	Thomas.	Matthew.
9. James the son of Alphaeus.	James the son of Alphaeus.	James the son of Alphaeus.	James the son of Alphaeus.
10. Thaddeus.	Thaddeus.	Simon the Zeal- ot.	Simon the Zeal- ot.
11. Simon the Ca- nanæan.	Simon the Ca- nanæan.	Judas the broth- er of James.	Judas the broth- er of James.
12. Judas Iscariot.	Judas Iscariot.	Judas Iscariot.	_____

Let us examine the names here given.

(1) The lists are given some time after the selection was made, and hence may represent a later grouping according to later developments in this inner circle.

(2) One mark of an apostle was that he should have been with the Lord from the baptism of John until the day that he was received up (Acts 1:21f). Perhaps no great stress is to be laid on any exact time here, provided it began in the time of John. An apostle must know the Lord. Hence Paul received the vision of Christ. We have some knowledge of seven of these apostles before this time. If we infer from John 1:41 that John followed the example of Andrew in finding his own brother, it was not long till James was a disciple as well as John, Andrew, and Peter. Philip and Nathanael are soon added to the list (John 1:43f). Later Matthew hears the call of the Saviour, too (Matt. 9:9; Mark 2:13f). Of the other five we have no knowledge previous to this occasion. Jesus had "found" them by the same insight that led to his other selections. He chose Judas, though knowing that he was a devil.

(3) Observe the three groups of four, headed by Simon Peter, Philip, and James the son of Alphaeus, respectively. The great variety in the arrangement of the other names makes this uniformity significant. It seems clear that there are three recognized groups among the apostles (Bengel, Broadus, Clark). Each group has the same persons in every list, although there is such a variety in the order. In the first group Matthew and Luke have the same order, while Mark and Acts agree. In the second group Mark and Luke have a like order, while Matthew and Acts agree in putting Matthew at the end of this group. In the third group Matthew and Mark agree exactly, while Luke and Acts are identical save the dropping out of Judas Iscariot from the list in Acts because of his apostasy and death. No great importance can be attached to the precise order within the groups since Luke, in the Gospel and Acts, gives a different arrangement in the first and second groups.

(4) Observe also that Simon Peter not only stands at the head of his group, but at the head of all the groups, while Judas Iscariot is always at the bottom till he drops out entirely. Simon occupied a position of precedence of some sort. He was one of the inner circle of three that was so close to the Saviour's heart. Perhaps it was this, rather than any notion of primacy in authority or power. He was the spokesman because of his natural impetuosity. The question as to who should be greatest among the apostles illustrates the spirit of rivalry about precedence that existed among them.

(5) There are among the Twelve three pairs of brothers—Simon and Andrew, James and John, James the son of Alphaeus and Judas the brother of James. The first two pairs form the first group of the Twelve. It is, however, uncertain whether Judas is the brother or the son of James. The Greek is ambiguous, James's Judas. The Revised Version translated it "Judas son of James," but the Epistle of Jude begins



"Judas a servant of Jesus Christ and brother of James." But the Jude of the Epistle and the Judas of the Twelve were hardly the same. Cf. Broadus, *Comm. on Matt.*, p. 216.

(6) There are some apparent discrepancies in the names in the various lists. Bartholomew occurs in every list, but is generally understood to be another name for Nathanael. Thaddeus is also called Judas the brother of James. Matthew and Mark give Thaddeus, and Luke in Gospel and Acts gives Judas the brother of James. It was a very common circumstance for one to have two names. Lebbeus, given in some MSS. in Matthew and Mark, is only a marginal explanation of Thaddeus. Both are terms of endearment. Matthew and Mark again call Simon the Cananæan, while Luke in the Gospel and Acts speaks of him as Simon the Zealot. But "Zealot" is simply a translation into Greek of the Aramaic "Cananæan." Jesus gave the other Simon the name "Cephas," which was translated into the Greek "Peter," meaning rock. He is called by all three names in the New Testament. Matthew likewise had another name, Levi, and Thomas was also called Didymus, which was a Greek translation of Thomas, meaning "twin."

#### §42. THE SERMON ON THE MOUNT.

Do Matthew and Luke record the same discourse? Let us consider the several theories on this subject. My own view will be stated last.

1. Some hold that the two discourses are entirely distinct in time, place, circumstances and audience. So Greswell, Anger, Patritius, Clark. The arguments for this theory usually presented are these.

(a) The time of delivery of the two sermons appears to be different. Matthew gives the sermon before his call (Matt. 9:9), while Luke precedes his sermon by the call of the twelve. Hence Matthew's discourse comes quite a while before Luke's in the early Galilean ministry. But it may be well replied that, inasmuch as Matthew's arrangement in ch. 8-13 is not chronological, but topical, it is entirely possible, even likely, that the same arrangement should prevail in ch. 5-7. It is perfectly natural that Matthew, writing for Jewish readers and about the Messianic reign, should give at the beginning of his account of that reign the formal principles that rule in this new state of affairs, as proclaimed by Jesus on a later occasion. In the early part of the ministry of Jesus, besides, the hearers would hardly be prepared for so advanced and radical ideas. Besides, Matthew makes no note of time whatever for this discourse.

(b) The place appears to be different. One is on a mountain (Matt. 5:1), while the other is on a plain (Luke 6:17). Hence the one is called by Clark the Sermon on the Mount, and the other the Sermon on the Plain. If it is necessary that "plain" here shall mean a place away from



a mountain, down in a valley, this would seem to refer to a different place. McClellan seeks to show that Luke uses "and" in 6:17-20 by way of anticipation. He presents for effective grouping events that happened after Jesus came down out of the mountain before he gives the sermon delivered to the whole body of disciples up in the mountain. This is possible, but another interpretation is much more likely. The plain here is really simply "a level place" (Rev. Ver.). So then the two accounts of Matthew and Luke will harmonize quite well. Jesus first went up into the mountain to pray (Luke 6:12) and selected and instructed the Twelve. Afterwards he came down to a level place on the mountain side whither the crowds had gathered, and stood there and wrought miracles (Luke 6:17). He then went up a little higher into the mountain where he could sit down and see and teach the multitudes (Matt. 5:1). Matthew gives the multitudes as the reason for his going up into the mountain. By this arrangement any discrepancy between "sat" in Matthew and "stood" in Luke disappears. Waddy has given an admirable arrangement of the material at this point in Note C, p. xix. Many writers affirm that the tradition mentioned by Jerome, making the Horns of Hattin the place where the Sermon on the Mount was delivered, suits this explanation exactly. There is a level place on it where the crowds could have assembled. It is not necessary to insist that this mountain is the Mount of Beatitudes, nor need we contend, as Robinson does, that the mountain must be very close to Capernaum.

(c) The audience is different. Matthew (4:25) states that his audience was composed of "great multitudes from Galilee and Decapolis and Jerusalem and Judea and from beyond Jordan," while Luke (6:17) says that there was "a great multitude of his disciples, and a great number of the people from all Judea and Jerusalem, and the sea coast of Tyre and Sidon." Matthew says (5:1) also that "his disciples came unto him." Hence both assemblages were composed of great multitudes from many regions besides many of his disciples, but in neither case is Jesus said to address himself to any save his disciples, his followers (Matt. 5:1 and Luke 6:20). So in both accounts the Saviour seems to withdraw a little from the great outside crowd of curiosity seekers. But the multitudes also must have heard something of what he said, for they were astonished at his teaching (Matt. 7:28). Andrews well shows that the audience in Matthew were not mostly Jews (according to Kraft), and the audience in Luke mostly heathen. Matthew omits Tyre and Sidon, but he had already mentioned Syria (4:24), which includes Tyre and Sidon. Neither list may be complete. Hence nothing can be made out of Luke's omission of Galilee, Decapolis, and beyond Jordan. Great multitudes from the same general regions are alluded to as being present.

(d) The contents are radically different. It is objected by Alford, Greswell, etc., that Luke omits large portions of what Matthew has, so that Luke has only thirty verses, while Matthew has one hundred and seven. But this leaves out of consideration the several large portions of the same matter which Luke has placed elsewhere, or which Jesus repeated on other occasions (cf. Matt. 6:9-13 and Luke 11:2-4; Matt. 6:25-34 and Luke 12:22-31). Jesus often repeated his sayings on other occasions as all teachers do and ought to do. Neither evangelist gives a complete report of this wonderful discourse. So Matthew omits some things which Luke records (cf. Matt. 5:12 with Luke 6:23-6; Matt. 7:12 with Luke 6:31-40). Nor need we be surprised that Luke, writing generally for all Christians, omits large portions towards the beginning of the sermon that were designed especially for Jews (see Matt. 5:17-27; 6:1-18). These Matthew would be sure to record. Luke adds four woes to the beatitudes. It is unnecessary to remark upon minor variations of language, since the gospels manifestly aim to give the sense of what the Saviour said and not the *verbatim* words. They make no mistakes, for they quote freely, yet correctly. In each case they are incorporated into the narrative in hand. Moreover, to offset these variations, which admit of explanation, it ought to be remembered that the two discourses begin alike and end alike, that they have a general similarity in the order of the different parts, and that they show a general likeness and often absolute identity of expression.

So these differences all melt away on careful comparison, and it is not proved that there are two distinct sermons.

2. Another theory holds that the two sermons are distinct, but spoken on the same day, and near together. So Augustine, who is followed by Lange. The further points of this theory are two. (a) The one (Matt.) was spoken before the choice of the Apostles, to the disciples alone, and while Jesus was sitting on the mountain. (b) The other (Luke) was spoken after the choice of the Apostles, to the multitudes, and standing upon the plain. It is not hard to see that these points do not solve the question. In Matt. 7:28 we are told that the multitudes were astonished at his teaching and in Luke 6:20 that "he lifted up his eyes on his disciples, and said." So this distinction vanishes. The question of the mountain and the plain has been already discussed, and another more probable explanation suggested. It is only a conjecture that the discourse in Matthew was before the appointment of the Twelve. This theory has had no great following.

3. Wieseler holds that Matthew has simply brought together detached sayings of Jesus on different occasions and does not mean to present the whole as one discourse; Luke's account being only one of the discourses

used by Matthew. But this violates the evident notes of place and audience and surroundings by which Matthew gives local color and cast to the entire discourse. See Matt. 5:1 and 8:1. The case of the grouping of the miracles in chapters 8 and 9 is not parallel, since there Matthew does not state that they occurred on one occasion. The fact that various portions of this discourse are repeated elsewhere by Matthew is immaterial, because this was a common habit of Jesus in his discourses.

4. Both Matthew and Luke give substantially similar accounts of the same discourse. So Robinson, Tischendorf, Tholuck, Lewin, Wordsworth, Andrews, Broadus, McClellan, and most modern writers. Most of the arguments for this interpretation have been mentioned in rebuttal of the previously mentioned theories. (a) This is the most natural explanation in view of the large volume of similar matter in both, in the beginning, progress, and close of the discourse. It is always best to give the Scripture the most natural and manifest setting, when possible. (b) This theory is the most probable one, since it is hardly likely that Jesus would again make the same sermon to the same audience, and under the same circumstances. (c) There are no objections to this theory that do not admit of a probable explanation. See the discussion above. The omissions and additions in each case suit the specific purpose of the writer. The apparent contradictions, when studied carefully, blend into a harmonious whole. Hence we seem to be justified in maintaining the identity of the discourses recorded by Matthew and Luke. For a careful outline of this matchless discourse see Broadus on Matthew.

#### § 75. THE COMBINATION OF LUKE AND JOHN.

We now have to deal with the most perplexing question in harmonic study, the proper disposal of the mass of material furnished by Luke in 9:51-18:14. McClellan discusses ten schemes, pushes them all aside, and then suggests another which is no more convincing and equally complicated. Nothing can be attempted here but a presentation of the chief points in this endless discussion. All the principal plans for arranging this part of Luke proceed on one or the other of the following ideas:

1. Some hold that this portion of Luke is neither orderly nor chronological. Hence many of the incidents, here recorded as apparently belonging to the last six months of the Saviour's ministry, in reality are to be placed earlier. They are put here as a sort of summing up of things not mentioned elsewhere. So Robinson and others. In favor of this

theory it is urged that Luke here speaks of some things that Matthew and Mark put before the third passover, such as the healing of a demoniac (Luke 11:14-36) and the blasphemy following. But it may be well replied.

(a) It is not at all clear that we have here the same events that are recorded in Matthew and Mark. Similar miracles were often wrought in the Master's work and similar sayings were frequently repeated on similar or different occasions. This was a common habit with him, as we have heretofore seen.

(b) This portion of Luke is his distinctive contribution to the ministry of Christ in addition to his account of the nativity. He has condensed his account of the withdrawals from Galilee, apparently to make room for the description of another part of Christ's work. Matthew and Mark almost confine themselves to the ministry in Galilee, while Luke thus devotes the bulk of his narrative to what seems to be a later ministry, after Jesus has left Galilee. It is hardly likely that this account should be a mere jumble of scattered details.

(c) Especially is this unlikely in view of Luke's express statement (1:3) that he was going to write an orderly narrative. In no real sense could this be true, if this large section is dislocated in time and order of events.

2. Others refer the entire narrative (Luke 9:51-18:14) to the last journey of the Saviour to Jerusalem. So Andrews, Greswell, Lewin, McClellan, who all refer it to the last journey to the Passover. Others prefer to understand it as meaning the journey to the Feast of the Tabernacles or Dedication. Some would combine this idea with the unchronological plan noticed above. In favor of this journey being continuous and the last one to Jerusalem, the following arguments are adduced:

(a) The language of Luke 9:51, "when the days were being completed that he should be received up," implies that the end was drawing near, and that he was setting his face towards Jerusalem to meet it. This is true without doubt, for Wieseler's interpretation of "received up" as meaning Christ's reception by man is entirely too forced. The expression points to the end of Christ's earthly career. But what does the vague expression, "the days were being completed," mean? Does it have to mean only a few weeks? May it not include as much as six months? For we know that Jesus had been instructing his disciples on this very subject expressly and pointedly, and at the Transfiguration he had spoken of his "decease." Henceforward this was the uppermost subject in his mind. So the interpretation is correct, but the inference is not necessary. This journey in Luke 9:51 need not be either just be-



fore the Passover or the Dedication. It could be as early as Tabernacles and be thus described.

(b) It is insisted that this is Jesus' final departure from Galilee, the one described by Matthew and Mark. No place is allowed for a return to Galilee after the departure in Luke 9:51. Robinson urges that Luke 9:51 naturally means a final departure from Galilee. But it may simply mean that he left it as a sphere of activity, not that he never entered Galilee again. And then Luke 17:11 expressly says that Jesus went "through the midst of Samaria and Galilee." This means more than going on the border between the two countries, as McClellan argues. He went through some portions of Samaria and Galilee. In order for McClellan to carry out his scheme he has to resort to the artificial device of referring part of John 10:40 to the departure from Galilee, and the other half to the Perean ministry after a diversion of considerable length into Samaria and back into Galilee. So the effort is not convincing to place all the material in this large section of Luke in one last journey to Jerusalem.

3. The combination of Luke's narrative with that of John. Wieseler was the first to point out a possible parallel between Luke and John. John gives us three journeys,—the Feast of Tabernacles (John 7:2ff), the journey to Bethany at the raising of Lazarus (John 11:17f), the final Passover (John 12:1). Luke likewise three times in this section speaks of Jesus going to Jerusalem, 9:51; 13:22; 17:11. Hence it would seem possible, even probable, that their journeys corresponded. If so, John 7:2–11:54 is to be taken as parallel to Luke 9:51–18:14. This plan is followed by Ellicott, Tischendorf, Clark, Broadus.

According to John's chronology, Jesus was in Jerusalem at the Feast of Tabernacles (7:2), at the Feast of Dedication (10:22), and at the Passover (12:1). Just after the Feast of the Dedication we find him abiding beyond Jordan, where John had baptized (John 10:40). From this point he comes to Bethany near Jerusalem at the raising of Lazarus (John 11:17), whence he withdraws to a little town called Ephraim in the hills north of Jerusalem (John 11:54). Here he abides awhile with his disciples away from his enemies till he goes to the Passover. Such is John's outline of these last six months of the Saviour's life.

(a) But how is all this to be reconciled with the statement of Luke (17:11) that Jesus went through Samaria and Galilee? If Jesus went back to Galilee, John would have mentioned it, we are told. Not necessarily, not unless it fell in with his plan to do so. Hence no conflict need exist between Luke and John. Luke says he went through Galilee and John permits it by the break in his narrative at 11:54. Various points in the six months have been suggested as the point when the re-



turn to Galilee was made. The most natural point is from Ephraim, whither he had withdrawn (John 11:54). It was not far to go up through Samaria and join in Galilee (Luke 17:11) the pilgrims from his own country who were in the habit of going to the Passover through Perea, to avoid passing through Samaria. This supposition is not improbable, as Robinson and McClellan urge, but very natural; it makes Luke and John both agree, and allows Luke 9:51 to mean that Jesus then left Galilee as a field of operations. Various other theories are suggested for this return to Galilee, but none of them appear as fitting as this one. It was just before the Passover, when such a journey from Galilee to Jerusalem would be made.

(b) One other point needs to be considered. The theory we hold makes the journey in Luke 9:51 identical with the one in John 7:2-10, viz., to Tabernacles. Many hold such identity to be impossible. So Andrews, Meyer, Godet, Greswell, Farrar, McClellan, etc. Andrews makes three objections against this identity: (1) That the Lord refused to go with his brethren (John 7:6). But it was his brothers who were not favorable to him that he refused to go with. He simply wished to avoid publicity. His face was set (Luke 9:51) all the time, but he was not going with them. (2) That the manner of the going is unlike; the one in John is secret, while the one in Luke is public. But the secrecy in John may merely mean the avoidance of the caravan routes and so through Samaria (Luke). The messengers sent before were not to herald his coming to gather crowds simply, but to make ready for him. It was needed, since the Samaritans saw that his face was as if he were going to Jerusalem. (3) That he went rapidly according to John and slowly according to Luke. He does, according to John, appear in Jerusalem before the feast is over, but Luke does not make him move slowly. Nor is it necessary to connect the sending of the seventy (Luke 10:1ff) with this journey. It belongs rather to the interval between Tabernacles and Dedication. So the secret going of John and the going through Samaria of Luke agree. So substantially Ellicott, Robinson, Wieseler, Gardiner, Caspari, Edersheim, etc. This theory is held irrespective of this being the final departure from Galilee. It is not necessary to fill out every detail in this programme and show where Jesus was between Tabernacles and Dedication. The main outlines remain clear and harmonious and are fairly satisfactory. This combination of Luke and John preserves the integrity of both narratives and fills up a large blank that would otherwise exist in these closing months of the Saviour's life. Upon the whole, therefore, this view seems decidedly preferable, though nothing like absolute certainty can be claimed in regard to the question.

## §118. DID CHRIST EAT THE PASSOVER?

To put this question in another form, it would be, On what day of the month was Jesus crucified? For the crucifixion occurred on the same Jewish day as the eating of the meal recorded by all four Evangelists. Nearly all agree that the crucifixion occurred on Friday and the meal was eaten the evening before, our Thursday, but the beginning of the Jewish day, counting from sunset to sunset. But what day of the month was it? The Passover feast began on the 15th Nisan, the lamb being slain in the afternoon of the 14th. But the day of the week would vary with the new moon. If Jesus ate the regular Passover supper, he was crucified on the 15th Nisan. If he ate an anticipatory meal a day in advance and was himself slain at the hour of killing the paschal lamb, he was crucified on the 14th Nisan. In that case he did not really eat the Passover supper at all. So then we must seek to determine the truth about this matter, because express statements are made about it in the Gospels.

1. Some sentimental views of the question need to be disposed of first. A great controversy once raged in the early churches about the Passover.

(a) In the latter part of the second century some of the churches of Asia Minor, largely composed of Jewish Christians, kept up the Passover on the ground that Jesus had eaten it the night before his crucifixion. Polycarp, the disciple of John, expresses the persuasion that Jesus ate the Passover.

(b) But some of the churches were afraid of this example and its application to the discussion about the relation of the Mosaic laws to Christianity. So they took the position that Jesus did not eat the Passover himself, but as the Paschal Lamb, was crucified at the time the lamb was slain. He was our Passover. The Greek churches now hold this position, while the Latin churches hold that Jesus ate the Passover. But those arguments are purely subjective and do not affect the question of fact. Hence we waive this old time controversy and come to the testimony of the Gospels themselves.

2. The testimony of the Synoptists, Matthew, Mark, and Luke. The evidence they give is abundant and explicit to the effect that Jesus ate the regular Paschal Supper on the evening after the 14th Nisan.

(a) Jesus predicted that his death would occur during the Feast of the Passover. See Matthew 26:2, "Ye know that after two days the Passover cometh, and the Son of Man is delivered up to be crucified." See also Mark 14:1 and Luke 22:1, where the fact is alluded to. Passover is used in the general sense of the feast of unleavened bread, as Luke explains. The feast of unleavened bread followed the Passover meal,

beginning the next morning and lasting a week. But the one term was used to include the other. The Passover was expanded to mean the entire feast that followed, and *vice versa*.

(b) It is true that the Jewish authorities decided not to put Jesus to death during the feast (Matthew 26:5; Mark 14:2). But this decision was reached not because of any compunctions of conscience in the matter, but because they were afraid of a tumult among the people, owing to the great crowds, many of whom were friendly to Christ. But so soon as Judas offered his services, their fears vanished and they proceeded with their murderous designs (Matthew 26:14; Mark 14:11). The rulers did expedite matters at the crucifixion that the bodies might not be exposed on the Sabbath. But they had often tried to slay Jesus on the Sabbath heretofore. Public executions did take place during the feasts (Deut. 17:12f).

(c) The Synoptists flatly say (Matthew 26:17,20; Mark 14:12,17; Luke 22:7,14) that on the first day of unleavened bread Jesus sent Peter and John from Bethany into the city to make preparations for eating the Passover, and that on the evening of the same day he ate it with his disciples. Luke calls it "the hour." Now, the first day of unleavened bread was the 14th Nisan. There is no question about this. Josephus speaks of the feast lasting eight days. The lamb of the supper being slain on the afternoon of this day, it was regarded as the beginning of the feast. Besides, Mark and Luke end the whole matter by saying that on this day they sacrificed the Passover. Jesus himself calls it the Passover (Luke 22:15). It is useless to say that Jesus ate the Passover a day in advance. This could not be done, especially by one to whom the temple authorities were hostile. Equally useless is it to say that the Jews ate the Passover a day too late. If a mistake was made about the new moon, they would hardly keep the Passover on two different days, nor would Jesus be apt to make a point about the matter.

3. The testimony of John. If we had only the evidence of the Synoptists, no serious trouble would ever arise on this question. Strauss has strenuously urged that John is on this point in hopeless conflict with the other Evangelists, since he makes Jesus eat the Passover on the evening after the 13th Nisan (Wednesday), and not the evening after the 14th (Thursday). This idea has gained a foothold among many orthodox or semi-orthodox writers, such as Ellicott, Westcott, Alford, Godet, Farrar, Greswell, Meyer, Bleek, Weiss. Some of these evidently do so because they hold that the Paschal controversy in Asia Minor arose from this supposed conflict of John with the Synoptists, and that this shows John's Gospel to have been in existence when that controversy began. But as many able men hold that John and the Synoptists are in perfect harmony

on the question. So Wieseler, Robinson, Andrews, McClellan, Tholuck, Clark, Broadus, Edersheim, etc. Andrews, Robinson, and McClellan have elaborate and convincing discussions of the whole subject. It is not worth while to maintain that John in chapter 13 alludes to a different meal on a different occasion. The points of contact with the Synoptists are too sharp and clear, such as the sop given to Judas. But five passages in John are produced as being in direct opposition to the statements of the Synoptic Gospels. Let us examine them.

(a) John 13:1f., "Now before the feast of the Passover, Jesus knowing, etc." Here, it is alleged, a distinct statement is made that this supper was before the Passover, and consequently twenty-four hours before. But several things are taken for granted in this inference. One is that the phrase "feast of the Passover" is to be confined to this particular meal, and is not to include the entire festival of unleavened bread (cf. Luke 22:1). Often by a metonymy of speech the name of a part is given to the whole. Besides, it is not certain that verse 1 is to be connected with verse 2. The best exegetes agree that a complete idea may be presented therein, either a general statement that Jesus loved his own before the Passover and until the end, or that he came into special consciousness of this love just before the Passover. And if the more natural interpretation be taken and the application of this love be made in verse 2, it is not necessary that the "before" be as much as twenty-four hours. Observe also the text adopted in the Revised Version in verse 2, not "supper being ended," but "during supper." With this reading agree the other references in 13:3, "riseth from supper," 13:12, "sat down again," 13:23, "There was at the table reclining in Jesus' bosom." So the natural meaning is that just before the meal began, Jesus purposed to show his love for his own by a practical illustration. So, after they had all reclined at the table according to custom, Jesus arose and passed around the tables, washing their feet; then he reclined again and proceeded with the meal. So nothing at all can be made out of this passage against the view that this was the regular Passover; but, on the other hand, the most natural meaning is that John is here describing what took place at this Passover meal. Else, why should he mention the Passover at all?

(b) John 13:27, "That thou doest, do quickly." The objection is made that the disciples would not have thought that Jesus referred to the feast (13:29), if the Passover meal was already going on or was over. So, it is urged, this remark must have been made a day before the Passover was celebrated. But if that were the case, where would be the necessity for hurry, as there would be plenty of time on the morrow? The word "feast" here need not be confined to the paschal supper, but more naturally refers to the whole of the feast, of which the supper was a



part. So this haste was needed to provide for the feast of unleavened bread which began on the next morning. No real force lies in the fact that this day was a holy day, being the first day of the Passover festival. The Mishna expressly allows the procuring even on a Sabbath what was needed for the Passover. If this could be done on a Sabbath, much more could it be done on a feast day which was not a Sabbath. Hence not only was it possible for the disciples to have misunderstood the remark of Jesus on the Passover evening, but it was far more natural that such misapprehensions should arise then than a day before. So this passage, like the preceding, when rightly understood, really confirms the Synoptists.

(c) John 18:28, "They themselves entered not into the palace, that they might not be defiled, but might eat the Passover." At first sight this does look like a contradiction. For this was certainly after the feast of John 13:2, and if they had not eaten the Passover meal, why here is a clear case of conflict of authorities. But it is by no means certain that the phrase "eat the Passover" means simply the paschal supper. This phrase occurs five times in the New Testament besides this, but all in Matthew, Mark, and Luke (Matt. 26:17; Mark 14:12,14; Luke 22:11,15). In all of these the reference is to the paschal supper. But the word "passover" is used in three senses in the New Testament, the paschal supper, the paschal lamb, or the paschal festival. The word is used eight times in John besides this instance, and in every case the Passover festival is meant. So we may fairly infer that the usage of John must determine his own meaning rather than that of the Synoptists. This becomes more probable when we remember that John wrote much later than they, after the destruction of Jerusalem, when these terms were not used so strictly. He always speaks of "the Jews" as separate from Christians. And this very expression is used in II. Chronicles 30:22, "And they did eat the festival seven days." The Septuagint translates it, "And they fulfilled (kept) the festival of unleavened bread seven days." See Robinson. So it is entirely possible for the phrase, "eat the Passover," to mean in this instance also the celebration of the Passover festival. Some have urged that the Sanhedrin had not eaten the Passover at the regular hour because of the excitement of the trial. But this is hardly tenable. And, moreover, since this remark was made early in the morning, how could that affect the eating of the supper in the evening? For whatever impurities one had during the day passed away at evening. Hence this uncleanness must belong to the same day on which it was incurred. If the Passover festival had begun, this would be true, for they would wish to participate in the offerings of that day. So this



passage likewise becomes an argument in favor of agreement with the Synoptists.

(d) John 19:14, "Now it was the Preparation of the Passover." This is claimed to mean the day preceding the Passover festival. Hence Christ was crucified on the 14th Nisan, in opposition to the Synoptists. The afternoon before the Passover was used as a preparation, but it was not technically so-called. This phrase "Preparation" was really the name of a day in the week, the day before the Sabbath, our Friday. We are not left to conjecture about this question. The Evangelists all use it in this sense alone. Matthew uses it for Friday (27:62), Mark expressly says that the Preparation was the day before the Sabbath (15:42), Luke says that it was the day of the Preparation and the Sabbath drew on (23:54), and John himself so uses the word in two other passages (19:31,42), in both of which haste is exercised on the Preparation, because the Sabbath was at hand. The New Testament usage is conclusive, therefore, on this point. This, then, was the Friday of Passover week. And this agrees with the Synoptists. Besides, the term "Preparation" has long been the regular name for Friday in the Greek language, caused by the New Testament usage. It is so in the Modern Greek to-day. It was the Sabbath eve, just as the Germans have *Sonnabend* for Sunday eve, *i. e.*, Saturday afternoon. So this passage also becomes a positive argument for the agreement between John and the Synoptists.

(e) John 19:31, "For the day of that Sabbath was a high day." From this passage it has been argued that at this Passover the first day of the Passover festival coincided with the weekly Sabbath. But that is an entirely gratuitous inference. This coincidence would, of course, be a "high day," but so would the first day of the feast, the last day, or the Sabbath of the feast. In John 7:37 the last day is called "the great day of the feast." The Sabbath occurring during the festival would be a high day likewise. Robinson's arguments on this point are quite conclusive. Nothing can be made out of the expression against the position of the Synoptists.

McClellan discusses various other passages in John which show that the crucifixion occurred on Friday, and that this was the first day of the feast (John 18:39,40; 19:31,42; 20:1,19, etc.). We conclude then that a fair interpretation of the passages alleged not only removes all contradiction between John and the Synoptists, but rather decidedly favors the view that they have the same date for the Passover meal, and that Jesus ate the Passover at the regular hour and was crucified on Friday, 15th Nisan.

### § 132. THE HOUR OF THE CRUCIFIXION.

In John 19:14 it is stated that the time when Pilate sentenced Jesus to be crucified, or rather when he began the last trial in which he sentenced him, was about the sixth hour. We read, however, in Mark 15:25 that it was the third hour when Christ was crucified. The Synoptists all unite in saying that the darkness began at the sixth hour. The Jewish way of counting the hours was to divide the night and day into twelve divisions each, beginning at sunrise and sunset. The hours would thus vary in length with the time of year. Just after the vernal equinox the third hour of Mark would be about 9 A.M., and the sixth hour of the Synoptists would be about noon. The ninth hour, when Jesus gave his piteous cry to God (Mark 15:34) would be about 3 P.M. But how can the sixth hour of John, the time when Jesus was sentenced by Pilate, be reconciled to this schedule? A real difficulty is here presented, but by no means an insuperable one, as Alford and Meyer hold. Let us discuss some of the more usual explanations. Andrews and McClellan give quite a variety of suggested solutions.

1. Some hold that "sixth" in John is a textual error for "third." This could easily happen, since the gamma and the digamma of the Greek are very similar. Eusebius said that the accurate copies had it "third" in John. Various writers have held this position, such as Beza, Bengel, Alford, Robinson (given up by Riddle), Olshausen, (Farrar). But the textual evidence is overwhelmingly against it, and, besides, the difficulty would not be removed. John is evidently speaking of the time at the last trial and Mark of the time after Jesus has been led out to the crucifixion. So nothing is gained by this hypothesis.

2. Others would change the punctuation in John 19:14 so as to make "of the Passover" belong to "sixth hour," beginning from midnight. But there is no evidence that the Passover began with midnight. So Hofmann. This is very forced and unnatural.

3. Views that hinge on the word "preparation." Some would hold that John simply says that about noon the preparation time of the Passover begins. But Preparation here means Friday, and noon is not the hour needed to harmonize with Mark. Equally arbitrary is it to count six hours backward from noon so as to reach six o'clock.

Augustine suggested that the six hours are to be counted from 3 A.M. This would make 9 A.M., and would concur with the hour of Mark. But this is wholly arbitrary and unsatisfactory, and would not relieve the trouble.

4. Equally arbitrary is the solution that makes Mark refer to the hour of the sentence and John to the crucifixion, just the reverse of the Scripture account. Augustine also proposed that Jesus was crucified at

the third hour by the tongues of the Jews, and at the sixth by the hands of the soldiers.

5. Others hold that Mark and John both speak in general terms. Hence the crucifixion may have taken place between 9 and 12 in the morning. Mark looks in one direction and John in the other. So Hengstenberg, Krafft, Ellicott, Campbell. The Jews, it is true, were not as exact in the use of expressions of time as we are to-day, but this solution hardly meets the requirements of the case. Mark puts his *third* hour at the beginning of the crucifixion, and John his *sixth* hour at the beginning of the last trial. This reconciliation does not reconcile.

6. The most satisfactory solution of the difficulty is to be found in the idea that John here uses the Roman computation of time, from midnight to noon and noon to midnight, just as we do now. Hence the sixth hour would be our six o'clock in the morning. If this hour was the beginning of the last trial of Jesus, we then have enough, but not too much, time for the completion of the trial, the carrying away of Jesus outside the city walls, together with the procuring of the crosses, etc. All the events, moreover, narrated by the Evangelists, could have occurred between dawn (John 18:27) and six or seven.

For a long time it was doubted whether the Romans ever used this method of computing time for civil days. Farrar vehemently opposes this idea. But Plutarch, Pliny, Aulus Gellius, and Macrobius expressly say that the Roman civil day was reckoned from midnight to midnight. So the question of fact may be considered as settled. The only remaining question is whether John used this mode of reckoning. Of course, the Romans had also the natural day and the natural night just as we do now. In favor of the idea that John uses the Roman way of counting the hours in the civil day, several things may be said.

(a) He wrote the Gospel late in the century, probably in Asia Minor, long after the destruction of Jerusalem, when the Jewish method would not likely be preserved. Roman ideas were prevalent in Asia Minor. John evidently is not writing for the Jews primarily, since he constantly speaks of "the Jews" as outsiders. John is writing to be understood by the people, and this is the way it would be understood in Asia Minor.

(b) All the passages in John, where the hour is mentioned, allow this computation. John 1:39 would be 10 A.M.; 4:6f. would be 6 P.M., counting from noon also (as we do). This hour suits best the circumstances. In the evening the women would come to get water, Jesus would have time for his journey thither, and would be tired and hungry. In John 4:52 the hour would be 7 P.M. This hour likewise suits the circumstances better. John 11:9, Are there not twelve hours in the day? is not against this idea, since here obviously the natural day, as opposed to night, is meant. The Romans used both methods and so do we.

(c) Moreover, one passage in John (20:19), when compared with Luke 24:29,36, makes it necessary to understand that John used the Roman method in this instance. It was toward evening, and the day had declined, according to Luke, when Jesus and the disciples drew near to Emmaus. Here he ate supper and, "rising up that very hour," the disciples returned seven miles to Jerusalem and told these things to the eleven who were together. But while they were narrating these things Jesus appeared to them. Now John, in mentioning this very appearance of Jesus (20:19) says that it "was evening on *that day*, the first day of the week," *i. e.*, evening of the day when Mary Magdalene had seen the Lord. But with the Jews the evening began the day. Hence John, here at least, is *bound* to mean the Roman day. It was the evening of the same day in the morning of which Mary had seen Jesus. This appears conclusive. John did use the Roman method here, may have done so always, almost certainly did so in 19:14. Besides, as McClellan shows, the natural meaning of John's phrase is that it was the sixth hour of the Friday (Preparation) of the Passover. But we have just seen that John in 20:19 counts according to the Roman day. Hence the sixth hour of Friday would be six o'clock in the morning.

This is the only solution that really harmonizes John and Mark. The rest make the hours agree, but the hours bring together different events. This method harmonizes the whole narrative, and seems entirely probable. So substantially Greswell, McClellan, Ebrard, Tischendorf, Tholuck, Wieseler, Broadus, Gardiner, Clark, Andrews (new edition), and others.

Prof. W. M. Ramsay, in *The Expositor* for March, 1893, contends that Mark and John are at variance, but that it is of small moment, since the ancients had little notion about hours. He seeks to show that the martyrdom of Polycarp and Pronius, usually relied on to prove that in Asia Minor the hours were counted from midnight, took place in the afternoon, instead of the morning, the usual time. Hence the eighth and tenth hours respectively would be 2 P.M. and 4 P.M. But his arguments are not sufficient to set aside the established custom in such cases. He claims, moreover, that the Roman civil day was just a day and was not divided into hours. But this is mere assertion, and would besides be an anomaly. How else could divisions of time be marked in the civil day?

#### § 134. THE TIME OF THE RESURRECTION OF CHRIST.

1. Mark, Luke, and John say that the resurrection had taken place early on the first day of the week, *i. e.* early Sunday morning. Mark (16:9) says that Jesus, "having risen early, on the first day of the week,



appeared, etc." The position of "early" is ambiguous in the Greek and the passage is disputed. Mark (16:2) states that it was very early on the first day of the week, the sun having risen, when the women came to the sepulchre. Luke (24:1) says that the women came to the tomb at early dawn on the first day of the week. John (20:1) says that Mary Magdalene came to the tomb in the morning on the first day of the week. So then, there is no doubt that these three Evangelists mean to say that Jesus rose very early on Sunday morning, and that shortly after that event came the two Marys and some other women to anoint his body with spices.

Sceptics make objection to some of the details in the accounts of Mark and John especially as being inconsistent. John (20:1) says that Mary comes while it is yet dark, while Mark says (16:2) that the sun was risen. But Mark also says in the same verse that it was very early, which would agree with John's statement that it was yet dark. Hence Mark's other statement, that the sun was risen, must be interpreted in the light of his own words. Two solutions can be offered.

(a) We may suppose, as McClellan and others, that John's note of time refers to the starting from Bethany, while it was yet dark or very early (Mark). In a few minutes it would be early dawn (Luke), and by the time the women come to the tomb, the sun would be up. All this is entirely possible and looks even probable, for in the twilight of early dawn, the border line is very narrow between darkness and sunrise. A stiff morning walk would pass through all the stages. It all depends on where you take your stand in this fleeting interim. Mark covers both sides and so includes it all from the first glimmering light till the full light of day.

(b) Or the expression, "the sun was risen" (aorist participle), may simply be a general expression applicable to the phenomena of sunrise. The first gleam of daylight comes from the rising sun, though not yet completely risen. So Robinson, Ellicott, Clark. Robinson gives several examples from the Septuagint, where the same phrase is used in the aorist tense in a general way for the dawning light of day (Judges 9:33; 2 Kings 3:22; Ps. 104:22). Either of these explanations is entirely possible and removes the difficulty.

2. But Matthew seems to put the resurrection on the evening after the Sabbath, our Saturday evening. He says (28:1), "But late on the Sabbath day, as it was dawning into the first day of the week, came Mary Magdalene and the other Mary to view the sepulchre." If this passage means that the visit was made at the end of the Sabbath day (evening) and after the resurrection of Jesus, then Matthew is in plain contradiction to the other Evangelists. Some have taken the position that Jesus



rose at sunset on the Sabbath day, forgetting that Mark (16:9) says that he rose early in the morning. There are several ways of reconciling Matthew with the other gospels.

(a) Greswell, Alford and others would translate "late on the Sabbath day" by "late in the week." The Greek word is the same in this verse for Sabbath and week. In both cases, therefore, the translation could be the same. But little sense would result from this translation. "Late in the week" and "dawning into the first day of the week" hardly fit well. By this explanation the latter expression is used for the first part of Sunday, and the visit occurred in this dawning part of the day.

(b) Others would translate "late on the Sabbath day" by "after the Sabbath day." Godet, Grimm and others contend that the Greek idiom could mean this, and it is so translated by several English translators such as Newcome, Sharpe, Wakefield, Norton, etc. But it is extremely doubtful whether the Greek will permit such a rendering. So it seems that we must choose between the two following explanations.

(c) Matthew does not clearly say that this visit was made after the resurrection of the Saviour although his words may mean that. Hence the words may have their natural meaning. Late in the Sabbath day, about sundown say, the two Marys go to view the sepulchre (Matt. 28:1), having rested through the day (Luke 23:56). The women who had come with Jesus from Galilee had gone thither on Friday, after his burial, to see where he was laid and had prepared spices. If they went at nightfall at the close of the Sabbath (Matt. 28:1) "to see the sepulchre," they could have bought spices after sundown (Mark 16:1). Then (Mark 16:2) in the early morning, they rose and took the spices and went to anoint his body. It was then that they saw the angel (Matt. 28:5). Matthew does not say that in the visit of 28:1 the angel appeared to them. He speaks of the earthquake having come, and the resurrection, and then resumes. This view gains some support from the use of the same Greek word in Luke 23:54, "And it was the day of the Preparation (Friday) and the Sabbath drew on (was dawning)." Here the meaning seems to be that the Sabbath *dawned* at the close of the day. So Westcott, McClellan and others. However it may be about the visit of the women in Matt. 28:1, Matthew certainly does not mean to say that Jesus rose at sunset on the Sabbath. The whole course of his narrative in the rest of the chapter shows that it was the morning of Sunday when the angel appeared. While (Matt. 28:11) the women went to the disciples, the soldiers ran to the chief priests (Matt. 28:13) and said that the disciples came by *night* and stole him while they slept, clearly implying that it was now day. Hence Matthew does not teach that Jesus rose at sunset, but the reverse. Besides, Matthew expressly

says that Jesus rose on the third day, which would not be true, if he rose on the Sabbath.

(d) Sabbath day may be used of the day followed by the night, according to popular reckoning prevailing in the Saviour's time. The Jews originally counted from evening to evening, but this custom did not prevail universally. Jonah (1:17) and Matthew (12:40) speak of three days and three nights, following the day by the night. Meyer, Morison, Clark and others hold this view, and it is possible at least, but hardly so satisfactory as the view of McClellan above. At any rate, it remains clear that Matthew agrees with the other Evangelists in putting the resurrection of Jesus Sunday morning. The chief point of difficulty is Matthew's visit of the women in 28:1, whether this was in the evening before simply "to view the sepulchre," or in the morning to anoint the body of the Saviour. The condensed account of Matthew leaves this question unsettled, and there we too shall have to leave it. And this last matter does not affect the question as to the time of the Lord's resurrection, but only the number of the visits made by the women.

### § 134. THE LENGTH OF OUR LORD'S STAY IN THE TOMB.

Quite an effort is made in some quarters to show that Jesus remained in the tomb seventy-two hours, three full days and nights. There are three sets of expressions used about the matter, besides the express statements of the Gospels about the days of the crucifixion and resurrection. Let us examine these lines of evidence.

1. Luke settles the matter pointedly by mentioning all the time between the crucifixion and the resurrection (Luke 23:50-24:3). The burial took place Friday afternoon just before the Sabbath drew on (Luke 23:54). The women rested on the Sabbath (Saturday) (Luke 23:56), and went to the sepulchre early Sunday morning, the first day of the week (Luke 24:1). There is no escaping this piece of chronology. This is all the time there was between the two events. Jesus then lay in the tomb from late in the afternoon of Friday till early Sunday morning. The other Gospels agree with this reckoning of the time, as we have already seen.

2. But how about the prediction of Jesus, repeatedly made, and once illustrated by the case of Jonah, that he would rise after three days? Are two nights and a day and two pieces of days three days? Let us see.

(a) The well-known custom of the Jews was to count a part of a day as a whole day of twenty-four hours. Hence a part of a day or night would be counted as a whole day, the term day obviously having two senses, as night and day, or day contrasted with night. So then the part of Friday

would count as one day, Saturday another, and the part of Sunday the third day. This method of reckoning gives no trouble to a Jew.

(b) Besides, the phrase "on the third day" is obliged to mean that the resurrection took place on that day, for, if it occurred after the third day, it would be on the fourth day and not on the third. Now it so happens that this term "third day" is applied *seven* times to the resurrection of Christ (Matt. 16:21; Matt. 17:23; Matt. 20:19; Luke 24:7, 21, 46; I. Cor. 15:4). These numerous passages of Scripture, both prophecy and statement of history, agree with the record of the fact that Jesus did rise on the third day. (Lu. 24:7.)

(c) Moreover, the phrase "after three days" is used by the same writers (Matthew and Luke) in connection with the former one, "the third day," as meaning the same thing. Hence the definite and clear expression must explain the one that is less so. The chief priests and Pharisees remember (Matt. 27:63) that Jesus said, after three days I rise again. Hence they urge Pilate to keep a guard over the tomb until the *third day* (Matt. 27:64). This is their own interpretation of the Saviour's words. Besides, in parallel passages in the different Gospels, one will have one expression and another the other, naturally suggesting that they regarded them as equivalent. (Cf. Mark 9:31 with Matt. 16:21, Luke 9:22 with Mark 10:34.) On the third day cannot mean three whole days, while after three days can be used as meaning parts of the first and third days.

(d) Matthew 12:40 is urged as conclusive the other way. But the "three days and three nights" may be nothing more than a longer way of saying three days, using day in its long sense. And we have already seen that the Jews counted any part of this full day (day and night) as a whole day (day and night). Hence this passage may mean nothing more than the common "after three days" above mentioned, and, like that expression, must be interpreted in accordance with the definite term "on the third day" and with the clear chronological data given by Luke and the rest. They seemed to be conscious of no discrepancy in these various expressions. Most likely they understood them as well as we do at any rate.

## APPENDIX A.

### ANALYSIS OF THE GOSPELS BY DR. BROADUS.

These Analyses are made chiefly according to external relations of place and time, with a view to studies in Gospel Harmony, and are brief, so as to be easily committed to memory. An Analysis according to the development of characteristic ideas would be quite different.

#### GOSPEL OF MATTHEW.

- I. Birth and infancy of Christ. I., II.
- II. Circumstances preparatory to his public ministry. III.—IV., 11.
- III. Ministry in Galilee. IV., 12—XVIII.
  1. Teaching about Galilee, call of certain disciples, general mention of miracles. IV., 12—end.
  2. Sermon on the Mount. V.—VII.
  3. Series of Miracles. VIII., IX.
  4. Mission of the Twelve. X.
  5. Message from John, etc. XI.
  6. Opposition (Sabbath, Beelzebub, kindred). XII.
  7. Series of Parables. XIII.
  8. Withdrawals (Across the lake, Tyre and Sidon, Decapolis, Cæsarea Philippi,—Transfiguration), and final teachings in Galilee. XIV.—XVIII.
- IV. Journeying to Jerusalem. XIX., XX.
- V. Triumphal entry, teaching in the temple, discourse on the Mount of Olives. XXI.—XXV.
- VI. Passion. XXVI., XXVII.
- VII. Resurrection and appearances. XXVIII.

#### Leading Peculiarities.

- (1) Designed especially for Jewish readers, to prove that Jesus of Nazareth is the Messiah, and to give correct ideas of the Messianic reign—hence many allusions to Old Test. prophecies as fulfilled (quotations from O. T., Mt. about 41, Mr. 21, Lu. 22, Jo. 16)—and to kingdom (or reign) of heaven—genealogy begins with Abraham.
- (2) Consists very largely of *Discourses*.



- (3) In narrating events, often speaks *generally*, without descending to particulars—often arranges topically, rather than chronologically (particularly from 4:12 to end of chap. 13)—“not merely a history, but a historical argument.” (Alexander.)
- (4) Style simple, without remarkable peculiarities—frequent use of “then.”

### Illustration of the Peculiarities.

Comp. Westcott's Introduction to the Study of the Gospels; Gregory, “Why Four Gospels?” etc.

- (1) Mt. alone has the phrase, “gospel of the kingdom,” and Christ speaking of himself as “king” (25:34). He has “kingdom of heaven” 32 times, the other Gospels saying only “kingdom of God.” He has “Father in heaven” 15 times, Mr. 2, Lu. 0. He calls Jerusalem “the holy city” 3 times, the others never. He *himself* makes 10 quotations from Old Test., Mr. 1. He alone mentions the Magi coming to do homage to the *king* of the Jews. The parables in Mt. all refer to the Messianic reign, in its beginning, spread, or consummation, while most of them in Lu. apply only to individuals. The Sermon on the Mount is for Lu. only one of many discourses, while in Mt. it is the great discourse, introduced as early as possible, and reported at length—showing the true nature of the Messianic reign, and the relation of Christ's teaching to the moral law, and to current Jewish opinions and practices. Mt. gives no explanations of Jewish customs, like Mr. 7:2–5, or of the topography of Judea, like Lu. 2:4–13, or of the enmity of the Jews to the Samaritans, like Jo. 4:4, 10.

## GOSPEL OF MARK.

### Analysis.

- I. Circumstances preparatory to the public ministry. I., 1–13.
- II. Ministry in Galilee. I., 14–IX.
  1. Preaching, call of certain disciples, various miracles. I., 14–end.
  2. Opposition encountered (charge of forgiving sins—of keeping company with sinners—Sabbath, Beelzebub and kindred). II., III.
  3. Parables (3). IV.
  4. Various miracles, and mission of the Twelve. V.—VI, 13.
  5. Withdrawals, viz.: Across the lake—Tyre and Sidon—Decapolis, Cæsarea Philippi (Transfiguration). VI., 14–IX.
- III. Journeying to Jerusalem. X.
- IV. Triumphal entry, teaching in the temple, and discourse on the Mount of Olives. XI.—XIII.
- V. Passion. XIV.. XV.
- VI. Resurrection, three appearances, ascension. XVI.



## Leading Peculiarities.

- (1) Shortest, Mt. 63 pages (Rev. Test.), Mr. 39, Lu. 66, Jo. 49.
- (2) Designed especially for Gentiles.
- (3) Gives our Lord's *actions* more than his *sayings*, (e. g. nearly as many miracles as Mt. or Lu., but only four parables).
- (4) Contains only some twenty-three verses of matter wholly wanting in Mt. and Lu.—but gives a multitude of minute, and often vivid, details. Thus thoroughly independent.
- (5) Chronological, almost uniformly.
- (6) Style animated and pictorial—somewhat numerous Latin words—Aramaic words used by Jesus—favorite expressions, as *straightway* (immediately, etc.).

## Illustration of Peculiarities.

- (1) Take care not to judge of the comparative length by the number of chapters.
- (2) Explanations given that were quite unnecessary for Jews 7:1-4; 13:3; 14:1,12; 15:42. The word "law" does not occur.
- (3) Notice at the beginning how *rapidly* he comes to the active ministry of our Lord, how promptly he brings us into the midst of miracles and opposition. The fourth parable is in 12:1 ff.
- (4) The principal matters given by Mr. *alone* are in 3:20 f.; 4:26-29; 7:31-7; 8:22-26; 14:51 f.
- (5) Vivid details in 1:13,15,20,35; 2:27; 3:5; 4:37f.; 5:5,13; 6:3,20,21,23-5,33,40,48; 7:31; 9:14,16,21-29,39; 10:46,50; 11:17,24; 12:41f.; 13:3,32; 14:3,30,37; 15:21,24. Repeated descriptions of our Lord's *looks and feelings* (in Mr. *alone*) 3:5,34; 5:32; 6:6; 7:34; 10:21,23; 11:11, etc. Notice how often he uses the Greek imperfect tense where Mt. and Lu. have the aorist. After the fall of Peter the vivid touches are rare.

## GOSPEL OF LUKE.

- I. Birth and childhood of John the Baptist, and of Jesus. I., II.
- II. Events preparatory to public ministry. III.—IV., 13.
- III. Ministry in Galilee. IV., 14—IX., 50.
  1. Nazareth, Capernaum, teaching about Galilee, disciples. IV., 14—V., 16.
  2. Opposition (forgiving sins, companying with sinners, Sabbath). V., 17—VI., 11.
  3. Choice of the Twelve, and Sermon on the Mount. VI., 12—end.
  4. Teaching and miracles—message from John—the sower—other miracles. VII., VIII.
  5. Mission of the Twelve—withdrawals (Across the lake, Cæsarea Philippi, and Transfiguration). IX., 1—50.

- IV. Teaching after leaving Galilee, up to Triumphal entry. IX., 51—XIX., 27.
1. On his way to Feast of Tabernacles. IX., 51—end.
  2. Between Tabernacles and Dedication. X.—XIII., 10.
  3. Between Dedication and raising of Lazarus. XIII., 11—XVII., 10.
  4. Final journey to Jerusalem (cf. Mt. and Mr.) XVII., 11—XIX., 27.
- V. Triumphal entry, teaching in the temple, discourse on the Mount of Olives. XXI., 28—XXI.
- VI. Passion. XXII., XXIII.
- VII. Resurrection, appearances, ascension. XXIV.

#### Leading Peculiarities.

- (1) Longest of the Gospels—contains much matter that is peculiar to him, particularly in Div. I. and IV.
- (2) Written for all, whether Jews or Gentiles—genealogy going back to Adam—dates referred to reigns of Emperors.
- (3) Of special *topics*, frequent allusion to our Lord's praying—Christ, the perfect man, and the Saviour of all men.
- (4) Not long discourses, but great number of conversations, parables, etc.
- (5) Style less Hebraistic (except in ch. I., II.), and more elaborate, than the others—style of an educated man (physician).

#### Synopsis of Mt., Mr. and Lu.

	MATTHEW.	MARK.	LUKE.	COMP. JOHN.
Birth and Infancy.....	1 and 2	.....	1 and 2	.....
Circumstances preparatory to public ministry.....	3—4:11	1:1—13	3—4:13	.....
Ministry in Galilee .....	4:12 to 13	1:14 to 9	4:14 to 9:50	(6:1—21)
Last six months of public ministry.....	19 and 20	10	9:51 to 19:27	(7 to 11)
Triumphal Entry, and teachings at Jerusalem.....	21 to 25	11 to 13	19:28 to 21	(12:1—16)
Passion.....	26 and 27	14 and 15	22 and 23	(18 and 19)
Resurrection, appearances, etc.....	28	16	24	(20 and 21)

## GOSPEL OF JOHN.

- I. General introduction. I., 1—18.
- II. Early labors of our Lord. I., 19—IV.  
     Testimony of John, and first call of certain disciples—marriage  
     at Cana—first Passover (Nicodemus), and labors in Judea—  
     journey by Sychar to Galilee.
- III. Discourses to the Jews on his character and mission, with the con-  
     nected events. V.—XII.
  - 1. Man at the pool of Bethesda, and discourse. V.
  - 2. Feeding the five thousand, and discourse on the bread of  
     life. VI.
  - 3. Feast of Tabernacles, and teachings then and soon after.  
     VII.—X., 21.
  - 4. Feast of Dedication—asked whether he is Messiah—retires to  
     Perea. X., 22—end.
  - 5. Raises Lazarus, and retires again to Ephraim. XI.
  - 6. Arrival at Bethany, triumphal entry, application of the Greeks  
     and discourse. XII.
- IV. Paschal Supper and farewell discourse. XIII.—XVII.
- V. Passion. XVIII., XIX.
- VI. Resurrection and various appearances. XX., XXI.

## Leading Peculiarities.

- (1) Designed to correct errors prevalent towards the close of the first  
 century, by bringing out a class of Christ's teachings not pre-  
 viously so much insisted on. (Luthardt.) E. g. (1) True nature  
 of Christ, as the Eternal Word. (2) Testimony of John the Bap-  
 tist to Jesus. (3) Minute details concerning death and resurrection  
 of Jesus, many questions having arisen as to the reality of these.  
 (4) Fact that Christ's death was voluntary, and that it constitutes  
 his true glorification. (5) Authority of Apostolic teachings estab-  
 lished by account of the Comforter.
- (2) Contains nothing that is found in the others, except feeding the five  
 thousand, the triumphal entry, the supper at Bethany, and some  
 details of the Passion and Resurrection.
- (3) Though chiefly occupied with discourses, gives several singularly  
 beautiful narratives, chap. 1, 2, 4, 11, 21.
- (4) Mentions the feasts which mark the duration of our Lord's min-  
 istry (especially four Passovers, including 5:1).

- (5) Style—short sentences—frequently states an idea first positively, then negatively—"verily, verily"—certain terms frequently recurring, as light and darkness, the truth and falsehood, love, the world, eternal life (similarly in Epistles of John).

#### Illustration of the Peculiarities.

- (2) *Matters* given by John alone: Division II throughout; division III, 1, 3, 4, 5 (in 6, application of the Greeks); division IV., feet-washing; most of the facts recorded in divisions V and VI.
- (3) John gives no *parables*, but several expanded metaphors that approach the parable, as the good shepherd, the true vine, etc. He makes no mention of demoniacal possessions.

## APPENDIX B.

### A LIST OF THE PARABLES OF JESUS.

The Sign of the Temple, page 20, § 21.

The Physician, page 33, § 34.

The Parables about the New Dispensation, page 35, § 34.

The Blind Guiding the Blind, The Mote and the Beam, page 50, § 42 (f).

The Wise and Foolish Builders, page 52, § 42 (i).

The Children in the Market Place, page 55, § 45.

The Two Debtors, page 56, § 46.

Parables about Satan's Kingdom, page 58, § 48.

The Unclean Spirit that Returned, page 59, § 49.

The Sower, pages 61-63, § 51 (a).

The Seed Growing of Itself, page 64, § 51 (b).

The Tares, pages 64 and 65, § 51 (c, e).

The Mustard Seed, page 64 f., § 51 (d).

The Leaven, page 65, § 51 (d).

The Hid Treasure, page 65, § 51 (e).

The Pearl of Great Price, page 66, § 51 (e).

The Net, page 66, § 51 (e).

The Scribe, page 66, § 51 (e).

The Parable of Corban, page 84, § 60.

The Unmerciful Servant, page 101, § 71.

The Good Shepherd, page 109 f., § 79.

The Good Samaritan, page 112, § 81.

- The Importunate Friend, page 113, § 83.  
 The Rich Fool, page 116, § 86.  
 The Waiting Servants, page 117, § 86.  
 The Fig Tree, page 118, § 87.  
 Seats at Feasts, page 121, § 91.  
 The Great Supper, page 121 f., § 91.  
 The Tower and the King, page 122, § 92.  
 The Lost Sheep, page 123, § 93.  
 The Lost Coin, page 123, § 93.  
 The Lost Son, page 123 f., § 93.  
 The Unrighteous Steward, page 124, § 93.  
 The Rich Man and Lazarus, page 124 f., § 93.  
 Unprofitable Servants, page 125, § 93.  
 The Pharisee and the Publican, page 129, § 97.  
 The Importunate Widow, page 129, § 97.  
 The Laborers in the Vineyard, page 134, § 100.  
 The Pounds, page 138, § 103.  
 The Two Sons, page 148, § 109.  
 The Wicked Husbandmen, page 149 f., § 109.  
 The Rejected Stone, page 150, § 109.  
 The Marriage Feast and the Wedding Garment, page 151 f., § 109.  
 The Porter, page 166, § 115.  
 The Good Man and the Thief, page 166, § 115, cf. page 117, § 86.  
 The Wise Servant, page 166, § 166.  
 The Ten Virgins, page 167, § 116.  
 The Talents, page 167 f., § 116

## APPENDIX C.

## A LIST OF THE MIRACLES OF JESUS.

- The Water Made Wine, page 19, § 19.  
 The Courtier's Son, page 26, § 25.  
 The First Draught of Fishes, page 28, § 27.  
 The Capernaum Demoniac, page 28, § 28.  
 Simon's Mother-in-law, page 29, § 29.  
 A Leper, page 31, § 31.  
 The Paralytic, page 32 f., § 32.  
 The Woman with an Issue of Blood, page 37, § 35.



- Jairus' Daughter, page 38, § 35.  
 Two Blind Men, page 39, § 36.  
 A Dumb Demoniac, page 39, § 36.  
 The Impotent Man, page 40, § 37.  
 The Man with a Withered Hand, page 43, § 39.  
 The Centurion's Servant, page 52 f., § 43.  
 The Widow's Son, page 53 f., § 44.  
 A Blind and Dumb Man, page 57 f., § 48.  
 The Stilling of the Storm, page 66 f., § 52.  
 The Gadarene Demoniacs, page 67, § 53.  
 The Five Thousand Fed, page 77 f., § 57.  
 Jesus Walking on the Water, page 79, § 58.  
 The Phœnician Woman's Daughter, page 85 f., § 61.  
 The Deaf and Dumb Man, page 86, § 62.  
 The Four Thousand Fed, page 87, § 62.  
 A Blind Man Healed, page 89, § 63.  
 The Demoniac Boy, page 94 f., § 67.  
 The Shekel in the Fish's Mouth, page 97, § 69.  
 The Man Born Blind, page 108 f., § 78.  
 The Woman with an Infirmary, page 118 f., § 88.  
 The Man with the Dropsy, page 121, § 91.  
 The Raising of Lazarus, page 126 f., § 94.  
 The Ten Lepers, page 128, § 96.  
 Blind Bartimæus and His Companion, page 137, § 102.  
 The Fig Tree Cursed, page 144, § 106.  
 Malchus' Ear, page 188, § 124.  
 The Second Draught of Fishes, page 226 f., § 140.  
 Besides these particular miracles numerous general groups must be added, as Mark 6:56; Matt. 9:35 f.; Luke 4:40 f.; 5:15 f.; 6:17-19; John 2:23; 3:2; 4:45; 20:30; 21:25.

## APPENDIX D.

### LIST OF THE OLD TESTAMENT QUOTATIONS IN THE GOSPELS.

- Matt. 1:23, from Isaiah 7:14, page 7.  
 " 2: 6, " Micah 5:1 f., page 9.  
 " 2:15, " Hos. 11:1, page 10.

- Matt. 2:18, from Jer. 31:15, page 10.
- “ 3: 3, “ Isai. 40:3, page 12.
- “ 3:17, “ Isai. 42:1, page 15.
- “ 4: 4, “ Deut. 8:3, page 16.
- “ 4: 6, “ Ps. 91:11, page 16.
- “ 4: 7, “ Deut. 6:16, page 16.
- “ 4:10, “ Deut. 6:13, page 16.
- “ 4:15, “ Isai. 8:23; 9:1 f., page 27.
- “ 5: 4, “ Isai. 61:2, page 46.
- “ 5: 5, “ Ps. 37:11, page 46.
- “ 5: 6, “ Ps. 55, page 46.
- “ 5: 7, “ Ps. 18:26; Prov. 11:17, page 46.
- “ 5: 8, “ Ps. 24:3-5, page 46.
- “ 5:21, “ Ex. 20:13; Deut. 5:17, page 46.
- “ 5:27, “ Ex. 20:14; Deut. 5:18, page 46.
- “ 5:31, “ Deut. 24:1, page 46.
- “ 5:33, “ Ex. 20:7; Numb. 30:2; Lev. 19:12; Deut. 23:21, page 46.
- “ 5:38, “ Ex. 21:24, page 46.
- “ 5:43, “ Lev. 19:18, page 46.
- “ 8:17, “ Isai. 53:4, page 29.
- “ 9:13, “ Hos. 6:6, page 34.
- “ 11:10, “ Mal. 3:1, page 54.
- “ 11:23, “ Isai. 14:13-15, page 54.
- “ 12: 7, “ Hos. 6:6, page 41.
- “ 12:18-21 “ Isai. 42:1-4, page 44.
- “ 13:14,15 “ Isai. 6:9, 10, page 61.
- “ 13:32, “ Dan. 4:9, page 64.
- “ 13:35, “ Ps. 78:2, page 64.
- “ 15: 4, “ Ex. 20:12; 21:17, page 83.
- “ 15:8,9, “ Isai. 29:13, page 83.
- “ 16:27, “ Prov. 24:12, page 91.
- “ 17: 5, “ Isai. 42:1, page 92.
- “ 18:16, “ Deut. 19:15, page 100.
- “ 19: 4, “ Gen. 1:27; 5:2, page 129.
- “ 19: 5, “ Gen. 2:24, page 129.
- “ 19: 7, “ Deut. 24:1, page 129.
- “ 19:18, “ Ex. 20:12, 13, 14; 21:17; Deut. 5:19, 20, page 132.
- “ 19:19, “ Lev. 19:18; Ex. 20:12, page 132.
- “ 19:26, “ Gen. 18:14, page 132.
- “ 21: 5, “ Zech. 9:9, page 140.
- “ 21: 9, “ Ps. 118:26, page 140.
- “ 21:13, “ Isai. 56:7; Jer. 7:11, page 144.

Matt. 21:16, from Ps. 8:3, page 143.

- “ 21:33, “ Isai. 5:1 f., page 147.
- “ 21:42, “ Ps. 118:22, page 147.
- “ 21:44, “ Isai. 8:14, page 147.
- “ 22:24, “ Deut. 25:5, page 153.
- “ 22:32, “ Ex. 3:6, 15, page 153.
- “ 22:37, “ Deut. 6:5, page 155.
- “ 22:39, “ Lev. 19:18, page 155.
- “ 22:44, “ Ps. 110:1, page 155.
- “ 23:38, “ Ps. 118:26, page 156.
- “ 24:15, “ Dan. 9:27, page 160.
- “ 24:21, “ Dan. 12:1, page 160.
- “ 24:29, “ Dan. 8:10; Joel 4:16, page 160.
- “ 24:30, “ Dan. 7:13, page 160.
- “ 26:31, “ Zech. 13:7, page 176.
- “ 26:64, “ Dan. 7:13, page 190.
- “ 27:9,10, “ Jer. 32:6, page 197.
- “ 27:35, “ Ps. 22:19, page 209.
- “ 27:46, “ Ps. 22:2, page 212.

Mark 1: 2, “ Mal. 3:1; Is. 40:3, page 12.

- “ 1: 3, “ Isai. 40:3, page 12.
- “ 4:12, “ Isai. 6:9, 10, page 61.
- “ 4:32, “ Dan. 4:9, page 64.
- “ 7:6,7, “ Isai. 29:13, page 83.
- “ 7:10, “ Ex. 20:12; 21:17; Deut. 5:6, page 83.
- “ 8:18, “ Isai. 6:9, 10, page 88.
- “ 9:48, “ Isai. 66:24, page 98.
- “ 10: 4, “ Deut. 24:1, page 129.
- “ 10: 6, “ Gen. 1:27; 5:2, page 129,
- “ 10:7,8, “ Gen. 2:24, page 129.
- “ 10:19, “ Ex. 20:12-17; Deut. 5:16-21, page 132.
- “ 10:27, “ Gen. 18:14, page 132.
- “ 11: 9, “ Ps. 118:26, page 140.
- “ 12: 2, “ Isai. 5:1 f., page 149.
- “ 12:10,11 “ Ps. 118:22 f., page 149.
- “ 12:19, “ Deut. 25:5, 6, page 153.
- “ 12:31, “ Lev. 19:18, page 155.
- “ 12:36, “ Ps. 8:7; 110:1, page 155.
- “ 13:12, “ Mic. 7:6, page 160.
- “ 13:14, “ Dan. 9:27, page 160.
- “ 13:19, “ Dan. 12:1, page 160.
- “ 13:24, “ Dan. 8:10; Eccl. 12:2; Joel 4:16, page 160.

- Mark 13:26, from Dan. 7:13, page 160.  
 " 14:27, " Zech. 13:7, page 176.  
 " 14:34, " Ps. 42:6, page 184.  
 " 14:62, " Dan. 7:13, page 190.  
 Luke 1:17, " Mal. 3:1, 23, 24, page 3.  
 " 1:37, " Gen. 18:14, page 5.  
 " 1:46 f., " 1 Sam. 2:1, page 5.  
 " 1:48, " 1 Sam. 1:11, page 5.  
 " 1:49, " 1 Sam. 2:2, page 5.  
 " 1:50, " Ps. 103:17, page 5.  
 " 1:51, " 1 Sam. 2:4, page 5.  
 " 1:52, " 1 Sam. 2:7, page 5.  
 " 1:53, " 1 Sam. 2:5, page 5.  
 " 1:54, " Isai. 41:8-14, page 5.  
 " 1:68, " Ps. 106:48, page 6.  
 " 1:69, " Ps. 18:3, page 6.  
 " 1:71, " Ps. 18:4, page 6.  
 " 1:76, " Mal. 3:1, page 6.  
 " 1:78, " Mal. 3:20, page 6.  
 " 1:79, " Isai. 8:23; 9:1, page 6.  
 " 2:23 f., " Ex. 13:2, 12, page 8.  
 " 3:4-6, " Isai. 40:3-5, page 12.  
 " 4: 4, " Deut. 8:3, page 16.  
 " 4: 8, " Deut. 6:13, page 16.  
 " 4:10 f., " Ps. 91:11, page 16.  
 " 4:12, " Deut. 6:16, page 16.  
 " 4:18 f., " Isai. 61:1 f., page 26.  
 " 6:21, " Isai. 61:2, page 46.  
 " 7:27, " Mal. 3:1, page 54.  
 " 8:10, " Isai. 6:9 f., page 61.  
 " 10:25, " Isai. 14:13-15, page 111.  
 " 10:27, " Lev. 19:18; Deut. 6:4 f., page 111.  
 " 12:53, " Mic. 7:6, page 115.  
 " 18:20, " Ex. 20:12-17; Deut. 5:16-21, page 132.  
 " 19:38, " Ps. 118:26, page 140.  
 " 19:46, " Isai. 56:7; Jer. 7:11, page 144.  
 " 20: 9, " Isai. 5:1 f., page 147.  
 " 20:17, " Ps. 118:22 f., page 147.  
 " 20:18, " Isai. 8:14, page 147.  
 " 20:28, " Deut. 25:5 f., page 153.  
 " 20:42 f., " Ps. 110:1; Ps. 8:7, page 156.  
 " 21:20, " Dan. 9:27, page 160.

- Luke 21:22, from Dan. 12:1, page 160.  
 " 21:25 f, " Dan. 8:10; Joel 4:16, page 160.  
 " 21:27, " Dan. 7:13, page 160.  
 " 22:37, " Isai. 53:12, page 176.  
 " 22:69, " Dan. 7:13, page 195.  
 " 23:46, " Ps. 31:6, page 212.  
 John 1:23, " Isai. 40:3, page 18.  
 " 1:29, " Isai. 53:4, page 18.  
 " 1:51, " Gen. 28:12, page 18.  
 " 2:17, " Ps. 69:10, page 20.  
 " 6:31, " Ps. 78:24, page 81.  
 " 7:38, " Prov. 18:4, page 104.  
 " 7:42, " 2 Sam. 7:12; Is. 11:1, page 104.  
 " 8:17, " Deut. 19:15, page 106.  
 " 8:39, " Isai. 6:9 f., page 108.  
 " 10:34, " Ps. 82:6, page 119.  
 " 12:13, " Ps. 118:26, page 141.  
 " 12:14 f, " Zech. 9:9, page 141.  
 " 12:27, " Ps. 42:7, page 145.  
 " 12:38, " Isai. 53:1, page 145.  
 " 12:40, " Isai, 6:9 f., page 145.  
 " 13:18, " Ps. 41:10, page 174.  
 " 15:25, " Ps. 69:5, page 180.  
 " 19:24, " Ps. 22:19, page 209.  
 " 19:36, " Ex. 12:46; Ps. 34:21, page 215.  
 " 19:37, " Zech. 12:10, page 215.

## APPENDIX E.

### A LIST OF SOME UNCANONICAL SAYINGS OF JESUS.

Some of the more important reported sayings of Christ are given which are not found in the Gospels or Acts; whether true words of the Master or not, it is not known. Some certainly are not like the Spirit of Christ, but it will be of service to the student to compare them with the genuine Words of Jesus in our Gospels. The Apocryphal Gospels are passed by as not worth using in this list.

#### 1. The Logia of Jesus (Grenfell and Hunt):

Jesus saith: Except ye fast to the world, ye shall in no wise find the Kingdom of God; and except ye keep the Sabbath, ye shall not see the Father.



Jesus saith: I stood in the midst of the world, and in the flesh was I seen of them, and I found all men drunken, and none found I athirst among them, and my soul grieveth over the sons of men because they are blind in their heart.

Jesus saith: Wherever there are . . . and there is one . . . alone, I am with him. Raise the stone and there thou shalt find me, cleave the wood and there am I.

Jesus saith: A prophet is not acceptable in his own country, neither doth a physician work cures upon them that know him.

Jesus saith: A city built upon the top of a high hill and stablished, can neither fall nor be hid.

## 2. Readings found in Codex D.

One is concerning a man found working on the Sabbath, and comes after Luke 6:4: O man, if indeed thou knowest what thou doest, thou art blessed; but if thou knowest not, thou art cursed and art a transgressor of the law.

Likewise Codex D has, after Matt. 20:28: But you seek to increase from little, and from greater to be less.

## 3. Quotations found in various early Fathers.

From Barnabas: Let us resist all iniquity, and hold it in hatred. They who wish to see me and lay hold on my kingdom must receive me by affliction and suffering.

From Origen and others: Show yourselves tried money changers.

Ask great things, and the small shall be added to you; and ask heavenly things, and the earthly shall be added unto you.

He who is near me is near the fire; he who is far from me, is far from the kingdom.

For those that are sick I was sick, and for those that hunger, I suffered hunger, and for those that thirst, I suffered thirst.

From Clement of Rome (Ep. II.): Keep the flesh pure, and the seal unspotted.

When the two shall be one, and that which is without as that which is within, and the male with the female neither male nor female.

If ye kept not that which is small, who will give you that which is great? For I say unto you, that he that is faithful in very little is faithful also in much.

From Justin Martyr: In whatsoever I may find you, in this will I also judge you. Such as I may find thee, I will judge thee.

From Ignatius: Take hold, handle me, and see that I am not an incorporeal spirit.

From Clement of Alexandria: He that wonders shall reign, and he that reigns shall rest. Look with wonder at that which is before you. My mystery is for me and for the sons of my house.

From Papias: The days will come in which vines shall spring up, each having ten thousand stocks, and on each stock ten thousand branches, and on each branch ten thousand shoots, and on each shoot ten thousand bunches, and on each bunch ten thousand grapes, and each grape when pressed shall give five and twenty measures of wine. And when any saint shall have seized one bunch, another shall cry: I am a better bunch; take me; through me bless the Lord.

## APPENDIX F.

### SIMILAR INCIDENTS AND CHIEF REPEATED SAYINGS.

Calling Disciples: § 18, page 18 f.; § 27, page 27 f., and § 41, page 44 f.

Cleansing the Temple: § 21, page 20, and § 106, page 144.

Owning Jesus as Messiah: § 18, pages 18 f.; § 27, page 28; § 59, page 83; § 64, page 89 f.; § 94, page 126.

Rejection at Nazareth: § 26, page 26, and § 54, page 70.

Miraculous Draught of Fishes: § 27, page 27 f., and § 140, page 226 f.

Parables of Mustard Seed and Leaven: § 51 (d), page 64 f., and § 88, page 119.

The Tours of Galilee: § 30, page 30 f.; § 47, page 57, and § 55, page 71.

Healings on the Sabbath: § 28, 29, pages 28-30; § 37-39, pages 39-43; § 78, page 108 f.; § 88, page 118 f.; § 91, page 121 f.

The Lists of the Twelve: § 41, page 44 f., and § 55, page 72.

Courtier's Son and Centurion's Servant: § 25, page 26, and § 43, page 52.

The Model Prayer: § 42 (d), page 49, and § 83, page 112 f.

The Anointing of Christ: § 46, page 56 f., and § 117, page 169 f.

The Blasphemous Accusation: § 36, page 39; § 48, page 57 f., and § 84, page 113 f.

Groups of Parables: § 51, pages 60-66; § 81-93, pages 111-126, and § 109, pages 147-152.

Sending the Twelve and Sending the Seventy: § 55, pages 71-74, and § 80, page 110 f.

Feeding the Five Thousand and the Four Thousand: § 57, pages 76-79, and § 62, page 87.

Tests of Discipleship: § 59, pages 81-83, and § 92, page 122.

Jesus Foretelling His Death: § 21, page 20; § 65, page 91; § 66, pages 92-94; § 68, page 97; § 101, page 135; § 117-122, pages 169-186.

The Twelve Contending for Supremacy: § 70, pages 98-100; § 99, page 131; § 101, page 135 f.

Attacking Jesus in Jerusalem: § 21, page 20; § 37, page 39 ff.; § 75-79, pages 104-110; § 89, page 119 f.; § 95, page 127; § 104-133, pages 140-217.

Foretelling the Second Coming: § 65, page 92; § 96, page 128 f.; § 103, page 138 f.; § 115 and 116, pages 160-168; § 122, pages 179-186.

Divorce: § 42 (c), page 47, and § 98, page 130.

Like Children: § 70, pages 98-100, and § 99, page 131.

Rewards of Service: § 72, page 101 f., and § 100, pages 132-135.

Worldly Anxieties: § 42 (e), page 49 f., and § 86, page 115 f.

Baptism of Death: § 86, page 117, and § 101, page 136.

The Pounds and the Talents: § 103, page 138 f., and § 116, page 167.

The Agony of Christ: § 107, page 145, and § 123, pages 183-186.

Denouncing the Scribes and Pharisees: § 85, page 114 f., and § 113, pages 156-159.

Lament Over Jerusalem: § 90, page 120 f.; § 105, page 143, and § 113, page 159.

About a Sword: § 55, pages 71-74; § 120, page 177; § 124, page 188.

The Three Commissions: § 138, page 225; § 141, page 228 f., and § 142, page 229 f.

In general the Later Judean Ministry and the Perean Ministry, chiefly Luke's contribution to the Life of Christ, furnish many events and discourses similar to those described in the Galilean Ministry. Sections 80 to 103 furnish most of the so-called "doublets" or repeated sayings of Jesus or similar miracles. This is just what we should expect in a popular teacher who journeyed in different parts of the country.

## APPENDIX G.

### A LIST OF THE PRINCIPAL HARMONIES OF THE GOSPELS (COMPILED PARTLY FROM CLARK'S HISTORICAL SKETCH.)

Tatian (see Hill's Translation of the Jansen, 1549.

Diatessaron), 150 or 160 A. D. Calvin, 1553.

Eusebius, 315. Stephanus, 1553.

Augustine, 400. Molineus, 1565.

Comestor, 1180. Codman, 1568.

Perpinian, 1330. Mercator, 1590.

Gerson, 1420. Chemnitz, 1593.

Osiander, 1537. Leyser, 1603.

- Gerhard, 1608.  
 Cartwright, 1627.  
 Richardson, 1654.  
 Lightfoot, 1654.  
 Cradock, 1668.  
 Dornkrell, 1688.  
 Lamy, 1689.  
 Le Clerc, 1699.  
 Whiston, 1702.  
 Toinard, 1707.  
 Doddridge, 1739.  
 Benzel, 1747.  
 Pilkington, 1747.  
 Macintosh, 1756.  
 Macknight, 1756.  
 Bertling, 1767.  
 Griesbach, 1776.  
 Newcome, 1778.  
 White, 1779.  
 Priestley, 1780.  
 Kellar, 1802.  
 Sebastiani, 1806.  
 Willan, 1806.  
 Mutschelle, 1806.  
 Thomson, 1808.  
 Phlanck, 1809.  
 Chambers, 1813.  
 De Wette et Lucke, 1818.  
 Warner, 1819.  
 Hess, 1822.  
 Townsend, 1825.  
 Matthaei, 1826.  
 Kaiser, 1828.  
 Roediger, 1829.  
 Clausen, 1829.  
 Greswell, 1830.  
 Carpenter, 1835.  
 Chapman, 1836.  
 Benning, 1836.  
 Dunn, 1836.  
 Fawcett, 1836.  
 Mackbride, 1837.  
 Reichel, 1840.  
 Gehringer, 1842.  
 Wieseler, 1843, 1864, 1871.  
 Jarvis, 1844.  
 Robinson, 1845 (English), 1846  
 (Greek).  
 Kraft, 1848.  
 Tischendorf, 1851.  
 Anger, 1852.  
 Strong, 1852.  
 Stroud, 1853.  
 Mimpres, 1855.  
 Lichtenstein, 1856.  
 Gardiner, 1871.  
 McClellan, 1875.  
 Caspari, 1876.  
 Riddle (Revision of Robinson), 1889.  
 Halcombe, 1880.  
 Waddy, 1887.  
 Clark, 1892, 1900.  
 Cadman, 1885.  
 Broadus, 1893.  
 Stevens and Burton, 1894.  
 Pittinger, 1894.

## INDEX OF PROPER NAMES.

---

### A

- Aaron, p. 3.  
 Abel, pp. 115, 159.  
 Abiathar, p. 42.  
 Abijah, pp. 2, 3.  
 Abilene, p. 12.  
 Abind, p. 3.  
 Abraham, pp. 2, 3, 5, 6, 13, 53, 106,  
     107, 108, 119, 120, 125, 138.  
 Abraham, God of, p. 154.  
 Achim, p. 3.  
 Acts, pp. 15, 24, 45, 74.  
 Adam, p. 3.  
 Addi, p. 2.  
 Admin, p. 3.  
 Advocate, pp. 180, 182.  
 Aenon, p. 21.  
 Ahaz, p. 2.  
 Akeldama, p. 197.  
 Abba, p. 184.  
 Alexander, p. 207.  
 Alphaeus, pp. 34, 45, 72.  
 Amminadab, pp. 2, 3.  
 Amon, p. 2.  
 Amos, pp. 2, 3.  
 Andrew, pp. 19, 27, 29, 45, 72, 78,  
     145.  
 Anna, p. 9.  
 Annas, pp. 12, 190, 195.  
 Anointed, p. 19.  
 Antipas, p. 86.  
 Apostles, pp. 44, 45.  
 Aram, p. 3.  
 Aramaic, p. 207.  
 Archelaus, p. 10.  
 Arimathaea, pp. 215, 216.  
 Arni, p. 2.  
 Arphaxad, p. 3.  
 Asa, p. 2.  
 Asaph, p. 3.  
 Ascension, pp. 218, 230.  
 Asher, p. 9.  
 Asia Minor, p. 205.  
 Azor, p. 3.

### B

- Babylon, p. 3.  
 Barabbas, pp. 201, 202, 203, 206.  
 Barachiah, p. 159.  
 Bartholomew, pp. 45, 72.  
 Bartimaeus, p. 137.  
 Beelzebub, pp. 57, 58, 62, 73, 113, 114.  
 Beelzebul, p. 74.  
 Bethabarrah, p. 18.  
 Bethany, pp. 15, 18, 56, 112, 119, 126,  
     140, 141, 143, 144, 146, 169, 170,  
     172, 230.  
 Betharabah, p. 18.  
 Bethesda, p. 40.  
 Bethlehem, pp. 7, 8, 9, 10, 105.  
 Bethphage, p. 140.  
 Bethsaida, pp. 19, 41, 56, 76, 79, 88,  
     89, 111, 145.  
 Bethzatha, p. 41.  
 Blessed, Son of the, p. 191.  
 Boanerges, p. 45.  
 Boaz, of Rahab, p. 2.  
 Boaz, son of Salmon, p. 2.



## C

- Cæsar**, pp. 152, 153, 198, 205, 206.  
**Cæsar**, Augustus, p. 7.  
**Cæsar**, Tiberius, p. 12.  
**Cæsarea** Philippi, pp. 88, 89, 92, 94.  
**Caiaphas**, pp. 12, 127, 169, 190, 195, 196.  
**Cainan**, son of Arphaxad, p. 3.  
**Cainan**, son of Enos, p. 3.  
**Calvary**, pp. 207, 208.  
**Canaanitish**, p. 85.  
**Cana**, pp. 19, 20, 25, 26, 27, 226.  
**Cananean**, pp. 45, 72.  
**Capernaum**, pp. 18, 20, 25, 26, 27, 28, 29, 30, 31, 32, 34, 45, 52, 56, 76, 79, 81, 82, 83, 97, 98, 111.  
**Cedars**, of the, p. 186.  
**Cephas**, pp. 19, 224, 226.  
**Chorazin**, pp. 56, 111.  
**Christ**, pp. 3, 7, 9, 14, 18, 19, 22, 23, 30, 54, 58, 90, 99, 104, 105, 109, 119, 126, 145, 156, 157, 160, 163, 191, 192, 196, 198, 202, 204, 211, 224, 226, 229.  
**Christs**, p. 163.  
**Cleopas**, p. 223.  
**Clopas**, p. 210.  
**Comforter**, pp. 179, 180, 181.  
**Corban**, p. 84.  
**Cosam**, p. 2.  
**Crucifixion**, pp. 76, 174, 178, 205, 207.  
**Cyrene**, p. 207.

## D

- Dalmanutha**, p. 88.  
**Daniel**, pp. 10, 162.  
**David**, pp. 2, 3, 4, 6, 7, 39, 42, 58, 85, 105, 137, 142, 143, 156.  
**David**, city of, pp. 7, 8.  
**David**, Son of, p. 137.  
**Dead Sea**, pp. 22, 54.  
**Decapolis**, pp. 31, 70, 86.  
**Dedication**, pp. 110, 120.  
**Dedication**, Feast of the, pp. 104, 119.  
**Deuteronomy**, p. 154.  
**Didymus**, pp. 126, 225, 226.

## E

- Eber**, p. 3.  
**Edersheim**, p. 11.  
**Egypt**, p. 10.  
**Eleazar**, p. 3.  
**Eli**, p. 212.  
**Eliakim**, pp. 2, 3.  
**Eliezer**, p. 2.  
**Elijah**, pp. 4, 18, 27, 55, 74, 89, 92, 93, 94, 103, 213.  
**Elisabeth**, pp. 3, 4, 5, 6, 9.  
**Elisha**, p. 27.  
**Eliud**, p. 3.  
**Elmadam**, p. 2.  
**Eloi**, p. 212.  
**Emmanuel**, p. 7.  
**Emmaus**, pp. 220, 223, 224.  
**Enoch**, p. 3.  
**Enos**, p. 3.  
**Ephraim**, pp. 127, 128.  
**Er**, p. 2.  
**Esli**, p. 2.  
**Esther**, p. 10.  
**Ezekiel**, p. 125.

F

Father, pp. 2, 11, 22, 23, 24, 40, 41, Father Abraham, p. 125.  
 48, 49, 50, 51, 56, 60, 65, 73, 81, Forerunner, p. 90.  
 82, 83, 84, 90, 92, 100, 101, Forerunner's Ministry, p. 12.  
 106, 107, 108, 110, 111, 113, 116, Friday, pp. 140, 172, 183, 186, 190,  
 119, 120, 127, 136, 145, 146, 147, 193, 195, 197, 200, 201, 207, 218.  
 157, 165, 168, 173, 174, 179, 180,  
 181, 182, 183, 184, 185, 188, 209,  
 212, 213. 221, 222, 225, 228, 229.

G

Gabbatha, p. 205.  
 Gabriel, p. 4.  
 Gadara, p. 67.  
 Gadarene, pp. 25, 58, 67.  
 Gadarenes, pp. 67, 70.  
 Galilæan, pp. 194, 195, 200.  
 Galilean, p. 25.  
 Galileans, pp. 24, 118.  
 Galilee, pp. 4, 7, 11, 12, 15, 19, 20,  
 22, 24, 25, 27, 28, 29, 30, 31, 32,  
 39, 41, 43, 44, 45, 54, 56, 57, 59,  
 67, 70, 71, 75, 76, 83, 86, 88, 97,  
 102, 105, 110, 113, 128, 129, 130,  
 131, 135, 143, 145, 170, 176, 177,  
 197, 200, 214, 215, 217, 218, 219,  
 222, 226, 228, 230.  
 Galilee, Lake of, pp. 76, 86.  
 Galilee, Sea of, pp. 27, 44, 60, 66,  
 226.  
 Geikie, p. 11.  
 Gehenna, pp. 74, 100, 118, 159.  
 Gennesaret, pp. 27, 80, 81.  
 Gentile, pp. 86, 100.  
 Gentiles, pp. 9, 27, 44, 48, 49, 50, 72,  
 73, 135, 136, 163, 173.  
 Gerasa, pp. 67, 113.  
 Gerasenes, pp. 67, 69.  
 Gergesenes, p. 70.  
 Gethsemane, pp. 183, 184.  
 Gethsemane, Garden of, p. 186.  
 God, pp. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 10,  
 11, 12, 13, 16, 18, 19, 20, 21, 22,  
 23, 24, 25, 26, 27, 30, 33, 40, 41,  
 42, 45, 46, 47, 49, 50, 53, 54, 55,  
 57, 58, 60, 61, 62, 64, 68, 70, 71,  
 77, 81, 82, 84, 90, 91, 92, 96, 100,  
 102, 104, 107, 108, 109, 111, 112,  
 114, 115, 116, 118, 119, 120, 121,  
 123, 124, 126, 127, 128, 129, 130,  
 131, 132, 133, 134, 135, 138, 142,  
 144, 145, 146, 147, 149, 150, 151,  
 152, 153, 154, 155, 156, 158, 163,  
 165, 173, 174, 176, 178, 179, 180,  
 181, 182, 191, 196, 211, 212, 214,  
 215, 216, 222, 223, 226, 227, 229,  
 230, 231.  
 God, Christ of, pp. 90, 211.  
 God, Holy One of, pp. 29, 83.  
 God, Jesus Christ the Son of, p. 12.  
 God, Lamb of, p. 18.  
 God, My Savior, p. 5.  
 God, Son of, pp. 5, 15, 16, 17, 21, 30,  
 40, 41, 44, 68, 80, 106, 109, 120,  
 126, 191, 196, 204, 211, 214, 226.  
 God, Son of the Most High, p. 68.  
 God, Spirit of, pp. 16, 58.  
 Golden Rule, p. 51.  
 Golgotha, pp. 207, 208, 218.  
 Gomorrah, p. 73.  
 Good Master, pp. 132, 135.

Gospel, pp. 31, 195, 205, 222.  
 Gospel, Fourth, p. 147.  
 Gospels, pp. 1, 4, 90, 173, 195.

Greek, pp. 57, 65, 79, 85, 89, 101,  
 112, 172, 210, 222, 227.  
 Greeks, pp. 105, 145, 205, 218.

## H

Hades, pp. 56, 90, 111, 125.  
 Hebrêw, pp. 40, 48, 65, 119, 125, 205,  
 208, 210, 221.  
 Heli, p. 2.  
 Helper, pp. 180, 182.  
 Herod, pp. 9, 10, 11, 12, 22, 74, 75,  
 76, 88, 120, 200, 201, 202.  
 Herodians, pp. 43, 152.  
 Herodias, pp. 22, 75.  
 Herod Antipas, pp. 25, 74, 76, 86,  
 120, 197, 200.  
 Herod Chuza, p. 57.  
 Herod, King of Judea, p. 3.

Herod the Great, p. 137.  
 Hezekiah, p. 2.  
 Hezron, p. 2.  
 Holy Father, p. 183.  
 Holy Ghost, pp. 4, 5, 6, 7, 14, 16,  
 161, 225, 228, 229, 230.  
 Holy Land, pp. 15, 104.  
 Holy Sepulchre, Church of the, p.  
 207.  
 Holy Spirit, pp. 3, 7, 8, 15, 16, 18,  
 58, 105, 111, 113, 116, 156, 180,  
 226.  
 Hovey, p. 105.

## I

Idumæa, p. 44.  
 Immanuel, p. 7.  
 Isaac, pp. 2, 3, 53, 120.  
 Isaac, God of, p. 154.  
 Isaiah, pp. 12, 18, 26, 27, 29, 44, 62,  
 84, 146.  
 Iscariot, Judas, pp. 45, 72, 170, 171,  
 174.  
 Iscariot, p. 171.

Iscariot, Simon, pp. 83, 176.  
 Israel, pp. 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 10, 18,  
 21, 27, 39, 53, 72, 73, 85, 86, 155,  
 173, 197, 223, 229.  
 Israel, God of, pp. 6, 87.  
 Israelite, p. 19.  
 Israel, King of, pp. 19, 142, 211.  
 Ituraea, p. 12.

## J

Jacob, pp. 2, 3, 4, 22, 23, 28, 53, 120.  
 Jacob, God of, p. 154.  
 Jacob's Well, p. 22.  
 Jairus, p. 3.  
 James, pp. 28, 29, 38, 45, 70, 72, 92,  
 103, 135, 136, 160, 184, 214, 218,  
 220, 229.  
 Jannai, p. 2.  
 Jared, p. 3.  
 Jechoniah, pp. 2, 3.  
 Jehoshaphat, p. 2.  
 Jeremiah, pp. 10, 89, 197.

Jericho, pp. 112, 129, 135, 137, 138.  
 Jerusalem, pp. 3, 8, 9, 11, 13, 17, 18,  
 20, 23, 24, 25, 27, 31, 32, 39, 40,  
 41, 43, 44, 45, 47, 56, 58, 83, 91,  
 93, 102, 103, 104, 106, 108, 109,  
 112, 118, 119, 120, 126, 127, 128,  
 129, 135, 138, 139, 140, 141, 143,  
 144, 145, 146, 147, 159, 160, 162,  
 163, 169, 170, 172, 178, 179, 197,  
 200, 205, 207, 215, 218, 220, 223,  
 224, 226, 229, 230, 231.  
 Jesse, p. 2.

- Jesus, pp. 4, 7, 8, 9, 10, 11, 15, 16, 17, Joda, p. 2.  
 18, 19, 20, 21, 22, 23, 24, 25, 26, John, pp. 1, 2, 3, 4, 6, 11, 12, 13, 14,  
 28, 29, 30, 31, 32, 33, 34, 35, 36, 15, 18, 19, 21, 22, 24, 25, 28, 29,  
 37, 38, 39, 40, 41, 42, 43, 44, 52, 35, 38, 39, 41, 45, 54, 55, 57, 72,  
 53, 54, 56, 60, 65, 66, 68, 69, 70, 74, 75, 76, 90, 92, 98, 103, 104,  
 71, 72, 74, 75, 76, 77, 78, 79, 80, 105, 106, 113, 120, 124, 128, 135,  
 81, 82, 83, 85, 86, 87, 88, 89, 90, 136, 138, 140, 148, 149, 152, 160,  
 91, 92, 93, 95, 96, 97, 98, 101, 102, 172, 173, 184, 195, 205, 209, 212,  
 104, 105, 106, 107, 108, 109, 110, 215, 218, 220, 227, 229.  
 111, 112, 113, 114, 118, 119, 121, John the Baptist, pp. 3, 6, 12, 15, 18,  
 126, 127, 128, 129, 130, 131, 132, 54, 55, 74, 75, 89, 90, 94.  
 133, 135, 136, 137, 138, 140, 141, John the Forerunner, pp. 3, 25.  
 142, 143, 144, 145, 146, 147, 148, John, Gospel of, pp. 105, 119, 173  
 149, 150, 151, 152, 153, 154, 155, Jonah, pp. 19, 59, 88, 114.  
 156, 159, 160, 169, 170, 172, 173, Jonam, p. 2.  
 174, 175, 176, 177, 178, 179, 180, Joram, p. 2.  
 181, 182, 183, 184, 186, 187, 188, Jordan, pp. 12, 13, 15, 16, 18, 20, 21,  
 189, 190, 191, 192, 193, 194, 195, 27, 31, 44, 86, 88, 112, 119, 120,  
 196, 197, 198, 199, 200, 201, 202, 130, 135.  
 203, 204, 205, 206, 207, 209, 210, Jorim, p. 2.  
 212, 213, 214, 215, 216, 217, 218, Josech, p. 2.  
 219, 220, 221, 222, 223, 224, 225, Joseph, pp. 3, 4, 7, 8, 10, 19, 70, 82,  
 226, 227, 228, 230, 215, 216.  
 Jesus Christ, pp. 1, 2, 3, 92, 182. Joseph of Arimathaea, p. 215.  
 Jesus Christ the Son of God, p. 12. Joseph, son of Hell, p. 2.  
 Jesus, Life of, p. 11. Joseph, son of Jacob, p. 22.  
 Jesus the Messiah, p. 3. Joseph, son of Jonam, p. 2.  
 Jesus the Nazarene, pp. 194, 219. Joses, pp. 70, 214, 217.  
 Jesus, the son of Eliezer, p. 2. Josiah, p. 2.  
 Jew, pp. 21, 23, 199. Jotham, p. 2.  
 Jewish, pp. 24, 25, 41, 45, 76, 88, 140, Judah, pp. 2, 3, 5, 9.  
 195, 218. Judas, pp. 2, 70, 71, 83, 169, 171, 174,  
 Jews, pp. 16, 19, 20, 23, 24, 39, 40, 41, 176, 180, 186, 187, 188, 190, 197.  
 52, 77, 82, 83, 102, 104, 105, 106, Jude, p. 45.  
 107, 108, 109, 110, 119, 121, 126, Judea, pp. 3, 5, 6, 7, 9, 11, 12, 13, 15,  
 127, 135, 140, 147, 176, 188, 190, 20, 21, 22, 26, 31, 32, 44, 45, 54,  
 198, 199, 200, 204, 205, 210, 215, 102, 110, 111, 112, 113, 114, 115,  
 216, 217, 218, 223, 224, 118, 126, 127, 128, 130, 162, 200,  
 218, 230.  
 Joanan, p. 2. Judean, p. 15.  
 Joanes, pp. 19, 227. Julius Bethsaida, p. 76.  
 Joanna, pp. 57, 220.

## K

Kedron, p. 183.

Khersa, p. 67.

Kidron, p. 183.

King, pp. 47, 142, 168, 205.

King James, p. 121

King of the Jews, pp. 9, 10, 198,  
202, 203, 204, 206, 210, 211.

## L

Lamech, p. 3.

Latin, pp. 207, 208, 210.

Lazarus, pp. 124, 125, 126, 127, 140,  
142, 170.

Levi, pp. 2, 34.

Levite, p. 112.

Levites, p. 18.

Leviticus, p. 100.

Lord, pp. 1, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 10,

12, 15, 18, 22, 24, 25, 26, 28, 31,

32, 39, 41, 47, 51, 52, 53, 54, 56,

60, 67, 70, 71, 80, 87, 82, 83, 85,

86, 91, 93, 94, 101, 102, 106, 109,

110, 111, 112, 113, 115, 117, 118,

119, 120, 121, 122, 125, 126, 127,

129, 137, 138, 139, 140, 141, 142,

146, 150, 154, 155, 156, 159, 163,

166, 167, 168, 169, 170, 174, 175,

176, 177, 178, 179, 180, 186, 188,

193, 195, 197, 218, 219, 220, 221,

222, 224, 225, 226, 227, 229, 231.

Lord, Anointed, p. 8.

Lord, Christ the, p. 8.

Lord God, p. 4.

Lord Jesus, pp. 178, 219, 220, 230.

Lord, Spirit of the, p. 26.

Lord, the Risen, p. 220.

Lord thy God, p. 17.

Lot, p. 128.

Luke, pp. 1, 2, 3, 11, 25, 30, 31, 36,

45, 53, 54, 56, 60, 64, 67, 70, 74,

76, 90, 100, 104, 110, 113, 120,

126, 128, 129, 131, 135, 137, 159,

170, 173, 195, 205, 209, 212, 220,

225, 228.

Lysanias, p. 12.

## M

Maath, p. 2.

Machaerus, pp. 22, 54.

Magadan, p. 88.

Magdala, p. 88.

Magdalen, p. 56.

Magdalene, p. 57.

Magi, pp. 9, 10.

Mahalaleel, p. 3.

Malchus, p. 188.

Manasseh, p. 2.

Mark, pp. 1, 36, 41, 58, 64, 67, 74, 76,

85, 90, 94, 96, 110, 129, 131, 135,

137, 159, 173, 195, 197, 205, 206,

212, 218, 220, 228.

Mary, pp. 3, 4, 5, 7, 8, 9, 10, 57, 70,

112, 126, 127, 169, 170, 210, 214,

212, 217, 218, 220, 221.

Mary Magdalene, pp. 56, 210, 214,

217, 218, 220, 221, 222.

Martha, pp. 112, 126, 127, 170.

Master, pp. 9, 14, 18, 28, 34, 37, 38,

56, 59, 67, 93, 94, 98, 101, 105,

111, 115, 116, 126, 128, 132, 136,

143, 152, 153, 154, 155, 160, 173,

174, 221.

Mattatha, p. 2.

Mattathias, p. 2.

Matthan, p. 3.



- Matthat, p. 2.  
 Matthew, pp. 1, 2, 3, 11, 19, 25, 30, 31, 34, 36, 45, 52, 62, 67, 71, 72, 85, 90, 94, 110, 113, 119, 129, 131, 137, 153, 173, 195, 212, 218, 220, 228.  
 Melchi, p. 2.  
 Melea, p. 2.  
 Menna, p. 2.  
 Messiah, pp. 7, 8, 19, 23, 24, 25, 41, 46, 89, 90, 91, 97, 98, 101, 104, 108, 119, 132, 140, 155.  
 Messiahship, p. 90.  
 Messianic, p. 46.  
 Monday, pp. 140, 144.  
 Moses, pp. 2, 8, 13, 21, 31, 32, 41, 81, 84, 92, 93, 104, 105, 109, 125, 130, 153, 154, 157, 224, 229.  
 Most High, pp. 4, 6, 48.  
 Most High, Son of, p. 4.  
 Mount Tabor, p. 92.

## N

- Naaman, p. 27.  
 Naggai, p. 2.  
 Nahor, p. 3.  
 Nahshon, p. 2.  
 Nahum, p. 2.  
 Nain, pp. 25, 53, 54.  
 Naphtali, p. 27.  
 Nathan, p. 2.  
 Nathanael, pp. 19, 226.  
 Nazarene, pp. 11, 194.  
 Nazarenes, p. 70.  
 Nazareth, pp. 4, 7, 10, 11, 15, 25, 26, 27, 70, 143.  
 Nazareth, Jesus of, pp. 19, 29, 137, 187, 210, 223.  
 Neri, p. 2.  
 Nicodemus, pp. 20, 21, 105, 216.  
 Nineveh, pp. 59, 114.  
 Ninevites, p. 114.  
 Noah, pp. 3, 128, 165.

## O

- Obed of Ruth, p. 2.  
 Obed, the son of Boaz, p. 2.  
 Olives, Mount of, pp. 105, 147, 142, 146, 160, 167, 183.

## P

- Papias, p. 105.  
 Paraclete, pp. 180, 182.  
 Paradise, p. 212.  
 Paschal Meal, pp. 172, 173, 174.  
 Passover, pp. 15, 20, 22, 25, 39, 76, 104, 120, 128, 140, 169, 173, 205.  
 Paul, p. 228.  
 Pavement, The, p. 205.  
 Pearl of Great Price, Parable of the, p. 65.  
 Peleg, p. 3.  
 Perea, pp. 113, 119, 120, 121, 122, 123, 126, 128, 129, 131, 132, 135.  
 Perez, p. 2.  
 Peter, pp. 19, 27, 29, 37, 38, 45, 72, 78, 80, 84, 89, 90, 91, 92, 93, 97, 101, 117, 133, 146, 160, 172, 174, 177, 184, 185, 188, 190, 193, 194, 195, 218, 219, 220, 227.  
 Petros, p. 90.

- Phannel, p. 9. Philip, pp. 12, 19, 24, 45, 72, 75, 77,  
 Pharisee, pp. 113, 114, 115, 121, 129, 88, 145, 179.  
 155, 158. Philip, the Tetrarch, p. 76, 86.  
 Pharisee and the Publican, Para- Phœnician, p. 85.  
 ble of, p. 129. Pilate, pp. 118, 195, 196, 197, 198,  
 Pharisees, pp. 13, 18, 20, 22, 32, 33, 199, 200, 201, 202, 203, 204, 205,  
 34, 35, 39, 42, 43, 47, 55, 56, 58, 210, 215, 216, 217.  
 59, 83, 84, 88, 89, 104, 105, 106, Pilate, Pontius, p. 12.  
 108, 109, 113, 114, 115, 120, 121, Praetorium, p. 206.  
 123, 124, 127, 128, 130, 140, 142, Preparation, the, pp. 215, 217.  
 143, 146, 151, 152, 155, 156, 157, Psalms, pp. 9, 156.  
 158, 159, 186, 217.

## Q

Quirinius, governor of Syria, p. 7.

## R

- Raca, p. 47. Rehoboam, p. 2.  
 Rachel, p. 10. Reu, p. 3.  
 Rabbi, pp. 18, 19, 20, 21, 23, 81, 93, Rhesa, p. 2.  
 108, 126, 146, 147, 157, 176, 188. Roman, p. 15, 35, 48, 135, 140, 197.  
 Rabboni, pp. 138, 221. Romans, pp. 127, 197, 205, 218.  
 Ram, p. 2. Rome, p. 7.  
 Ramah, p. 10. Rufus, p. 207.

## S

- Sabbath, pp. 25, 39, 41, 42, 118, 121. Saturday, p. 27.  
 Sadducees, pp. 13, 88, 89, 153, 155. Saviour, pp. 7, 8, 24, 25, 27, 39, 56,  
 Sadoc, p. 3. 71, 120, 140, 159, 170.  
 Sala, p. 3. Scribes, the, p. 156.  
 Salathiel, p. 3. Semein, p. 2.  
 Salim, p. 21. Serug, p. 3.  
 Salmon, p. 2. Seth, p. 3.  
 Salome, pp. 214, 218. Shealtiel, pp. 2, 3.  
 Samaria, pp. 15, 20, 22, 23, 24, 102, Shelah, p. 3.  
 128, 230. Shem, p. 3.  
 Samaritan, pp. 23, 107, 111, 112, 128. Sidon, pp. 27, 44, 45, 56, 85, 86, 111.  
 Samaritans, pp. 23, 24, 72, 102. Siloam, pp. 108, 118.  
 Sanhedrin, pp. 25, 127, 190, 195. Simeon, pp. 8, 9.  
 Sarepta, p. 27. Simon, pp. 19, 27, 28, 29, 30, 45, 56,  
 Satan, pp. 16, 17, 25, 58, 62, 91, 111, 57, 70, 71, 72, 78, 97, 170, 174,  
 114, 119, 171, 176. 176, 185, 207, 224, 227.

- Simon Bar-Jonah, p. 90. 145, 148, 164, 165, 166, 168, 169,  
 Simon Peter, pp. 83, 90, 174, 175, 175, 176, 179, 182, 186, 188, 192,  
 176, 188, 193, 194, 220, 223, 226, 196, 219, 228.  
 227. Spirit, pp. 9, 16, 18, 21, 22, 23, 25,  
 44, 58, 73, 105, 156, 179, 181.  
 Sodom, pp. 56, 73, 111, 128.  
 Solomon, pp. 2, 50, 59, 114, 116, 119. Susanna, p. 57.  
 Son, pp. 2, 11, 16, 19, 21, 22, 33, 40, Sychar, p. 22.  
 42, 46, 55, 56, 58, 59, 65, 73, 81, Symeon, p. 2.  
 82, 89, 90, 91, 92, 93, 94, 97, 100, Syria, p. 31.  
 101, 103, 107, 109, 111, 114, 116, Syrian, p. 27.  
 117, 128, 129, 133, 135, 136, 138, Syrophoenician, p. 85.

T

- Tabernacles, pp. 41, 110. Thomas, pp. 45, 72, 126, 179, 224,  
 Tabernacles, Feast of, pp. 76, 104, 225, 226.  
 129. Thompson, Dr., p. 67.  
 Tares, Parable of, pp. 64, 65. Thursday, p. 172.  
 Teacher, pp. 15, 19, 35, 39, 57, 59, Tiberias, pp. 76, 81, 226.  
 96, 102, 106, 112, 115, 118, 127, Timæus, p. 137.  
 135, 136, 143, 153, 154, 156, 167, Trachonitis, p. 12.  
 173, 174, 222. Tuesday, pp. 140, 146, 147, 152, 153,  
 Temple, pp. 3, 8, 20, 97, 104, 144, 155, 156, 159, 160, 167, 169.  
 147, 156, 159, 197, 207. Twelve, the, pp. 25, 45, 71, 76, 79,  
 Temple, Court of the, pp. 152, 153, 88, 89, 98, 110, 172.  
 155. Twin, pp. 127, 226, 227.  
 Terah, p. 3. Two Sons, Parable of the, p. 147.  
 Thaddæus, pp. 45, 72. Tyre, pp. 44, 45, 56, 85, 86, 111.  
 Theophilus, p. 1.

J

- Uriah, p. 2. Uziah, p. 2.

V

- Virgin Mary, p. 4.

W

- Wednesday, p. 169. Word, the (Logos), pp. 1, 2.  
 Wieseler, p. 128.

## Z

Zacchaeus, p. 133.

Zachariah, pp. 115, 159.

Zacharias, pp. 3, 4, 5, 6, 9, 12.

Zarephath, p. 27.

Zealot, the, pp. 45, 74.

Zebedee, pp. 28, 45, 72, 136, 184, 215,  
226.

Zebulun, p. 27.

Zerah, of Tamar, p. 2.

Zerubbabel, pp. 2, 3.

Zion, p. 142.

By GEORGE ADAM SMITH, D.D., LL.D.

---

# The Historical Geography of the Holy Land

Seventh Edition. With Scripture Index and Six Colored  
Maps, specially prepared. 8vo, cloth, 730 pages, \$4.50

---

. . . No one work has ever before embodied all this variety of material to illustrate the whole subject. His geographical statements are pen-pictures. We are made to see the scene. No important problem is untouched. Without question it will take its place at once as a standard work, indispensable to the thoroughgoing student of the Bible. — *Sunday-School Times*.

. . . An exhaustive collection of material lay outside the plan of the author. His intention is rather to show how the history of the land is conditioned by its physical structure. It is thus the idea of Karl Ritter which rules the treatment and presentation. Very comprehensive sections are concerned, not with the history, but with the nature of the land. . . . The author pays special attention to the military operations. One could sometimes imagine that an officer is writing, who, above all, regards the land from the point of view of the military strategist. In this connection especially the history of Israel in its chief crises in Old Testament times receives striking illumination. Large passages are frequently quoted from the Old Testament in order to explain them by the exhibition of their geographical background. In addition the author has a special gift of vivid representation. He makes the history transact itself before the eye of the reader in dramatic form. One sees, everywhere, that the landscapes which he describes stand before his own eyes. Thus the book is an extremely valuable means of aid to the understanding of the history, especially of the Old Testament. — Prof. SCHÜRER, of Kiel, in the *Theol. Literatur-Zeitung*.

The book is too rich to summarize. . . . The language is particularly well chosen. Few pages are without some telling phrase happily constructed to attract attention and hold the memory, and we often feel that the wealth of imagery would be excessive for prose were it not that it is chosen with such appropriateness and scientific truth. . . . To the reader much of the pleasure of perusing the volume comes from its luxurious typography, and the exquisite series of orographical maps prepared by Mr. Bartholomew from the work of the Survey. These maps alone are more suggestive and enlightening than many treatises, and they are destined, we trust, to enliven many a sermon, and turn the monotony of the records of Israelitish wars into a thrilling romance. — *Speaker*.

---

A. C. ARMSTRONG & SON

3 and 5 W. 18th Street, New York



By GEORGE ADAM SMITH, D.D., LL.D.

# THE BOOK OF ISAIAH

In Two Volumes. Crown 8vo, cloth, \$1.50 each.

VOLUME I. CHAPTERS I.—XXXIX.

VOLUME II. CHAPTERS XL.—LXVI.

This is a noble volume of a noble series. Isaiah will ever be the cream of the Old Testament evangelistic prophecy, and as the ages go on will supply seed-thought of the Holy Ghost which grow into flowers and fruits, vines and trees, of divine truth for the refreshment and nourishment of the intellect, heart, character, and life. *How can any pastor or instructor of the public, young or old, afford to be without such aids?* — *Baltimore Methodist*.

Prof. George Adam Smith has such a mastery of the scholarship of his subject that it would be a sheer impertinence for most scholars, even though tolerable Hebraists, to criticize his translations; and certainly it is not the intention of the present reviewer to attempt anything of the kind, to do which he is absolutely incompetent. All we desire is to let English readers know how very lucid, impressive — and, indeed, how vivid — a study of Isaiah is within their reach; the fault of the book, if it has a fault, being rather that it finds too many points of connection between Isaiah and our modern world, than that it finds too few. In other words, no one can say that the book is not full of life. — *Spectator*.

It would be difficult to say how highly we appreciate the work, or how useful we believe it will be. — *Church Bells*.

He writes with great rhetorical power, and brings out into vivid reality the historical position of his author. — *Saturday Review*.

Mr. Smith gives us models of expositions; expositions for cultivated congregations, no doubt, but still expositions which may have been largely preached in church. They are full of matter, and show careful scholarship throughout. We can think of no commentary on Isaiah from which the preacher will obtain scholarly and trustworthy suggestions for his sermons so rapidly and so pleasantly as from this. — *Record*.

## The Book of the Twelve Prophets

COMMONLY CALLED THE MINOR

In Two Volumes. Crown 8vo, cloth, \$1.50 each.

VOL. I.—AMOS, HOSEA AND MICAH. Seventh Edition.

VOL. II.—ZEPHANIAH, NAHUM, HABAKKUK, OBADIAH, HAGGAI, ZECHARIAH I.—VIII., "MALACHI," JOEL, "ZECHARIAH" IX.—XIV., AND JONAH. Fourth Edition.

In Dr. Smith's volumes we have much more than a popular exposition of the minor Prophets. We have that which will satisfy the scholar and the student quite as much as the person who reads for pleasure and for edification. . . . If the minor Prophets do not become popular reading it is not because anything more can be done to make them attractive. Dr. Smith's volumes present this part of Scripture in what is at once the most attractive and the most profitable form. — DR. MARCUS DONS, in the *British Weekly*.

Few interpreters of the Old Testament to-day rank higher than George Adam Smith. He is at home in criticism, in geographical and archaeological questions, and in philology. . . . Hardly any commentator of the present day is more successful than he in putting the student at once into the heart of an Old Testament problem. — *S. S. Times*.

*The above four volumes are contained in "The Expositor's Bible," and are subject to special subscription rates in connection with that series. Descriptive circular on application.*

---

A. C. ARMSTRONG & SON

3 and 5 W. 18th Street, New York

## Contrary Winds and Other Sermons.

*Crown 8vo Volume, Cloth. \$1.75 net. 3a Edition.*

"This work touches on numerous phases of life and thought and experience, showing that the author has lived through a vast deal and has been made the richer and stronger by it. It leaves the impression of wisdom that comes from actual experience, dealing with life rather than speculations, and so comes home to the heart and conscience. IT SHOWS A WIDE RANGE OF READING AND CLOSE GRAPPLE WITH THE DIFFICULT PROBLEMS OF OUR TIME. Such preaching is tonic and invigorating. It strengthens the heart and fortifies the will to overcome trials and conquer temptations and achieve victory."—*N. Y. Christian a' Work.*

*The Congregationalist* says: "Its variety of theme and the never-failing intellectual power which it illustrates, the author's reverent positiveness of faith, his broad and intimate knowledge of human nature, and the richness of his personal spiritual experiences—never obtruded but always underlying his words—render it a volume of rare and precious value to the Christian believer, and A CAPITAL SPECIMEN OF MANLY, BUSINESS-LIKE DISCUSSION TO ALL OTHERS WHO CARE TO READ WHAT A CHRISTIAN HAS TO SAY FOR HIS RELIGION."

*N. Y. Churchman*: "Sermons practical in their nature, full of deep thought and wise counsel. They will have as they deserve a wide circulation."

---

Now Ready—4th Edition of

## THE LIMITATIONS OF LIFE

AND OTHER SERMONS.

By WM. M. TAYLOR, D.D.

WITH A FINE PORTRAIT ON STEEL BY RITCHIE. CROWN 8VO  
VOL., EXTRA CLOTH, \$1.75. NET.

"In variety of theme, in clearness and penetration of vision, in distinctness of aim, in intensity of purpose, in energy and well-directed effort, etc., this volume is perhaps without its equal in the language."

—*The Scotsman.*

*Providence Journal*: "The directness, earnestness, descriptive and illustrative power of the preacher, and his rare gift for touching the conscience and the heart, are fully exemplified in these eloquent discourses."

*N. Y. Evangelist*: "They have the noble simplicity and clearness of the truth itself, and which, fixing the attention of the reader from the beginning, holds it to the end. It is impossible to read them without the constant sense of the personality of the author."

---

*Copies sent on receipt of price, post-paid.*

## DR. WM. M. TAYLOR'S LATEST WORK.

### THE PARABLES OF OUR SAVIOUR.

EXPOUNDED AND ILLUSTRATED. By WM. M. TAYLOR, D.D., LL.D.

Uniform with same author's "*Limitations of Life*," and "*Contrary Winds*," and other Sermons. Crown 8vo, cloth. \$1.75. net.

"To Archbishop Trench, who more than any other English writer has brought patristic lore to bear upon the illustration of the parables, every later author must express his peculiar obligations; but the recent works of Prof. Bruce and Goebel have broken new ground in this department, and my aim has been to turn their fruitful suggestions to good homiletical account. The little vols. of Dr. Dod's—only the first of which was in my hands when these discourses were prepared—are full of richest nuggets; and the Expositions of William Arnot are characterized by the masculine sense, rich Christian experience, and striking illustrations for which he was so remarkable. But the present work, while indebted in different respects to all these authors, will be found to be in others independent of them all."—From AUTHOR'S PREFACE.

*N. Y. Observer* says: "Dr. Taylor shows in this work his large acquaintance with this portion of religious literature. A better book for the study, the Sunday school, and the Christian has not been issued this season."

*Methodist Recorder*: "Dr. Taylor's style is clear and strong, and he brings out with great distinctness the leading thoughts contained in each parable. It will be read with pleasure and profit by thoughtful Christians. The volume is one of more than ordinary richness."

*Cincinnati Herald and Presbyterian*: "They are rich in truth, simple and plain in style, and give evidence of ripe scholarship. They are suitable for all classes of readers, and cannot be read without profit."

*Lutheran Quarterly*: "They are clear and direct in style, abound in apt illustrations, are textually faithful, and breathe a devout and scholarly spirit."

*Christian World*: "One cannot help but be struck with the fact, as he reads these discourses, that the author has brought to bear on their exposition an acute and yet wonderfully practical mind."

*Christian Leader*: "Recent research has opened up great wealth of fresh lore bearing upon the suggestions of the parables, and these Dr. Taylor has not only mastered, but assimilated."

*Congregationalist*: "The whole series is characterized in a remarkable degree by strong common sense and a shrewd insight into human nature and needs, as well as by the loyal purpose to lead men and women to God."

NEW WORK BY REV. W. M. TAYLOR, D.D., LL.D.

### JOHN KNOX.

With a fine Steel Portrait. Engraved by HOLL, from a Painting in the possession of Lord Somerville. 12mo, cloth. \$1.25. net.

This work gives a vivid, comprehensive and accurate account of the life and work of the great Scottish Reformer. It includes a careful and well ordered summary of the career of Knox in England, as that has been brought to light by the recent investigations of Lorimer and others. Particular attention has been given to the course of events in Scotland during the last thirteen years of the Reformer's life, and his interviews with QUEEN MARY, as well as his work in the reconstruction of the Scottish Church, are described with fullness of detail and independence of judgment. The story is admirably told, the interest being maintained from first to last, so that the book will be at once delightful to the young and instructive to those of maturer years.

*Copies sent by mail, post paid, on receipt of price.*

## REV. DR. ALEXANDER BRUCE'S WORKS.

### THE MIRACULOUS ELEMENT IN THE GOSPELS.

By ALEXANDER BALMAIN BRUCE, D.D., Author of "The Parabolic Teaching of Christ." 8vo, cloth. \$2.50.

This work, though constructed on a different method, may be regarded as a companion to my work on THE PARABOLIC TEACHING OF CHRIST, published a few years ago. In the Fifth and Sixth Lectures I have considered from my point of view, at considerable length, a large number of the miraculous narratives, and made observations on nearly the whole of the narratives of this character contained in the Gospels. My object in these portions of the work is not to expound homiletically the whole narrative in which a miracle is recorded, but to inquire whether the event recorded be indeed a miracle.

"It will take rank at once among the standard treatises upon its always important and engrossing theme. It is an elaborate study—the fruit of wide-reaching and profound research and patient reflection. The result of these studies is that the volume is a powerful defense of the miracles as an essential feature of the religion of Christ. It is a cause of congratulation to the whole Christian public that so valuable course of lectures has been given to the whole world in so available shape."—BOSTON CONGREGATIONALIST.

"An exhaustive discussion of the New Testament Miracles. The topics are candidly, lucidly, and very ably considered. The volume is a rich addition to our apologetic literature, which every Biblical student will desire to add to his library."—*Zion's Herald*.

### The Parabolic Teaching of Christ.

A Systematic and Critical Study of the Parables of our Lord. By Rev. Prof. A. B. BRUCE, D.D. 1 vol., 8vo, cloth, 527 pp. Price, \$2.50.

"A work which will at once take its place as a classic on the Parables of our Saviour. No minister should think of doing without it."—*American Presbyterian Review*.

*American Literary Churchman* says: "We recommend this book with the most confident earnestness. It is a book to be bought and kept; it has both depth and breadth and minute accuracy; it has a living sympathy with the teaching of the Parables and with the spirit of the Master."

#### ENGLISH NOTICES.

"Prof. Bruce brings to his task the learning and the liberal and finely sympathetic spirit which are the best gifts of an expositor of Scripture. His treatment of his subject is vigorous and original, and he avoids the capital mistake of overlaying his exegesis with a mass of other men's views."—*Spectator*.

"The studies of the Parables are thorough, scholarly, suggestive and practical. Fullness of discussion, reverence of treatment, and sobriety of judgment, mainly characterize this work."—*Christian World*.

"Each Parable is most thoughtfully worked out, and much new light is thus thrown on the difficulties which surround many of these beautiful and suggestive examples of Divine teaching."—*Cergymen's Magazine*.

"This volume has only to be known to be welcomed, not by students alone, but by all earnest students of Christ's oracles. On no subject has Dr. Bruce spoken more wisely than on the question why Jesus spoke in parables. The one end the author sets before himself is, to find out what our Lord really meant. And this he does with a clearness and fullness worthy of all praise. Familiar as we are with some of the best and most popular works on the Parables, we do not know any to which we could look for so much aid in our search after the very meaning which Christ would have us find in His words."—*Nonconformist*.

*Copies sent by mail, postpaid, on receipt of price.*

A. C. ARMSTRONG & SON,

New York.



## STANDARD RELIGIOUS WORKS.

### IS THERE SALVATION AFTER DEATH?

#### A Treatise on the Gospel in the Intermediate State.

By E. D. MORRIS, D.D., LL.D., Professor in Lane Theological Seminary, Cincinnati. Crown 8vo, cloth, \$1.25. *2d Edition.*

*N. Y. Observer* says: "The various views are stated with fairness and precision, the specific passages of Scripture, bearing upon the subject, are carefully considered, as well as the general testimony of Scripture in relation to it. We commend the volume to ministers and teachers."

N. Y. EVANGELIST: "*Clear in method and cogent in argument, it is saturated throughout with the large literature of its subject, is free from all acerbity and unfairness, and is loyal to God's Word as the final test of Christian truth. It will settle doubt and confirm faith.*"

### THE HUMILIATION OF CHRIST

#### In its Physical, Ethical, and Official Aspects.

(Being the Sixth of the Cunningham Lectures.) By Rev. A. B. BRUCE, D.D. Octavo, cloth, gilt top, \$2.50. Uniform with the same author's "*Parabolic Teaching of Christ*," and "*Miraculous Element in the Gospels*."

"*These lectures are well worthy of the name they bear, and of their precursors in the series: and the book in which they are published, with ample notes and references, will be valuable to theologians, supplying a want in the literature of the subject, and containing many fruitful germs of thought. Dr. Bruce's style is uniformly clear and vigorous, and this book has the rare advantage of being at once stimulating and satisfying to the mind in a high degree. He has given us a book that will really advance the theological understanding of the great truth that forms its subject.*"—BRITISH AND FOREIGN EVANGELICAL REVIEW.

*The English Churchman* says: "The title of the book gives but a faint conception of the value and wealth of its contents. . . . Dr. Bruce's work is really one of exceptional value; and no one can read it without perceptible gain in theological knowledge."

BY REV. DR. A. B. BRUCE.

### THE TRAINING OF THE TWELVE, Or, PASSAGES OUT OF THE GOSPELS.

Exhibiting the twelve Disciples of Jesus under Discipline for the Apostleship. Uniform with same Author's "*The Humiliation of Christ*," &c. Octavo, nearly 600 pages, cloth, gilt top, \$2.50.

"A really great book on an important, large, and attractive subject—a book full of loving, wholesome, profound thoughts about the fundamentals of Christian faith and practice."—*British and Foreign Evangelical Review.*

"Full of suggestion and savour. It should be the companion of the minister, for the theme is particularly related to himself, and he would find it a very pleasant and profitable companion."—*Spurgeon's Sword and Trowel.*

"A more wise, scholarly, and more helpful work has not been published for many years past."—*Wesleyan Magazine.*

*Copies sent by mail, post-paid, on receipt of price, by*

A. C. ARMSTRONG & SON,

New York.

RD19











Deacidified using the Bookkeeper process.  
Neutralizing agent: Magnesium Oxide  
Treatment Date: June 2005

**Preservation Technologies**  
A WORLD LEADER IN PAPER PRESERVATION

111 Thomson Park Drive  
Cranberry Township, PA 16066  
(724) 779-2111



DORRIS BROS.  
LIBRARY BINDING

MAR 82  
ST. AUGUSTINE  
FLA.  
32084





LIBRARY OF CONGRESS



0 014 384 712 3